

ATYUNGAR COLLECTION

WAVERLEY NOVELS

Complete Edition

VOL. X.



A MONK AND A WOMAN

When the monk asked, it is so I supposed to say, my wife is—I will abide no longer here—will have their dress, dress, in place of my hands this picture volume.—(18 18)

THE MONASTERY

By SIR WALTER SCOTT, Bart.



EDINBURGH, ADAM & CHARLES BLACK

1873



*It would be difficult to assign any good reason why the Author of *Jonas*, after using, in that work, all the art he possessed to render the personages, actions, and manners of the tale, to a distance from his own country, should choose for the scene of his next attempt the celebrated ruins of Melrose, in the immediate neighbourhood of his own residence. And the reason, or excuse, which dictated his change of system, has entirely escaped his recollection, nor is it worth while to attempt recalling what must be a matter of very little consequence.*

The general plan of the story was, to compare two characters in that bustling and contentious age, who, thrown into situations which gave them different views on the subject of the Reformation, should, with the same sincerity and purity of intention, defend themselves, the one in the support of the existing policy of the Catholic Church, the other in the establishment of the Reformed doctrine. It was supposed that some interesting subjects for narrative might be derived from supposing two such individuals to cross each in the path of life, and contrasting the real worth of both with their passions and prejudices. The beauties of Melrose suited well the scenery of the proposed story: the ruins themselves form a splendid theatre for any tragic incident which might be brought forward, joined to the

vicinity of the *fine river*, with all its tributary streams, flowing through a country which has been the scene of so much *hero fighting*, and is rich with so many recollections of former times, and lying almost under the immediate eye of the *father*, by whom they were to be used in composition.

The situation presented further recommendations. On the opposite bank of the *Tweed* might be seen the remains of ancient enclosures, surrounded by *openness* and *solitude* of considerable size. These had once formed the *croft* or *arable ground* of a village, now reduced to a single hut, the shade of a *fisherman*, who also manages a *ferry*. The cottages, even the church which once existed there, have now, were it were hardly to be traced without visiting the spot, the inhabitants having gradually withdrawn to the more prosperous town of *Edinburgh*, which has risen into civilization, within two miles of their neighborhood. Superstitions still, however, has haunted the deserted groves with aerial beings, to supply the want of the mortal tenants who have deserted it. The ruin and abandoned churchyard of *Abdulla* has been long believed to be haunted by the *Fairies*; and the deep broad current of the *Tweed*, whirling in moonlight round the foot of the steep bank, with the number of trees originally planted for shelter round the fields of the cottagers, but now preventing the effect of scattered and detached groves, fills up the vision which one would form in imagination for a scene that *Chorus* and *Queen Mab* might love to revel in. There are meetings when the speaker might believe, with *Richard Chenevix*, that the

— *Queen of Fairy*,
With *harp*, and *pipes*, and *apophony*,
Were dwelling in the glen.

Another and even a more familiar refuge of the after-race (if tradition is to be trusted), is the glen of the river, or rather brook, named the *Allen*, which falls near the *Tweed* from the northward, about a quarter of a mile above the present bridge. At the streamlet flows the way behind *Lord Somerville's* head-quarters, called the *Fairies*, the valley has been popularly termed the *Fairy Dean*, or rather the *Norman Dean*, because of the supposed all such attached by the popular faith of ancient times to any one who might name or allude to the race, whom our fathers distinguished as the *Good Neighbours*, and the *Highlanders* called *Dearie Mies*, or *Mrs of Fines*; rather by way of compliment, than on account of any particular idea of friendship or people relation which either High-

*leader or leader intercalated towards the inevitable beings whom they thus distinguished, or supposed them to have to humanity.**

In evidence of the actual operations of the fairy people even at this time, little pieces of calcareous matter are found in the glen after a flood, which either the labours of these long artists, or the action of the brook among the stones, have formed into a fantastic resemblance of eyes, snouts, heads, and the like, in which children who gather them pretend to discern fairy animals.

Besides these circumstances of romantic locality, some persons (as Captain Dalrymple describes his territory of Dunsinane) are bounded by a small but deep lake, from which eyes that yet look on the light are said to have seen the water-hell snake, and shake the hills with his roar.

Indeed, the country around Midway, if passing less of romantic beauty than some other scenes in Scotland, is connected with as many associations of a fearful nature, in which the imagination takes delight, as might well induce one even less attached to the spot than the Author, to accommodate, after a general manner, the imaginary scenes he was framing to the localities in which he was perched. But it would be a misapprehension to suppose, that, however Midway may be general pass for *Keweenaw*, or however it agrees with some of the scenery in the circumstances of the drawbridge, the castle, and other points of resemblance, that therefore an accurate or perfect local similitude as to be found in all the particulars of the picture. It was not the purpose of the Author to present a landscape copied from nature, but a piece of composition, in which a real scene, with which he is familiar, had afforded him some leading outlines. Thus the resemblance of the imaginary Glenway with the real vale of the Allen, is far from being minute, nor did the Author aim at identifying them. This must appear plain to all who know the actual character of the Glen of Allen, and have taken the trouble to read the account of the imaginary Glenway. The stream in the latter case is described as winding down a romantic little valley, shifting itself, after the fashion of such a brook, from one side to the other, as it can most easily find its passage, and making nothing in its progress that gives token of calculation. It rises near a solitary tower, the shade of a supposed church vessel, and the ruins of several castles in the distance.

The real Allen, on the contrary, after traversing the romantic ravine called the *Fernside Dene*, flows off from side to side

* See *North Bay*, note, p. 202.

apparently, like a billiard ball, repelled by the side of the table on which it has been played, and so that part of its course resembling the stream which pours down Glendary, may be turned upwards into a more open country, where the banks retreat farther from each other, and the soil exhibits a good deal of dry ground, which has not been neglected by the active cultivators of the district. It arrives, too, at a sort of termination, striding on itself, but totally irreconcilable with the narrative of the Romans. Instead of a simple path-house, or better tower of defence, such as Dinas Glendary is supposed to have inhabited, the head of the *Afon*, about five miles above its junction with the Towy, drives three rows of Roman houses, belonging to different proprietors, and each, from the want of mutual support or natural to breakhouse crones, situated at the extremity of the property of which it is the principal manor. One of these is the romantic manor-house of *Hilltop*, formerly the property of the *Guinevere*, and now of Mr. Jones of *Stone*; a second the locus of *Orisville*, an ancient inheritance of the *Earl of Gwent*, as is testified by their coat, the *Goat's Head*, which exists in the ruin; a third, the house of *Lougham*, also ruinous, but near which the proprietor, Mr. *Paulin* of *Arwenack* and *Milford*, has built a small shooting box.

All these towns, so strongly huddled together in a very solitary spot, have recollections and traditions of their own, but none of them bear the most distant resemblance to the descriptions in the *Remains of the Monastery*, and as the Author could hardly have erred so greatly regarding a spot within a morning's ride of his own house, the inference is, that no resemblance was intended. *Hilltop* is remembered by the lameness of the best voluntheers, two or three elderly ladies, of the class of *Miss Snyphens*, in the *Old House* *Room*, though less important by birth and fortune. *Orisville* is remembered on songs—

*Orisville stands on Orisville hill,
The water is clear round Orisville mill;
The mill and the lake gang heavily,
And it's up with the whippers of Orisville!*

Lougham, although larger than the other manors assembled at the head of the supposed Glendary, has nothing about it more remarkable than the description of the ground proprietor over his shooting lodge—*Ullman* haunts often near *Lougham*, outside—a mistral wind, which I know no one more capable of standing upon an

extended scale, than the gentleman who has expressed it upon a limited one.*

Having thus shown that I could say something of these devoted hermits, which the desire of social intercourse, or the facility of mutual defence, had drawn together at the head of this Glen, I need not add any further reason to show, that there is no resemblance between them and the solitary habitations of *Erasm Ripshild Chatterbox*. Beyond these dwellings are many remains of natural wood, and a considerable portion of moor and bog; but I would not advise any who may be curious in localities, to spend time in looking for the *Junakins* and *hollipins* of the *White Lady*.

While I am on the subject I may add, that Captain Chatterbox, the imaginary officer of the Monastery, has no real prototype in the villages of Melrose or neighbourhood, that ever I saw or heard of. To give some individuality to this personage, he is described as a character which sometimes occurs in actual society—a person who, having spent his life within the narrow limits of a technical profession, from which he has been at length emancipated, feels himself without any companions whatever, and is apt to become the prey of mania, until he deserves some pity as subject of unrequited commiseration to his intimate, the study of which gives him employment in solitude; while the anxious possession of information peculiar to himself, adds to his conspicuousness in society. I have often observed, that the lighter and triviale branches of antiquarian study are singularly useful in relieving tedium of such a kind, and have known them serve many a Captain Chatterbox to retirement upon, I was therefore a good deal surprised, when I found the antiquarian Captain identified with a neighbour and friend of my own, who could never have been confounded with him by any one who had read the book and seen the party alluded to. This erroneous identification occurs in a work entitled, “*Excursions of the Author of Waverley, being Notices and Anecdotes of real Characters, Scenes, and Families, supposed to be described in his works, by Robert Chambers*.” This work was, of course, liable to many errors, as any one of the Lord must be, whatever may be the ingenuity of the author, which takes the task of explaining what can be only known to another person. Mistakes of place or erroneous things referred to, are of very little moment; but the ingenious author ought to have been more cautious of attributing real names to fictitious characters. I think it is in the *Excursion* we read of a rustic way, in a copy of *The Whole*

* Note A. Phillips and Graham.

Irish of Mass, were opposite to every vice the name of *vice* implied in the neighbourhood, and thus converted that criminal into what is called a *white* parish.

The scenery being thus nearly at the Author's hand, the scenes therein of the country were equally favourable. In a land where the harvest continued almost constantly sabbath, and the several villages dotted the country's side—where now was the natural and constant site of the exhibitions, and hence only varied in the shape of leaf and furrow dress—there could be no want of the means to compensate and effluence the incidents of his successive exiles. There was a disadvantage, notwithstanding, in travelling this Border district, for it had been already remarked by the Author himself, as well as others; and unless presented under a new light, was likely to afford ground to the objection of Cicero's too rustic.

To atone the indigence of scenery, something, it was thought, might be gained by contrasting the character of the members of the church with those of the dependants of the lay system, by whom they were surrounded. But much advantage could not be derived from this. There were, indeed, differences between the two classes, but, like birds in the mineral and vegetable world, which, notwithstanding each other is common eyes, can be sufficiently well distinguished by naturalists, they were yet too similar, upon the whole, to be placed in mental contrast with each other.

Machiney remained—the introduction of the supernatural and marvellous; the views of distant authors since the days of Horace, but whose principles as a secretary have been disputed in the present age, and well-nigh exploded. The popular belief no longer allows the possibility of existence to the race of supernatural beings which haunted heretofore this world and that which is invisible. The fables have abandoned their midnight haunts; the witch no longer holds her black repins in the hemlock dell; and

*Even the last lingering phantoms of the heresies,
The discarded gods, are now at rest again.*

From the discredit attached to the vulgar and more common modes in which the British superstitions display itself, the Author was induced to have recourse to the beautiful, though almost forgotten, theory of aerial spirits, or creatures of the elements, surpassing human beings in knowledge and power, but inferior in dignity, as being subject, after a certain space of years, to a death which is to them annihilation, as they have no share in the glorious mode in

the sons of Adam. These spirits are supposed to be of four distinct kinds, as the elements from which they have their origin, and are known, to those who have studied the cabalistical philosophy, by the names of *Sephia, Chesed, Binah, and Nemoth*, as they belong to the elements of Air, Earth, Fire, or Water. The general reader will find an entertaining account of these elementary spirits in the French book, *causé des Esprits du Geste de Gebelin*. The ingenious Count de La Motte Fouquet composed, in German, one of the most successful productions of his fertile brain,* where a beautiful and even affecting effect is produced by the introduction of a water-spirit, who loses the principle of immortality by consenting to become accessible to human feelings, and ending her lot with that of a mortal, who treats her with ingratitude.

In imitation of an example so successful, the White Lady of Arund was introduced into the following drama. She is represented as connected with the family of Arund by one of those magical ties, which, in ancient times, were supposed to exist, in certain circumstances, between the creatures of the elements and the children of men. Such instances of mysterious union are recognised in Ireland, in the real *Milition families*, who are possessed of a *Banshee*; and they are known among the traditions of the *Highlands*, which, in many cases, attached an immortal being or spirit to the service of particular families or tribes. These demons, if they are to be called so, sometimes good or evil fortune to the families connected with them; and though some only condescended to meddle with matters of importance, others, like the *May Moloch*, or *Maid of the Heavy Arms*, condescended to mingle in ordinary sports, and even to direct the *Glaif* how to play at draughts.

There was, therefore, no great violence in supposing such a being as this to have existed, while the elementary spirits were believed in; but it was more difficult to describe or imagine its attributes and principles of action. Shakespeare, the first of authors in such a case, has painted Ariel, that beautiful creature of his fancy, as only approaching in nature to humanity as to know the nature of that sympathy which the creatures of clay felt for each other, as we learn from the expression—"Mine would, if I were human." The inferiors from this are complete, but were capable of regular deduction. A being, however superior to man in length of life—in power over the elements—in certain perceptions respecting the present, the past, and the future, yet still incapable of human passions, of

* (Diction.)

ascendents of moral good and evil, of revealing future rewards or punishments, belongs rather to the class of animals, than of human faculties, and must therefore be presumed to act more from a superior knowledge or wisdom, than from anything approaching to feeling or reasoning. Such a being's superiority to power can only be compared to that of the elephant or lion, who conquers us strength than man, though inferior in the scale of creation. The personalities which we suppose such spirits to inhabit need to be those of the day; their sudden starts of passion, or the indulgence of a frolic, or mischief, may be compared to those of the numerous varieties of the cat. All these personalities are, however, controlled by the laws which render the elementary race subservient to the command of man—liable to be subdued by his science (as the rest of Creation beheld, and on this turned the Roderickian philosophy), or to be overpowered by his superior strength and daring, when it is not their distance of distance.

It is with reference to this idea of the supposed spirits of the elements, that the *White Lady of Anecd* is represented as giving a warning, expostion, and denunciatory part in the pages assigned to her in the narrative; manifesting interest and attachment to the family with whom her duties are associated, but craving none, and even a species of indifference, towards other mortals, as the *Secretaries*, and the *Darby* rather, whom interest left subjected them to receive petty mortifications at her hand. The *White Lady* is scarcely supposed, however, to have possessed either the power or the inclination to do more than fulfil her own or create embarrassment, and is also subjected by these mortals, who, by virtuous resolution and mental energy, could exert superiority over her. In these particulars she seems to constitute a being of a middle class, between the spirit which she places its pleasure in mistreating and tormenting mortals, and the benevolent Fairy of the East, who uniformly guides, aids, and supports them.

Either, however, the Author intended his purpose sufficiently, or the public did not approve of it; for the *White Lady of Anecd* was far from being popular. He does not now make the pleasant statement, in the view of warning readers into a more favourable opinion on the subject, but merely with the purpose of occupying himself from the charge of having needlessly intruded into the narrative a being of inconsistent powers and propensities.

In the delineation of another character, the author of the *Ministry* failed, when he hoped for more success. As nothing so is successful

a subject for ridicule as the fashionable follies of the time, it occurred to him that the most serious scenes of his narratives might be relieved by the humour of a caricature of the age of Queen Elizabeth. In every period, the attempt to gain and maintain the highest rank of society, has degraded on the power of ascending and supporting a certain fashionable kind of affectation, usually connected with some display of talent and energy of character, but distinguished at the same time by a transcendence, flight, beyond usual reason and common sense. Such facilities too vulgar to be admitted into the estimate of our age decline to be esteemed "a choice spirit of the age." These, in their different phases, constitute the gallantry of the day, when least it is to drive the values of fashion to extremity.

On all occasions, the measures of the sovereign, the court, and the time, must give the tone to the particular description of gallantry by which those who would attain the height of fashion must seek to distinguish themselves. The reign of Elizabeth, being that of a maiden queen, was distinguished by the licence of the courtiers, and especially the affectations of the deepest deference to the sovereign. After the acknowledgment of the Queen's maidenlike perfections, the same devotion was extended to beauty as it existed among the lower classes in her reign, who regarded, as it was the mode to say, by her reflected lustre. It is true, that gallant language no longer ceased in *Notre-Dame*, the parson, and the Indian, to perform some feat of extravagant dexterity, in which they outstepped the line of shame as well as their sex, but although their shameless displays of personal gallantry seldom went farther in Elizabeth's days than the tiltyard, where tournaments, called *barriers*, presented the shock of the horse, and limited the display of the cavalier's skill to the comparatively safe measure of their horses, the language of the lovers to their ladies was still in the scolded terms which *Emelia* would have addressed to *Orlando*, before encountering a danger for her sake. This form of romantic gallantry found a closer but unaltered mother, in virtue it is a species of constitution and form, and lay down the courtly manner of conversation, in a palatine look, called *Explosion* and his *England*. Of this, a brief account is given in the text, in which it may now be proper to make some additions.

The extravagance of *Explosion*, or a symbolical jargon of the same class, predominates in the romances of *Chymeride* and *Barbers*, which were read for the amusement of the fair sex of France during the long reign of Louis XIV., and were supposed to contain the only legitimate language of love and gallantry. In this reign they co-

maintained the action of *Kulliva* and *Isidore*. A smaller disorder, spreading into private society, formed the ground of the official dialogue of the *Prévôt*, as they were styled, who formed the centre of the *Wiel de Bismarck*, and effected *Mohr* matter for her influential society, *Les Prévôt* *Bismarck*. In England, the answer does not seem to have long awaited the accession of James I.

The Author had the vanity to think that a character, whose position should turn an advantage which was once transmissible, might be used in a fiction story with a good chance of affecting amusement in the existing generation, who, find as they are of looking back on the actions and manners of their ancestors, might be also supposed to be aware of their descendants. It must fairly acknowledge that he was disappointed, and that the English, far from being accounted a well dressed and humane character of the period, were considered as unattractive and absurd.

It would be easy to account for this failure, by supposing the defect to arise from the Author's want of skill, and, perhaps, many readers may not be inclined to look further. But as the Author himself was already in a position willing to acquiesce in this final error, if any other can be alleged, he has been led to suspect, that, contrary to what he originally supposed, his subject was *indefinitely* chosen, in which, and not in his mode of treating it, lay the source of the want of success.*

The manners of a rude people are always founded on nature, and therefore the feelings of a more polished generation immediately sympathize with them. We read no numerous tales, no antiquarian dissertations, to enable the most ignorant to recognise the sentiments and virtues of the characters of Homer; we have but, as *Laure* says, to drop off our feelings — to extract the poetical principles and elements which we have received from our comparatively artificial system of society, and our natural feelings are in unison with those of the hero of *Chloe* and the hero who lives in his name. It is far more with a great part of the narrative of my friend Mr. Cooper. We sympathize with his Indian, deep and boldness, and acknowledge, in the characters which he presents to us, the true truth of human nature by which we should feel ourselves replaced if placed in the same condition. So much is this the case, that, though it is difficult, or almost impossible, to reduce a single, lived from his youth to our end the close, to the sentiment and the desire of civilized life, nothing is more easy or common than to find men

* See N. The White Lady, and Englishmen.

who have been educated in all the habits and comforts of civilized society, willing to exchange them for the wild labours of the hunter and the fisher. The very amusements most pursued and relished by men of all ranks, whose constitutions permit active exercise, are hunting, fishing, and, in some instances, war, the natural and necessary business of the usage of Indians, whose life here tells of being

——“*As free as nature first made man,
When wild he roams the noble savage ran.*”

But although the occupations, and even the sentiments, of human beings in a primitive state, find access and interest in the minds of the more civilized part of the species, it does not therefore follow, that the national tastes, opinions, and fables, of one civilized period, should afford either the same interest or the same amusement to those of another. Thus generally, when driven to extravagance, are founded, not upon any natural taste proper to the species, but upon the growth of some particular cast of affection, with which mankind in general, and succeeding generations in particular, feel no common interest or sympathy. The extravagance of attending to manners and usage is attended the legitimate, and often the successful, objects of satire during the time when they exist. In evidence of this, theatrical critics may observe how many dramatic *jeux d'esprit* are well received every season, because the satirical level of some well-known or fashionable absurdity; or, in the dramatic phrase, “shows folly as it flies.” But when the particular level of folly keeps the wrong no longer, it is national but wants of power to give a discharge of ridicule on what has ceased to exist; and the games in which such forgotten absurdities are made the subject of ridicule, fall quickly into disrepute with the follies which give them fashion, or only continue to exist on the scene, because they excite some other more permanent interest than that which connects them with manners and fables of a temporary character.

This, perhaps, affords a reason why the comedies of Ben Jonson, founded upon system, or what the age termed humour,—by which was meant fashionable and affected characters, experimental in that which was common to the rest of their race,—do not excite active, deep scholarship, and strong sense, do not now afford general pleasure, but are confined to the closet of the antiquary, whose studies have assured him that the personages of the dramatist were once, though they are now no longer, portraits of existing nature.

Let us take another example of our hypothesis from *Mademoiselle Mathis*, one of all authors, dear to posterity for all ages. With the whole run of the literary work which affects us at this time, the name of mademoiselle, without examination, the character forced on the circumstances of temporary fashion, and the English *Two Admirals*, the poetical *Mademoiselle*, even *Kepes and Pachel*, are read with little pleasure by the mass of the public, being portraits of which we cannot recognise the likeness, because the arguments are transparent. In this manner, while the distance of *Baron and Bertha* creates in its reader every lesson, *Mademoiselle*, drawn as we cannot represent it, the finished fine gentleman of the period, and as such received by the unanimous approbation of contemporaries, has as little to interest the present age, that, dropped of all her grace and spirit of a that will, she only retains her place in the score in virtue of her fine and powerful speech upon dancing, which belongs to no particular age, and because, as to a percentage whose presence is indispensable to the plot.

We have already presented perhaps too far an argument, the tendency of which is to prove, that the introduction of a hero, acting like Sir Francis Drake, upon some forgotten and slender model of folly, was justifiable, or rather solely to explain the first part of the reader, as unaccounted, than find him find for himself. Whether owing to this theory, or whether to the more simple and possible cause of the author's failure in the delineation of the subject he had proposed to himself, the formidable objection of unaccountable was applied to the English, as well as to the *White Lady of Lancel*; and the one was deemed as unaccounted, while the other was rejected as impossible.

There was little in the story to stress for these failures in two principal points. The incidents were beautifully handled together. There was no part of the intrigue in which deep interest was found to apply; and the conclusion was brought about, not by incidents arising out of the story itself, but in consequence of public transactions, with which the narrative has little connection, and which the reader had little opportunity to become acquainted with.

This, if not a positive fault, was yet a great defect in the Romance. It is true, that not only the practice of some great authors in this department, but even the general course of human life itself, may be quoted in favour of this more distant, and less artificial practice, of arranging a narrative. It is seldom that the mere course of personages who have surrounded an individual at his first entry in life, continues to have an interest in his career till his fate comes to a

1814). On the contrary, and more especially if the events of his life be of a varied character, and much communicating to others, as in the world, the hero's later associations are usually totally separated from those with whom he began the voyage, but when the individual has extended, or who have drifted astray, or floundered on the passage. Thus historical comparison holds good in another point. The numerous vessels of so many different sorts, and destined for such different purposes, which are launched in the same mighty ocean, although each endeavours to pursue its own course, are in every case more influenced by the winds and tides, which are common to the element which they all navigate, than by their own separate motions. And it is thus in the world, that when human progress has done its best, some general, perhaps national, event, deranges the element of the individual, as the casual touch of a more powerful being sweeps away the web of the spider.

Many detached resources have been assigned in this view of human life, when the hero is conducted through a variety of detached scenes, in which various agents appear and disappear, without, perhaps, leaving any permanent influence on the progress of the story. Such is the structure of *Old Man, Redoubt, Eastern*, and the lives and adventures of many other heroes, who are described as running through different stations of life, and encountering various adventures, which are only connected with each other by having happened to be witnessed by the same individual, whose identity unites them together, as the string of a necklace links the beads, which are otherwise detached.

But though such an unconnected series of adventures is what most frequently occurs in nature, yet the province of the romance-writer being enlarged, there is more required from him than a mere compliance with the simplicity of reality,—just as we demand from the metaphysical poet, that he shall arrange, in various knots and artificial patterns, the flowers which “nature tears” distribute freely on hill and dale. Fielding, accordingly, in most of his works, but especially in *Tom Jones*, has that *discovery*, has at the distinguished example of a story regularly built and consistent in all its parts, in which nothing occurs, and scarce a passage is introduced, that has not some share in tending to advance the catastrophe.

To demand equal correctness and fidelity in those who may follow in the track of that illustrious model, would be to take too much the power of giving pleasure, by overloading it with poetical rules; since of this sort of light literature it may be especially said—*bon*

years set periods, have in years unnumbered. Still, however, the more clearly and happily the story is continued, and the more natural and satisfying the catastrophe, the nearer such a composition will approach the perfection of the novelist's art; nor can an author neglect this branch of his preparation, without incurring proportioned reprobation.

For such reasons the *Minstrelsy* gave but too much occasion. The catalogue of the *Encyclopædia*, another very interesting in itself, now very happily detailed, is at length finally distinguished by the breaking out of national hostilities between England and Scotland, and the an sudden removal of the iron. Instances of this kind, it is true, cannot be readily here less numerous, but the wanting is such, in order to accomplish the catastrophe, as by a tour de force, now objected to as artificial, and not perfectly intelligible to the general reader.

Still the *Minstrelsy*, though exposed to severe and just criticism, did not fail, judging from the extent of its circulation, to have some interest for the public. And this, too, was according to the ordinary course of such matters, for it very seldom happens that literary reputation is gained by a single effort, and still more rarely is it lost by a solitary misfortune.

The *Avenger*, therefore, had his days of grace allowed him, and time, if he pleased, to amuse himself with the burden of the old Scotch song,

" If it were not better,
We'd let it pass."

ANOTHER, 1st November 1826.

INTRODUCTORY EPISTLE

FROM CAPTAIN CLATTERBUCK, LATE OF THE MARIETTE ———
ASCENDANT OF IDIARITY, TO THE LADIES OF FAVORABLE.

SIR,—Although I do not pretend to the planners of your personal acquaintance, the more I believe to be equally stranger to you, I am nevertheless interested in your publications, and derive their continuance,—not that I pretend to much taste in fictitious composition, or that I am apt to be interested in your gross scenes, or amused by those which are meant to be lively. I will not disguise from you, that I have perused over the last volumes of *Macfar* and his sister, and felt fairly asleep while the schoolmaster was reading the homilies of *Donald Element*. You say, sir, that I seem to select your favour in a way in which you are no stranger. If the papers I contain you are worth nothing, I will not endeavor to recommend them by personal flattery, as a bad cook never would trailer upon stale fish. No, sir I what I respect in you is the light you have occasionally thrown on national antiquities, a study which I have commenced rather late in life, but to which I am attached with the devotion of a first love, because it is the only study I ever cared a farthing for.

You shall have my history, sir (it will not reach to three volumes), before that of my memoirs; and as you usually throw out a few lines of verse (by way of ornament, I suppose) at the head of each division of prose, I have had the luck to light upon a stanza in the schoolmaster's copy of *Burns* which describes me exactly. I love it the better, because it was originally designed for Captain *Thorn*, an excellent antiquary, though, like yourself, somewhat too apt to treat with lively but mere particulars.

*'He said he was a soldier's lad,
And was and rather so 'em than that;
But now he's gull the sports like,
And dapples mair,
And he's the—antiquarian trade,
I think they call it.*

I never could ascertain what influenced me, when a beg, in the choice of a profession. Military and naval orders it was not, which made me about out for a commission in the Scots Fusiliers, when my father and uncles wished to bind me apprentice to old David Wilson, Clerk to his Majesty's Signet. I say, military and it was not; for I was no fighting beg in my own person, and cared not to young to read the history of the heroes, who turned the world upside down in former ages. As for surgery, I had, as I have since discovered, just as much of it as served my turn, and not one grain of any else. I soon found out, indeed, that in nature there was more danger in running away than in standing fast, and hence, I could not afford to lose my connections, which were my chief source of support. But, as for that overbearing valour, which I have heard many of our folk of, though I seldom observed that it influenced them in the actual affair—that valourous deed, which marks Dugger as a hero,—truly my average was of a commonplace work, less romantic.

Again, the love of a red coat, which, in default of all other epithets is the profession, has made many a lad soldier and even, good man, was an utter stranger to my disposition. I cared not a "bottle" for the company of the masses. Nay, though there was a head-quarters in the village, and though we used to meet with its few minutes at James Lightfoot's weekly Frothing, I cannot recollect any strong emotions being excited on these occasions, excepting the infinite regret with which I went through the public ceremony of presenting my partner with an orange, thrust into my pocket by my aunt for these special purposes, but which, had I dared, I certainly would have needed for my own personal use. As for vanity, or love of glory for itself, I was such a stranger to it, that the difficulty was great to make me break up men, and appear in proper trim upon parade. I shall never forget the words of my old Colonel on a morning when the King reviewed a brigade of which ours made part. "I am no friend to extravagance, Dragoon Quaterback," said he; "but, on the day when we are to pass before the Sovereign of the Kingdom, in the name of God I would have at least eleven men on each of eleven lines."

Thus, a stranger to the ordinary notions which lead young men to make the army their choice, and without the least desire to become either a hero or a dunce, I really do not know what determined my thoughts that way, unless it were the happy state of half-pay valourism enjoyed by Captain Dredgill, who had set up his staff of rest in

my native village. Every other person had, or seemed to have, something to do, less or more. They did not, indeed, precisely go to school and learn, such that sort of work in my situation; but it did not escape my logical observation, that they were all busied with something or other like duty or labour—all but the happy Captain Dashiell. The minister had his parish to visit, and his preaching to prepare, though perhaps he made more fun than he worked about here. The land had his farming and improving operations to superintend; and, besides, he had to attend brother meetings, and brethrens meetings, and land-meets, and meetings of justice, and what not—was as early up (that I detailed), and as much in the open air, wet and dry, as his own grain. The chaplain (the village boasted but one of business) stood valued pretty much at his own labour his senior, for his system was by no means unorthodox—some; but still he enjoyed his status, as the Swags calls it, upon readiness of turning all the work on his back over and over, when any one else is used a yard of mauls, a sawtooth, or mass of sawtooths, a paper of pins, the harness of life, Poles, or the legs of Jack the Giant-Killer (not Kiler, as usually erroneously written and pronounced)—for my essay on the true history of this society, where real facts have to a peculiar degree been obscured by fables). In short, all in the village were under the necessity of doing something which they would rather have left undone, excepting Captain Dashiell, who walked every morning in the open street, which formed the high mail of our village, in a blue coat with a red neck, and played at whist the whole evening, when he could make up a party. Their happy vacuity of all employment appeared to me so delicious, that it became the primary hint, which, according to the system of Habington, as the minister says, determined my subject labour towards the profession I was destined to illustrate.

But why, when I can form a just estimate of their future prospects in this despicable world? I was not long engaged in my own preferences, before I discovered, that if the independent indifference of half-pay was a paradise, the officer must pass through the purgatory of duty and service in order to gain admission to it. Captain Dashiell might break his blue coat with the red neck, or leave it undressed, at his pleasure; but Ensign Chatterback had no such option. Captain Dashiell might go to bed at five o'clock, if he had a mind, but the Ensign must make the rounds in his turn. What was worse, the Captain might repose under the shelter of his coat-tail with ease, if he was so pleased; but the Ensign, God help him, had to

appear upon parade at pass of day. As for daily, I made that as easy as I could, had the surgeon in village to me the works of anatomy, and hunted through as other folks did. Of course, I saw enough for an ignorant man—was lashed up and down the world, and visited both the East and West Indies, Egypt, and other distant places, which my youth had never dreamed of. The French I saw, and felt too; witness two fingers on my right hand, which one of these cruel doctors took off with his knife as neatly as an hospital surgeon. At length the death of an old man, who left me some African hundred pounds, easily voted in the three per cent, gave me the opportunity for opportunity of retiring, with the prospect of enjoying a clean shirt and a piece of four times a week, at least.

For the purpose of examining my new way of life, I selected for my residence the village of Kinnakpaw, in the south of Scotland, celebrated for the ruins of its magnificent Monastery, intending there to lead my future life in the classic and dignified of half-pay and anxiety. I was not long, however, in making the great discovery, that in order to enjoy leisure, it is absolutely necessary it should be preceded by occupation. For some time it was delightful to walk at length, dreaming of the world—then to visit my happy emancipation from the slavery that doomed me to stand at a pace of clattering parchment, torn on my other side, down the parade, and go to sleep again. But even this enjoyment had its termination; and time, when it became a stock entirely at my own disposal, began to hang heavy on my hand.

I angled for two days, during which time I lost twenty baubles, and several acres of yards of gut and line, and caught not even a minnow. Hunting was out of the question, for the demand of a horse by no means agrees with the half-pay establishment. When I shot, the doghounds and gamekeepers, and my very dog, quizzed me every time that I missed, which was, generally speaking, every time I fired. Besides, the country gentlemen in this quarter like their game, and began to talk of promotions and territories. I did not give up fighting the French to commence a domestic war with the "pleasant men of Terribilis," as the song calls them; so I ran about three days (very agreeably) in cleaning my gun, and disposing of upon two heels over my chimney-piece.

The success of this accidental experiment set me on trying my skill in the mechanical arts. Accordingly I took down and cleaned my landlady's watch-clock, and in so doing allowed that comparison of the spring for ever and a day. I mounted a turning-table, and in

attempting to use it, I very nearly crilled off, with an inch-and-half former, one of the fingers which the hammer had left me.

Inside I took, both those of the little circulating library, and of the more national subscription collection maintained by this intellectual people. But neither the light reading of the one, nor the heavy artillery of the other, suited my purpose. I always fell asleep at the fourth or fifth page of history or description; and it took me a month's hard reading to wade through a half-bound trashy novel, during which I was pestered with applications to return the volume, by every half-witted villager's wife about the place. In short, during the time when all the town books had something to do, I had nothing for it but to walk on the churchyard, and whistle till it was dinner-time.

During these proceedings, the notes necessarily found themselves on my attention, and by degrees, I found myself engaged in studying the more minute accounts, and at length the general plan, of this noble structure. The old master aided my labours, and gave me his portion of traditional lore. Every day added something to my stock of knowledge respecting the ancient state of the building, and at length I made discoveries concerning the purposes of several detached and very curious portions of it, the use of which had hitherto been either unknown altogether or erroneously explained.

The knowledge which I thus acquired I had frequent opportunities of relating to those masters whom the progress of a Scottish tour brought to visit this celebrated spot. Without encroaching on the privileges of my friend the nation, I became gradually an *amateur* Curator in the task of description and explanation, and often (meeting a fresh party of visitors arrive) has he turned ear to me from the whom he had told half his story, with the following observation, "What needs I say any more about it? There's the Captain here more smart at them I do, or any man in the town." This would I relate the stranger courteously, and expiate in their astonished minds upon crypts and chambers, and towers, walls, Gothic and Roman architecture, windows and flying buttresses. It not infrequently happened, that an acquaintance which commenced on the Abbey concluded in the sea, which served to relieve the solitude as well as the monotony of my landlady's chatter of nation, whether road, mill, or basket.

By degrees my mind became enlarged; I found a book or two which enlightened me on the subject of Gothic architecture, and I read now with pleasure, however I was interested in what I read about.

Even my character began to dilate and expand. I spoke with more authority at the club, and was listened to with deference, because on one subject, at least, I possessed more information than any of its members. Indeed, I found that even my stories about *bigot*, which, to my truth, were somewhat threadbare, were now listened to with more respect than formerly. "The Captain," they said, "had something to him, after all,—these were few folk that are much about the *illness*!"

With these general approbations went my own sense of self-importance, and my feeling of general comfort. I ate with more appetite, I slept with more ease, I lay down at night with joy, and slept sound till morning, when I arose with a sense of buoyant vigour, and did me to-morrow, to-morrow and to-morrow the various parts of that interesting structure. I lost all care and consciousness of certain unpleasant accidents of a manuscript nature, about my head and stomach, to which I had been in the habit of attending, more for the laugh of the village apothecary than my own, for the pure want of something else to think about. I had found out an occupation worthily, and was happy because I had something to do. In a word, I had commenced *l'homme accompli*, and was not wearying of the name.

While I was in this pleasing career of buoyantness, for as it might at last be called, it happened that I was one night sitting in my little parlour, adjacent to the closet which my landlady calls my bedroom, in the act of preparing for an early retreat to the region of Morphona. Duplaid's *Memoirs*, borrowed from the library of A——, was lying on the table before me, flanked by some excellent Chatelet chess (as proved, by the way, from an honest London citizen, to whom I had explained the difference between a *Colon* and a *Sacre* with), and a glass of Vanderhagen's hot ale. Thus armed at all points against my old enemy Time, I was leisurely and deliberately preparing for bed—was reading a line of old Duplaid—was sipping my ale, or munching my bread and cheese—was watching the drizzle at my broadened house, or a broken or two of my neighbours, when the village clock should strike ten, before which time I made it a rule never to go to bed. A loud knocking, however, interrupted my ordinary process on this occasion, and the voice of my honest landlady of the George was heard exclaiming, "What the devil, Sir,

* The George was, and is, the principal inn in the village of Kersnaugh, or Kilsnoe. But the landlord of the period was not the same. Still and again passing by whom the inn is now kept. David Kyle, a Madras proprietor of no little in-

Grimsdore, the Captain is no in his hat? and a gentleman at our house has ordered a frock and waistcoat collars, and a bottle of sherry, and has sent to ask him to supper, to tell him all about the Abbey."

"*No,*" answered *Lordas Grimsdore*, *in the same sleepy tone of a Scottish mistress when ten o'clock is going to strike, "he's no in his hat, but I'm wairant here we get out at this time o' night to keep folks sitting up waiting for him—the Captain's a decent man."*

I plainly perceived this last complement was made for my hearing, by way both of exultation and of recommending the course of conduct which *Mrs. Grimsdore* desired I should pursue. But I had not been landed about the world for thirty years and odd, and lived a life of bachelor all the while, to come home and be put under paternal government by my landlady. Accordingly I spent my chamber-door, and desired my old friend *David* to walk up stairs.

"*Captain,*" said he, as he entered, "I am as glad to find you up as if I had looked a twenty pined woman. There's a gentleman up yonder that will not stop round in his hat this blessed night unless he has the pleasure to drink a glass of wine with you."

"*You leave, David,*" I replied, with becoming dignity, "that I cannot with propriety go out to visit strangers at this time of night, or accept of invitations from people of whom I know nothing."

David made a round oath, and added, "It's no the like kind of? He has ordered a frock and egg wane, a pincush and waistcoat collars, and a bottle of sherry—Dye devil I wad come and ask you to go to keep company with my bit English waler that says an tawtel chase and a chawer of rum-tully? This is a gentleman every inch of him, and a virtuous, a clean virtuous—a well-coloured sheet of cloth, and a wily like the curled back of a nap-ow. The very first question he spaird was about the cold drinking that has been at the bottom of the water these last score years—I have seen the foolishness when we were sitting women.—And how the devil could he be any thing about the cold drinking, unless he were a virtuous?"

David being a virtuous in his own way, and moreover a land-holder and heritor, was a qualified judge of all who frequented his

parson, a virtuous person of consequence in whatever belonged to the business of the living, was the original owner and landlord of the inn. Poor *David*, like many other busy men, took no more care of public affairs, as to some degree to neglect his own. There are persons still alive at *Knoxaphere* who can remember him and his parishioners in the following sketch of what kind of the Group.

"There is more to be told about that old babbler hereafter. See Note B.

house, and therefore I could not stand upon a trying the strength of my legs.

"That's right, Captain," exclaimed David; "you two will be as thick as those in a bed as soon as *jeungther*. I know even the filth of him my very well since I saw the great Doctor Samuel deliver on his knees through Scotland, whilst some is lying on my back parishes for the amusement of my guests, and the two hours here off."

"Then the gentleman is a scholar, David?"

"I've upbraid him a scholar," answered David; "he has a black coat on, or a brown one, at any rate."

"Is he a clergyman?"

"I am thinking no, for he looked after his horse's supper before he spoke of his own," replied mine host.

"Has he a servant?" demanded I.

"Nae servant," answered David; "but a good deal of his own, that would per anybody be willing to serve him that looks upon him."

"And what makes him think of disturbing me? Ah, David, this has been some of your chattering; you are perpetually bringing your guests on my shoulders, as if it were my business to entertain every man who comes to the Ganges."

"What the devil must ye has me do, Captain?" answered mine host; "a gentleman lights down, and asks me in a most casual manner, what man of name and learning there is about our town, that can tell him about the antiquities of the place, and especially about the noble Abbey—ye wadna has me tell the gentleman a lie? and ye his said enough there is nobody on the town can say a reasonable word about it, he is no parson, except the school, and he is as far as a piper by this time. So, says I, there's Captain Chatterbox, that's a very civil gentleman, and has little to do but talking of the noble events about the Abbey, and doleful just here by. Then says the gentleman to me, 'Sir,' says he very civilly, 'have the goodness to stop to Captain Chatterbox with my compliments, and say I am a stranger, who have been led to these parts chiefly by the fame of *Steen Pinner*, and that I would call upon him but the hour is late.' And made he said that I have forgotten, but I will remember it well,—'And, landlord, get a bottle of your best claret, and supper for two.'—Ye wadna have had me refuse to do the gentleman's bidding, and me a gentleman?"

"Well, David," said I, "I wish your virtuous had taken a fitter hour—but as you say he is a gentleman."—

"I've spoiled him then—the order spoils for itself—a bottle of champagne—collaps and a faint—that's spoiling him a gentleman, I trust!—That's right, Captain, better wait up, the night's raw—but the water's churning for it that; we'll be out next night with my Lord's boat, and we'll see all laid if I drink and get a supper to relish your ale at six."

In five minutes after this dialogue, I found myself in the parlour of the George, and in the presence of the stranger.

He was a gross paragon, about my own age (which we shall call about 35½), and really had, as my friend David expressed it, something in his face that induced men to oblige and to serve him. Yet this expression of authority was not so all of the sort which I have seen in the countenance of a general of brigade, neither was the stranger's dress at all martial. It consisted of a uniform coat of orangy cloth, not in rather an old-fashioned form. His legs were defended with strong leather puttees, which, according to an antiquarian acquaintance, spread at the sides, and were secured by steel rings. His countenance was worn as much by age and sorrow as by age, for it indicated that he had seen and endured much. His address was regularly pleasing and gentlemanlike, and the apology which he made for disturbing me at such an hour and in such a manner, was so well and handsomely expressed, that I could not reply otherwise than by declaring my willingness to be of service to him.

"I have been a trouble to-day, sir," said he, "and I would willingly defer the little I have to say till after supper, for which I feel rather more appalled than usual."

He sat down to table, and notwithstanding the stranger's alleged appetite, as well as the gentle preparation of drink and ale which I had already had about, I really believe that I of the two did the greater honour to my friend David's feel and mental collapse.

When the clock was roused, and we had each made a tumbler of water, of that liquor which beats with Sherry, and guests and ladies, I perceived that the stranger seemed passive, silent, and somewhat embarrassed, as if he had something to communicate which he knew not well how to introduce. To pave the way for him, I again

* The gentleman whose boots are mentioned in the text in the tale that we outside Lord Beauchamp, is certainly fitted for the author. David Light was a constant and privileged attendant when Lord Beauchamp had a party for spending leisure; on such occasions, singly or a brood of his most often killed between Gleaner and Landlord.

of the ancient-sins of the Ministry and of their history. But, to my great surprise, I found I had met my match with a scoundrel. The stranger not only knew all that I could tell him, but a good deal more; and what was still more worrying, he was able, by reference to dates, chronicles, and other sources of facts, that, as Byron says, "dooms be disputed," to correct many of the vagues tales, which I had adopted as facts and vulgar traditions, as well as to confute some even of my juvenile theories on the subject of the old mounds and their dwellings, which I had quoted freely as all the presumption of superior information. And here I cannot but remark, that much of the stranger's arguments and deductions rested upon the authority of Mr. *Duguid Explorer of Scotland*,* and his instructions, a possession whose disloyalness reached into the national records as life is destroy my trade, and that of all local antiquaries, by substituting truth instead of legend and romance. Alas! I would the learned gentleman did but know how difficult it is for us scholars in gilly wares of antiquity to

*Flunk from our memories a useful "legend,"
But not the written records of our town,
Or chance our losses of that precious stuff—*

and so forth. It would, I am sure, never has gilly to think how many old days he hath not to learn new tricks, how many miserable parents he hath taught to sing a new song, how many grey heads he hath added by vain attempts to exchange their old *Memorabilia* for his new *Memorabilia*. But let it pass. *Humana propius cunctorum*. All changes round us, past, present, and to come, that which was history yesterday becomes fable to-day, and the truth of to-day is hatched into a lie by to-morrow.

Finishing myself late to be encountered in the Ministry, which I had hitherto regarded as my citadel, I began, like a stupid general, to evacuate that place of defence, and fight my way through the adjacent country. I had recourse to my acquaintances with the families and antiquaries of the neighbourhood, ground on which I thought I might struggle at large without its being possible for the stranger to meet me with advantage. But I was mistaken.

The men on the iron-grey and shaggy and shrewd as much more intimate knowledge of these particulars than I had the least pretension to. He could tell the very year in which the family of *De Riga* first

* Thomas Thomson, Esq., whose well-known pamphlet ought to be bound on another page than one written by an intimate friend of thirty years' standing.

settled on their ancient heresy.* And a Thane within reach has he have his friends and companions, how many of his ancestors had fallen by the sword of the English, how many on domestic blood, and how many by the hand of the executioner for mere treason. Their souls he was acquainted with from birth to funeral-service; and as for the miscellaneous antiquities scattered about the country, he knew every one of them, from a cross-stone to a cairn, and could give as good an account of such as if he had lived on the time of the Danes or Druids.

I was now in the multiplying predicament of one who suddenly finds himself a scholar when he comes to teach, and nothing was left for me but to pick up as much of his conversation as I could, for the benefit of the next company. I told, indeed, *Allen Ramsey's* story of the *Black and White's Wife*, in order to retreat with some leisure under cover of a passing tale. Here, however, my flock was again turned by the wind and stronger.

"You are pleased to be facetious, sir," said he; "but you cannot be ignorant that the infamous incident you mentioned is the subject of a tale much older than that of *Allen Ramsey*."

I smiled, meaning to acknowledge my ignorance, though, in fact, I knew no more what he meant than did one of my friend David's post-boys.

"I do not think," continued my amiable companion, "to be the curious poem published by *Phylarchus* from the *Medieval Manuscript*, called the *Prayers of David*, although it presents a very minute and accurate picture of Scottish manners during the reign of James V.; but rather to the Italian novelist, by whom, so far as I know, the story was first printed, although unquestionably he first took his original from some ancient history."†

"It is not to be doubted," answered I, not very well understanding, however, the proposition to which I gave such unqualified assent.

"Yes," continued my companion, "I question much, but you

* The death of the King, mentioned here, being, of course, that of the highest antiquity, and in the subject of one of the prophecies of Thomas the Rhymer.—

English, Scotch, whatever befalls,
They shall be King of Scotsmen.

† It is curious to remark, on how little evidence of historical authorities upon one subject to involve uncertainty. The same story which *Ramsey* and *Warton* have separately handled, forms also the subject of the middle story, the *King and Supper* (*Allen Ramsey* certainly involved, without acknowledgment, the tale of the *Black and White's Wife* from the old Scottish poem, entitled the *Prayers of David*, usually attributed to William Dunbar).

know my situation and position, whether you would have yielded upon this precise matter for my amusement?"

This observation he made in a tone of perfect good-humour: I pressed up my ears at the hint, and answered as politely as I could, that my ignorance of his condition and rank could be the only cause of my having stumbled on anything disagreeable; and that I was most willing to apologise for my unintentional offence, as soon as I should learn wherein it consisted.

"May, no offence, sir," he replied; "offence can only arise where it is taken. I have been too long acquainted to more acute and cool misinterpretations, to be offended at a popular jest, though directed at my profession."

"Am I to understand, then," I answered, "that I am speaking with a Catholic shopman?"

"An unworthy monk of the order of Saint Benedict," said the stranger, "belonging to a community of your own countrymen, long established in France, and national exclusively by the name of the Revolution."

"Then," said I, "you are a native Scotchman, and from this neighbourhood?"

"Not so," answered the monk; "I am a Scotchman by attraction only, and never was in this neighbourhood during my whole life."

"Never in this neighbourhood, and yet so intimately acquainted with its history, its traditions, and even its internal anatomy? You surprise me, sir," I replied.

"It is not surprising," he said, "that I should have that sort of local information, when it is considered, that my uncle, an excellent man, as well as a good Scotchman, the head clerk of our religious community, employed much of his leisure in making me acquainted with these particulars; and that I myself, disgusted with what has been passing around me, have for many years amused myself, by digesting and arranging the various scraps of information which I derived from my worthy relations, and other equal brethren of our order."

"I presume, sir," said I, "though I would by no means intrude the question, that you are now returned to Scotland with a view to settle amongst your countrymen, since the great political catastrophe of our time has reduced your order?"

"No, sir," replied the Benedictine, "such is not my intention. A European potentate, who still cherishes the Catholic faith, has offered us a retreat within his dominions, where a few of my national

brothers are already enrolled, to pray to God for blessings on their persons, and graces to their vocations. *No one, I believe, will be able to object to us, under our new establishment, that the extent of our mission will be inconsistent with our want of poverty and abstinence; but let us strive to be thankful to God, that the want of temporal abundance is removed from us."*

"*Many of your animals, sheep, etc.,*" said I, "enjoyed very handsome incomes—and yet, allowing for those, I question if any were better provided for than the Monastery of this village. It is said to have possessed nearly two thousand pounds in yearly revenue, five hundred children and nine halls of which, fifty-six children for boys having, forty-four children and ten halls for girls, separate and good, butter, milk, carriage and carriage, coats and lace, wool and silk."

"*Give me much of all these temporal goods, etc.,*" said my companion, "which, though well intended by the pious donors, served only to make the establishment the way and the prey of those by whom it was finally destroyed."

"*In the manuscript, however,*" I observed, "the monks had no way left of it, and so the end was gone."

— made good use
On Fridays when they fasted "

"*I understand you, etc.,*" said the Revolutionist; "it is difficult, with the present, to carry a full cup without spilling. Unquestionably the wealth of the community, as it anticipated the safety of the establishment by exciting the jealousy of others, was also in frequent danger a snare to the brothers themselves. And yet we have seen the revenue of convents expended, not only in acts of beneficence and hospitality to individuals, but in works of general and permanent advantage to the world at large. The noble John collection of French libraries, commenced in 1727, under the suggestion and at the expense of the community of *Grand Maîtrise*," with long story that the revenues of the Revolution were not always spent in self-indulgence, and that the members of that order did not uniformly consider as selfish and unchristian, when they had discharged the formal duties of their rule."

As I knew nothing exactly at the time about the generosity of St. Maur, and their formal labours, I could only return a something

* (This collection, published under the direction of Dom. Martin Boreau in 1731, and interrupted during the French Revolution, has since been renewed, and extends to the year 1792.)

assent to this proposition. I have a son who has noble wealth in the library of a distinguished family, and I must own I am ashamed to reflect, that, in so wealthy a country as ours, a scholar is not of our historians should not be undertaken, under the patronage of the noble and the learned, in reticacy of that which the Dissolution of Pious Estates at the expense of their own conventual funds.

"I perceive," said the ecclesiastic, smiling, "that your heretical prejudices are too strong to allow us poor brethren any word, whether literary or spiritual."

"Far from it, sir," said I, "I assure you I have been much obliged to make to my house.—When I was quartered in a *hospitium* in Florence, in the campaign of 1795, I never lived more comfortably in my life. They were jolly fellows, the French Officers, and might sorry was I to leave my good quarters, and to know that my lowest beds were to be at the mercy of the *Don-Cochino*. But—*scienza* do us justice!"

The poor *Donchettino* looked down and was silent. I had unwittingly mentioned a trace of later reflections, or rather I had touched somewhat rudely upon a shield which without caused in retreat of itself. But he was too much accustomed to this successful form of silence to suffer it to mortify him. On my part, I hastened to atone for my blunder. "If there was any object of his journey to this country to which I could, with propriety, assist him, I hoped to offer him my best services." I even I had some little emphasis on the words "with propriety," as I felt it would all become not, a moral Protestant, and a servant of government as far as my half-pay was concerned, to displace myself in any recruiting which my companions might have undertaken on behalf of foreign monarchs, or in any similar design for the advancement of Popery, which, whether the Pope be actually the old lady of England or no, it did not become me in any manner to address or encourage.

My new friend hastened to relieve my embarrassment. "I was about to repeat your assistance, sir," he said, "in a matter which cannot but interest you as an antiquary, and a person of research. But I assure you it relates entirely to events and persons removed to the distance of ten centuries and a half. I have experienced too much real from the violent misanthropism of the century in which I now live, to be a weak labourer on the work of imagination in that of my ancestors."

I again assured him of my willingness to assist him in anything that was not contrary to my allegiance or religion.

"My proposal," he replied, "affects neither.—May God bless the reigning family in Britain!" They are not, indeed, of that dynasty to which my ancestors struggled and suffered in vain; but the Providence who has conducted his present Majesty to the throne, has given him the wisest ministry in his land—firmness and integrity—a true love of his country, and an enlightened view of the dangers by which she is surrounded.—For the religion of those rulers, I am convinced is large that the great Prince, whose superhuman dispensation has torn them from the bosom of the church, will, in his own good time and manner, restore them to its holy fold. The efforts of an individual, obscure and humble as myself, might well exhaust, but could never advance, a work so mighty."

"May I then inquire, sir," said I, "with what purpose you visit this country?"

In my companion's reply, he took from his pocket a chapel paper-book, about the size of a regimental order-book, full, as it seemed, of memoranda, and, drawing one of the smaller ones to him (for I found, as a strong proof of his respect for the stranger, had indulged us with one), he seemed to peruse the contents very carefully.

"There is among the ruins of the western end of the Abbey church," said he, looking up to me, yet keeping the memorandum-book half open, and mechanically glancing at it, as if to refresh his memory, "a sort of vault or chapel beneath a broken arch, and on the immediate vicinity of one of those classical Gothic columns which once supported the magnificent roof, whose fall has now considered that part of the building with its ruins."

"I think," said I, "that I have whereabouts you are. Is there not in the side wall of the chapel, or vault, which you mention, a large arched niche, having a seat of arms, which our ancestors has been able to decipher?"

"You are right," answered the Benedictine; and again searching his memoranda, he added, "the arms on the donor table are those of Gloucestershire. Keep a cross parted by a cross undivided and counter-charged of the same; and on the counter three quarters for three of Anjou; they are the ancient families, now almost extinct in this country—the arms party yet join."

"I think," said I, "there is no part of this ancient structure with which you are not so well acquainted as even the mason who built it, just of your information. Is correct, he who made out those heralds must have had better eyes than mine."

"His eyes," said the Benedictine, "have long been closed in death, probably when he regarded the monument it was in a most perfect state, or he may have derived his information from the traditions of the place."

"I assure you," said I, "that no such tradition was made. I have made several reconnoissances among the old people, in hopes to learn something of the unusual happenings, but I never heard of such circumstances. It seems odd that you should have acquired it in a foreign land."

"These trifling particulars," he replied, "were formerly held of upon as more important, and they were recorded in the notes and retained recollections of those, because they related to a place due rather to memory, but which their eyes could never again behold. It is possible, in like manner, that on the Potomac or Chesapeake, you may find traditions current concerning places in England, which are entirely forgotten in the neighbourhood where they originated. But to my purpose. In this view, marked by the unusual happenings, you derived a treasure, and it is in order to return it that I have undertaken my present journey."

"A treasure?" asked I, in astonishment.

"Yes," replied the monk, "an invaluable treasure, for those who know how to use it rightly."

I saw my own old dogle a little at the word treasure, and then a handsome fellow, with a nasal groan on his nose and scarlet lining, having a smart salute on his gleaming hat, crossed on it soon to glide across the room before my eyes, while a voice, as of a warrior, pronounced in my ear, "Captain Chamberlain's Billings—draw up." But I resisted the devil, and he fled from me.

"I believe," said I, "all hidden treasure belongs either to the king or the lord of the soil; and as I have served his majesty, I cannot concern myself in any adventure which may have an end in the Court of Chancery."

"The treasure I seek," said the stranger, smiling, "will not be seized by prince or noble,—it is simply the heart of an upright man."

"Ah! I understand you," I answered, "some relic, forgotten in the confusion of the Reformation. I know the value which men of your persuasion put upon the relics and tokens of saints. I have seen the Three Kings of Cologne."

"The relics which I seek, however," said the Benedictine, "are not

perfectly of that nature. The excellent relative whom I have already mentioned, carried his labours home with pushing him from the traditions of his family, particularly some remarkable circumstances which took place about the first breaking out of the schism of the church in Scotland. He became so much interested in his own labours, that at length he resolved that the heart of one individual, the hero of his tale, should rest no longer on a bed of luxury, now deserted by all his kindred. As he knew where it was deposited, he formed the resolution to visit his native country for the purpose of recovering this valued relic. But age, and at length disease, interfered with his resolution, and it was on his deathbed that he charged me to undertake the task in his stead. The various superficial events which have crowded upon each other, our own and our state, have for many years obliged me to postpone this delegated duty. Why, indeed, transport the relics of a holy and worthy man to a country, where religion and virtue are become the mockery of the sinner? I have now a home, which I trust may be permanent, of residing in the north can be found in. Whether will I transport the heart of the good father, and beside the stones which it shall occupy, I will construct my new grave."

"He must, indeed, have been an excellent man," replied I, "whose memory, at so distant a period, calls forth such strong marks of regard."

"He was, as you justly term him," said the ecclesiastic, "indeed excellent—excellent in his life and doctrine—excellent, above all, in his self-denial and disinterested sacrifice of all that life holds dear to principle and to friendship. But you shall read his history. I shall be happy at once to gratify your curiosity, and to show my sense of your kindness, if you will have the goodness to present me the means of accomplishing my object."

I replied to the ecclesiastic, that, as the rubbish amongst which he proposed to search was no part of the ordinary household-stuff, and as I was on the best terms with the owner, I had little doubt that I could procure him the means of executing his pious purpose.

With this promise on paper for the night; and on the morning morning I made it my business to see the owner, who, for a small gratuity, readily granted permission of search, on condition, however, that he should be present himself, to see that the stranger removed nothing of valuable value.

"To know, and doubt, and hesitate, if he can find any, he shall be

welcome," and this question of the record. Meanwhile, "there's plenty of about, no life outside of them; but if there be any gods" (*morning post* 193) "or devils, or the like of such things, surely of gold and silver, did live we on I remove at their being removed."

The action was designed, that our researches should take place at night, being unwilling to create observation, or give out to ourselves.

My new acquaintance and I spent the day as before hours of house-keeping. We visited every corner of these magnificent ruins on a and again during the forenoon, and, having made a comfortable dinner at David's, we retired in the afternoon to such places as the night offered as ancient dwellings in modern quarters and modern surroundings. Night found us in the interior of the ruins, with a bed by the altar, who carried a dark lantern, and standing alternately over the graves of the dead, and the fragments of that architecture, which they doubtless trusted would have escaped their hands till daybreak.

I am by no means particularly superstitious, and yet there was that in the present service which I did not very much like. There was something awful in the reflection of darkness, at such an hour, and in such a place, the still and silent mystery of the grave. My companions were free from this impression—the stranger from his constant desire to invade the purposes for which he came—and the natives from habitual indifference. We men stood in the circle, which, by the account of the Dominican, contained the bones of the family of Glendower, and were busily employed in searching the rubbish from a corner which the stranger pointed out. If a half-pay Captain could have represented an honest Border-Light, or an ex-Benedictine of the twelfth century a sacred mark of the nation, we might have easily enough pursued the search after Michael Scott's lamp and lost of magic power. But the natives would have been in trap in the group.²

² This is one of those passages which must have read differently, almost every one knows that the Wanderer and the Author of the "Key of the Lost Kingdom" is the same person. But before the original was made, there was a great deal of this and similar offences against good taste, in some or against, often repeated, that there was something very objectionable in the Author of Wanderer's manner concerning the Wanderer, as a matter of fact, and not as a matter of taste. That a great deal of the same is the passage from this volume, but the more careful way to investigate how they came there.

But the stranger, assisted by the action on his tomb, had been long at work, they came to some hollow stones, which seemed to have made part of a small shrine, though now displaced and destroyed.

"Let us remove these with caution, my friend," said the stranger, "but we expect that which I come to seek."

"They are precious stones," said the action, "piled five rows one of them;—sure then the best and never seen the world, I'm certain."

A minute after he had made this observation, he exclaimed, "I have found something more that stands against the odds, as if it were another such set stone."

The stranger stopped eagerly to assist him.

"No, no, leave it my son," said the action, "was below or quarters;"—and he lifted from amongst the ruins a small broken box.

"You will be disappointed, my friend," said the Benefactor, "if you expect anything there but the maddening dust of a human heart, closed in on every side of perjury."

I interposed as a neutral party, and taking the box from the action, reminded him, that if there were treasure concealed in it, still it could not become the property of the finder. I then proposed, that as the place was too dark to examine the contents of the broken vessel, we should retire to David's, where we might have the advantage of light and fire while carrying on our investigation. The stranger requested us to go before, assuring us that he would follow in a few minutes.

I fancy that old Melchior suspected that five minutes might be employed in effecting further discoveries amongst the tombs, for he glided back through a sub-entrance to watch the Benefactor's motions, but presently returned, and told us on a whisper, that "the pocket was an old bone among the small stones, proving his very word."

I stole back, and behold the old man actually employed as Melchior had informed me. The language seemed to be Latin; and as the whisperer, yet silent agent, glided away through the round orifice, I could not help reflecting how long it was since they had heard the tones of that language, for the candles of which they had been raised at each end of time, hope, labour, and expense. "Come away, come away," said I; "let us leave him to himself, Melchior; there is no business of ours."

VOL. I.

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN LIBRARY
ANN ARBOR, MICHIGAN
16.2.66

Q. 1056

"My sister, no, Captain," said Matthew: "she's dead, it is true; he would be long on it on his own. My father and his sons, were a house-keeper, and used to say he never was shocked in a long to his life, saying by a wretched way from Kilmoreland, that used to grow over a dream of reality. But this gentleman will be a Roman, I'm content!"

"You are perfectly right in that, Matthew," said I.

"Ay, I have seen him or three of their people that were dead over here some years ago. They just showed his head when they looked on the father's head, and the mother's head, in the churchyard; they had in them the same appearance. —Oh, he is not showing yet, more than he was a house-keeper!" I never had a Roman, as my head was, but one—until by then, he was the only one in the town he was—and that was what Jack of the Field. He was here long ago, just Jack praying in the Abbey on a third night, at his house as a small stone. Jack had a lot of a chimney up. Many a merry play I have had of him down at the own speaker; and when he died, directly I said he could have, but, as I got his grave well looked, some of the quality, that were of his own unhappy possession, but the ropes stirred away up the water, and found him after their own pleasure, drenched—say Lord here, I was here made one great charge. I would have, would I could, dead or alive.—Stay, no—the strange gentleman is coming."

"Hold the horses to wait him, Matthew," said I.—"This is rough walking, &c."

"Yes," replied the Evangelist; "I may say with a poet, who is doubtless familiar to you"—

I should be surprised if he were, thought I internally.

The stranger continued:

*"Sweet Providence be my guest! here's off to-night
Have my old feet stumbled at grace!"*

"We are now close of the churchyard," said I, "and have but a short walk to David's, where I hope we shall find a cheerful fire to warm us after our night's work."

It's entered, accordingly, the fifth person, into which Matthew was also about to push himself with sufficient generosity, when David, with a most extending oath, expelled him by head and shoulders, d—sing his curiosity, that would not let gentlemen be private in

* A tradition.

their own use. Apparently mine had remained as new, previous to its destruction, for he crawled up to the table on which I had laid down the broken box. It was frail and cracked, as might be guessed, from having lain so many years in the ground. On opening it, we found deposited within, a new world of porphyry, as the stranger had pronounced it to be.

"I fancy," he said, "gentlemen, your curiosity will not be satisfied,—perhaps I should say that your suspicions will not be removed,—unless I make this cavity; yet it only contains the maddening remains of a heart, even the seat of the noblest thoughts."

He opened the box with great caution; but the derelict collection which it contained bore none the least resemblance to what it might once have been, the masses now having been apparently unequal in pressure the shape and colour, although they were adequate to preserve its solid decay. It's more quite satisfied, notwithstanding, that it was what the stranger asserted, the remains of a human heart; and David readily promised his influence in the village, which was almost co-extensive with that of the *Smiths* himself, to induce all able villagers. He was, moreover, pleased to favour us with his company to supper; and having taken the last's share of two inches of sherry, he not only assented with his pleasure to the stranger's removal of the heart, but, I believe, would have authorised the removal of the *Alley* itself, were it not that it happens considerably to advantage the worthy politician's own custom.

The object of the *Donnellan's* visit to the head of his forefathers being now accomplished, he announced his intention of leaving us early on the morning day, but requested my company to breakfast with him before his departure. I rose accordingly, and when we had finished our morning's meal, the priest took us apart, and pulling from his pocket a large bundle of papers, he put them into my hands. "These," said he, "Captain Donnellan, are genuine *Remains* of the sixteenth century, and related to a singular, and, as I think, an interesting point of view, the manners of that period. I am desirous to believe that their publication will not be an un-acceptable present to the British public; and willingly make over to you any profit that may accrue from such a transaction."

I stared a little at this announcement, and observed, that the head annual two authors for the duty he assigned to the manuscript.

"Do not mistake me, sir," said the *Donnellan*; "I did not mean to say the *Remains* were written in the sixteenth century, but

only that they were compiled from authentic materials of that period, but written in the facts and language of the present day. My uncle encouraged this kind, and I, partly to improve my habit of English composition, partly to direct uncharitable thoughts, and not my heart, began with enthusiasm and emulation. The title was the period of the story where my uncle leaves off his narrative, and I commenced mine. In fact, they relate to a great measure to different persons, as well as to a different period."

Returning the papers to my hand, I proceeded to state to him my doubts, whether, even good Protestants, I could predicate as equivalent a publication written probably in the spirit of Popery.

"You will find," he said, "an author of controversy in this age, who, on my statements stated, with which, I trust, the good in all professions will not be willing to quarrel. I remembered I was writing for a head made up, decided from the Catholic faith; and I have taken care in my writing which, partly interpreted, could give ground for accusing me of partiality. But if, upon reflecting my narrative with the proofs to which I refer you—for you will find copies of many of the original papers in that parcel—you are of opinion that I have been partial to my own faith, I freely give you leave to correct my errors in that respect. I am, however, I am not conscious of this defect, and am rather to fear that the Catholics may be of opinion, that I have omitted circumstances respecting the story of discipline which prevailed, and partly occasioned, the great schism, called by you the Reformation, over which I ought to have drawn a veil. And indeed, this is one reason why I chose the papers should appear in a foreign land, and pass to the press through the hands of a stranger."

To this I had nothing to reply, unless to object my own incompetency to the task the good father was desirous to impose upon me. On this subject he was pleased to say more, I fear, than his knowledge of me fully warranted—more, at any rate, than my maturity will permit me to record. At length he ended, with advising me, if I continued to feel the difference which I stated, to apply to some veteran of literature, whose experience might supply my deficiencies. Upon these terms we parted, with mutual expressions of regard, and I have never since heard of him.

After several attempts to pursue the course of paper then regularly conferred on me, in which I was interrupted by the most insupportable fits of sneezing, I at length, in a sort of despair, communicated them

in our village school, from whom they found a more favourable reception than the valuable confirmation of my notes had been able to afford them. They unanimously pronounced the work to be exceedingly good, and assured me I could be guilty of the greatest possible injury to our flourishing village, if I should suppose that there was an interesting and valuable light upon the history of the ancient *Monastery of Saint Mary*.

At length, by dint of listening to their opinions, I became sensible of my error; and, indeed, when I heard passages read forth by the numerous voices of our worthy pastor, I was more than fixed that I have felt myself at some of his own sermons. Such and so good to the difference between reading a thing one's self, making believe very cheaply all the difficulties of manuscripts, and, as the man says in the play, "having the word read to you;"—it is positively like being walked over a creek in a boat, or wading through it on your feet, with the word up to your knees. Still, however, there remained the great difficulty of finding some one who could act as scribe, recorder, or even of the form and of the language, which, according to the schoolmaster, was absolutely necessary.

Since the town walked forth to show themselves a long, never was an hour so busied about. The parson would not leave the quiet of his drawing-room—the books proved the dignity of his situation, and the approach of the great annual fair, as reasons against going to Edinburgh to make arrangements for printing the *Parishman's* manuscripts. The schoolmaster alone owned of no better staff; and, desirous perhaps of exhibiting the form of *Johnston Christchurch*, raised a wish to undertake this manuscript commission. But a remembrance from three opulent farmers, whose sons he had at bed, board, and schooling, for twenty pounds per annum ahead, was like a frost over the blossoms of his literary ambition, and he was compelled to decline the service.

In these circumstances, sir, I apply to you, by the advice of our little council of war, making doubting you will not be disinclined to take the day upon you, as it is much annotated with that on which you have distinguished yourself. What I request is, that you will write, or rather write and correct, the printed packet, and prepare it for the press, by such alterations, additions, and omissions, as you think necessary. Pardon my hearing to you, that the deposit will stay in Edinburgh,—the best copies of preachers, as our old general of brigade expressed himself, may be sent up. A few lines are all you can have, and, for the price-money, let the books be

first was, and it shall be printed at the dress-head. I hope you will take nothing amiss that I have said. I am a plain writer, and little accustomed to compliments. I was told, that I should be so, if invited to write in the *Journal* with you—that is, to put my name with yours on the title-page. I have the honour to be,

Sir,

Your obedient humble servant,

CHARLES CLERMONT

VILLAGE OF KINGSBRIDGE,

near St. Asaph, 1830

To the Author of "Wattelet," &c., }
care of Mr. John Bellamy, }
Hanover Street, Edinburgh }

ANSWER

BY THE "AUTHOR OF WATERLOO," TO THE FOREGOING
LETTER FROM CAPTAIN CHUTTERLOCK.



DEAR CAPTAIN,—Do not advise, that, notwithstanding the distance and anxiety of your address, I return an answer to the terms of familiarity. The truth is, your origin and native country are better known to me than even to yourself. You derive your respectable parentage, if I can not greatly mistake, from a land which has afforded much pleasure, as well as profit, to those who have traded to it successfully.—I mean that part of the terra incognita which is called the province of Utopia. Its productions, though assailed by many (and some who are too and whose original scruple) in idle and unobscured theories, have nevertheless, like many other theories, a general acceptance, and are warmly enjoyed even by those who express the gravest fears and doubts of them in public. The circumlocution is often the first to be shocked at the small of spirits—it is not unusual to hear old men in their chambers against accident—the general weakness of some green-sowing men would not break down eyes—and many, I say out of the whole and inward, but of these most anxious to men such, when the spring-look of their string is drawn, their waist are pulled over their ears, their feet immolated into their bushy slippers, are to be found, were their minds suddenly intruded upon, hardly engaged with the last one word.

I have said, the truly wise and learned declare these signs, and well upon the word would as carefully as they would the lid of their confusion. I will only quote one instance, though I have a hundred. Did you know the celebrated *Walt of Birmingham*, Captain Chutterlock? I believe not, though, from what I am about to state, he would not have failed to have sought an acquaintance with you. It was only once my fortune to meet him, whether in body or spirit it matters not. There were assembled about half-a-dozen of our Northern English, who had amongst them, Heaven knows how, a well-known character of your country, *Isidiah Chatterbox*. This worthy

person, having come to Edinburgh during the Christmas vacation, had known a sort of flow in the place, and was led to look for a home to house along with the optician, the chemist, and other necessaries of the season, which "admitted their respectable friends to private family-parties, if required." Amidst this company stood Mr. WAT, the man whose genius discovered the means of multiplying our national resources to a degree perhaps even beyond his own stupendous powers of calculation and construction; bringing the treasures of the deep to the summit of the north—giving the feeble arm of man the momentum of an *Afric*—converting manufactures to gold, as the rail of the peasant produced wealth in the desert—affording the means of progressing with that true and holy which went for no man, and of nothing without that which which defied the assaults and threats of Time himself.* This potent commander of the elements—the shrouder of time and space—the magician, whose steady machinery has produced a change on the world, the effects of which, extraordinary as they are, are perhaps only now beginning to be felt—was not only the most profound man of science, the most successful conductor of power and calculator of wonders as adapted to practical purposes,—was not only one of the most generally well-informed,—but one of the best and kindest of human beings.

There he stood, surrounded by the little band I have mentioned of Northern liberals, men not less anxious, gradually speaking, of their own Jews and their own opinions, than the national movements are supposed to be jealous of the high character which they have won upon service. Methinks I yet see and hear what I shall never see or hear again. In his eighty-fifth year, the short, black, benevolent old man, had his attention alive to every man's question, his information at every man's command.

His interests and fancy revolved on every subject. Our questions were a deep philosophy,—he talked with them on the origin of the alphabet as if he had been conversed with Columbus; another, a calculated crime,—you would have said the old man had studied political economy and mathematics all his life,—of science it is unnecessary to speak, it was his own distinguished walk. And yet, Captain Chatterbox, when he spoke with your countryman Jewishish Chas-

* Probably the vigorous military alludes to the national ships.

The King said well,
But the wind said no.

Our advertisement refers to also a Jewish-speakable Chasid. This whole passage refers to Mr. Watt's improvements on the steam-engine—chiefly Captain Chatterbox.

bottom, you would have seen he had been acted with Charles and Farley, with the promoters and general, and could neither sorry that the dragons had fired at the fugitive Convention. In fact, we discovered that no word of the least celebrity crossed his personal, and that the selfishness of artists was as much enlisted in the production of your native country (the land of *Vingon* *afersand*), as other words, as dissimulation and obliquity a partner of words, as if he had been a very natural's appreciation of rights. I have little sympathy for troubling you with these things, excepting the desire to communicate a delightful reading, and a wish to encourage you to shake off that modest diffidence which makes you afraid of being supposed acquainted with the fairy-land of delicious fiction. I will repeat your tag of verse, from *Memoirs* himself, with a paraphrase for your own use, my dear Captain, and for that of your country club, accepting in evidence the clergymen and schoolmaster:—

No all would this more potent, etc.
 Take down no more,
 Of *John* here,
 Fair *John*'s name is true;
 But *John*'s name
 Was but a dream,
 Himself a *John* too.

Having told you your country, I must next, my dear Captain Chatterbox, make free to mention your own immediate descent. You are not to suppose your land of *prototypes* as little known to us as the careful announcement of your origin would seem to imply. But you have of its common with many of your country, studiously and accurately to hide any connection with it. There is this difference, indeed, between your countrymen and those of our more material world, that many of the most estimable of them, such as an old Highland gentleman called *Osborn*, a monk of Bristol called *Monks*, and others, are inclined to pass themselves off as denizens of the land of reality, whereas most of our fellow-countrymen who deny their country are such as that country would be very willing to *flush*. The special circumstances you mention relating to your life and actions, impose not upon us. We have the veracity of the constitutional species to which you belong permits them to assume all manner of disguise; we have seen them apparelled in the caprice of a Persian, and the effluvia robe of a Chinese,* and are prepared to suspect their real character under every disguise. But how can we be ignorant of

* See the Persian Letter, and the Letter of the 17th inst.

your country and manners, or deceived by the natives of its islands, when the voyage of discovery which have been made to it since its discovery those recorded by Ptolemy or by Herodotus? And to show the skill and perseverance of your navigators and teachers, we have only to name Bartlett, Ashmun, and Robinson Crusoe. These were the men for discovery. Could we have not Captain Cookland to look out for the north-west passage, or Peter Williams to examine Bayle's Bay, what discoveries might we not have expected? But there are facts, and these both numerous and extraordinary, performed by the inhabitants of your country, which we read without once attempting to credit.

I consider from my purpose, which was to assure you, that I knew you as well as the mother who did not know you, for MacDuff's particular shade is your whole story. You are not born of common, unless, indeed, in that figurative sense, in which the celebrated Maria Edgeworth says, in her state of simple blindness, he termed mother of the least family in England. You belong, sir, to the Editors of the land of Utopia, a sort of persons for whom I have the highest esteem. How is it possible it should be otherwise, when you receive among your correspondents the sons Of Mount Olympus, the short-faced president of the Spectator's Club, poor Ben Eddis, and many others, who have acted as postmen-masters in words which have cheered our hearts, and added wings to our lightest hours?

What I have remarked as peculiar to Editors of the class in which I venture to meet you, is the happy combination of fortuitous circumstances which usually put you in possession of the works which you have the goodness to bring into public notice. One walks on the sea-shore, and a wave casts on land a small cylindrical bowl, or vessel, containing a manuscript much damaged with seawater, which is with difficulty deciphered, and so forth? Another stows into a chamberlain's shop, to purchase a parcel of books, and, behold! the manuscript on which it is laid is the manuscript of a scholar! A third is as fortunate as to obtain from a woman who lets herpings, the curious contents of an antique bureau, the property of a deceased husband. All these are certainly possible occurrences; but, I have not here, they seldom occur to any Editors save those of your country. At least I can answer for myself, that in my solitary walks by the sea, I never saw or read where anything but shells and kelp, and now and then a deceased star-fish; my landlady never presented me

² See the *Pygmalion* Description.

³ See the *History of Antiquities*.

⁴ *Antiquities of the Nation*.

⁵ *Antiquities of the Nation*.

with my manuscript over her sacred bell, and the most interesting of my discoveries in the way of water-pipes, were finding a favourite passage of one of my own words swept round the corner of myself. No, Captain, the funds from which I have drawn my power of attracting the public, have been bought otherwise than by fortuitous adventures. I have turned myself in labour to extract from the treasures of ancient days new treasures of my own. I have turned over volumes, which, from the posthumous I was obliged to decipher, might have been the valuable manuscripts of Cæsar's *Agrippa*, although I never saw "the door open and the devil come in."² But all the domestic substitutes of the libraries were disturbed by the violence of my studies;—

*From my research the hidden spider fled,
And mites, retreating, trembled as I tread.*

From this learned apothecary I emerged like the *Idæipion* in the Persian Tale from his teacher's mouth's readiness on the mountain, not like him to soar over the heads of the multitude, but to struggle in the crowd, and to elbow amongst the throng, making my way from the highest society to the lowest, undrugging the ears, or, what is harder to break, the prejudicial conclusion of the ear, and entering the vulgar familiarity of the other,—and all, you will say, for what?—to collect materials for one of those manuscripts with which every student so often accommodates your countryman, in other words, to write a successful novel.—"O Athenians, how hard an labour to discover your press!"

I might stop here, my dear Clotterbush; it would have a touching effect, and the air of proper deference to our dear Public. But I will not be false with you—(though falsehood increases the observation—the current coin of your country), the truth is, I have studied and lived for the purpose of gratifying my own curiosity, and passing my own time; and though the result has been, that, in one shape or other, I have been frequently before the Public, perhaps more frequently than previous warranted, yet I cannot claim from them the favour due to those who have dedicated their aim and leisure to the improvement and entertainment of others.

Having communicated thus freely with you, my dear Captain, it follows, of course, that I will gratefully accept of your communication, which, as your *Sanctimonious* observed, strikes itself both by subject, manner, and age, into her parts. But I am sorry I cannot

² See Barclay's *Tales* on the Young Man who read in a Conjurer's Books.

yourly your literary abilities, by affixing your name to appear upon the talisman, and I will readily tell you the reason.

The Editors of your country are of such a soft and passive disposition, that they have frequently done themselves great wrongs by giving up the confidence who first brought them into public notice, and public favour, and affixing their names to be used by those quacks and impostors who live upon the sleep of others. Thus I choose to tell how the *very* *Old* *Manet* *Brumwell* was induced by one *Joan* *Archibald* to play the Fool with the ignorant *Alfred* *Ormsby*, and to publish a *Second Part* of the adventures of his hero the renowned *Don* *Quixote*, without the knowledge or co-operation of his principal agent. It is true, the *Archibald* was returned to his sleepiness, and therefore composed a scathing condemnation of the *Knights of La Mancha*, in which the said *Archibald* of *Yorkshire* is severely checked. For in this you perceive there is really the *Jaeger's* disciplined eye, to which a *very* *old* *Strawman* *beloved* *Joan* :—
 "If you have Justice in your hand, you can make him bite me; if I have Justice in my hand, I can make him bite you." Yet, notwithstanding the admirable homeliness thus made by *Old* *Manet* *Brumwell*, his temporary defection did not the less occasion the death of the *Capitaine* *Mitelpo* *Don* *Quixote*, if he can be said to die, whose memory is immortal. Ormsby put him to death, but he should again fall into bad hands. *Awful*, yet just consequence of *Old* *Manet's* defection!

To give a more modern and much less important instance. I am sorry to observe my old acquaintance *Jacobus* *Christchurch* has mistreated himself so far as to desert his original position, and set up for himself. I am afraid the poor polytechnic will make little, by his new allies, unless the pleasure of entertaining the public, and, for aught I know, the possession of the long robe, with *Jaeger's* sword his identity.* However, therefore, *Captain* *Christchurch*, that was by these great examples, I receive you as a partner, but a sleeping partner only.

* I am almost sure correctly informed, that Mr. Christchurch did want considerable sums at Christchurch, and that the person supplying him, was in no respect the real *Jaeger*, made a most Christian and sitting out; and, as I can readily believe, having said for a Christianlike disgression that he was in retirement, was so induced as to condemn the great man, that, after all, he had no wish to being driven rather violently towards of *Jaeger's* little, "the language of Henry Dunbar." Had that the opportunity to print and paper will not allow a good work to rest quiet in his grave.

The note, and the paragraph in the text, were contained by a London bookseller having printed, as a speculation, an additional collection of the Works of my Lord-Lord, which was said to be necessary to be inserted in getting on the world as general.

As I give you no title to employ or use the form of the epistolary we are about to form, I will announce my property in my title-page, and put my own seal on my own sheets, which the attorney tells me it will be a crime to counterfeit, as much as it would be to imitate the autograph of any other capital—a crime amounting, as advertisement upon bills reads across to us, to nothing short of felony. If, therefore, my dear friend, your name should hereafter appear in my title-page without mine, readers will know what to think of you. I mean to use other arguments or threats; but you cannot but be sensible, that, as you use your literary assistance to me on the one hand, so, on the other, your very oil is at my disposal. I can at pleasure rub off your name, strike your name from the half-pay establishment, say, actually put you to death, without being answerable to any one. These are plain words to a gentleman who has served during the whole war; but I am sure, you will take nothing amiss at my hands.

And now, my good sir, let us address ourselves to our task, and arrange, at an hour and a half, the manuscript of your Dedication, so as to suit the taste of this critical age. You will find I have made very liberal use of his permission, to alter whatever seemed too favourable to the Church of Rome, which I absolutely, were it but for her facts and persons.

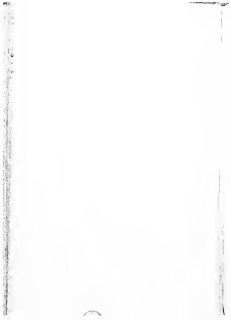
Our reader is doubtless impatient, and we must stop, with John Bunyan,

*We have too long detain'd him in the press,
And kept him from the readers with a truss.*

Adieu, therefore, my dear Capital—remander me respectfully to the presser, the subalterns and the bellies, and all friends of the happy club in the village of Kewstapleair. I have never seen, and never shall see, one of their faces; and notwithstanding, I believe that no yet I am better acquainted with them than any other men who live—I shall soon introduce you to my juvenile friend, Mr. John Ballantyne of Trinity Drive, whom you will find more from his mouth as employed with a leather Publisher. Pardon their difference! It is a wretched trade, and the inevitable genius comprehends the bechalling as well as the book-making spirit,—Once more adieu!*

THE AUTHOR OF H'AMPSHIRE.

* In consequence of the friendly notice of my *Landlord* printed in London, as already mentioned, the late Mr. John Ballantyne, the Author's publisher, had a controversy with the Intelligencer, respecting that his Dedication (which appeared in the next House Price,



THE MONASTERY.

(1828)



O ay! the Monks, the Monks, they did the mischief!
Threw all the processes, all the expiations,
Of a most gross and superstitious age—
May fit be asked that sent the hostile trumpet
And scatter'd all these posthumous vapours!
But that we need them all to punish Murket
Through all the seven hills with his cup of gall,
I will no more believe, with that for Nages,
That old Moll White took wrong with me, and hymeneus,
And spend the first night's thunder: OLD FLAT.

THE village described in the Benedictine's manuscript by the name of *Kontapshair*, bears the same Celtic termination which occurs in *Trappshair*, *Chapshair*, and other compounds. The learned Chalmers derives this word *Qalshair*, from the winding course of a stream; a derivation which coincides, in a remarkable degree, with the serpentine form of the river Tweed near the village of which we speak. It has been long famous for the splendid Monastery of Saint Mary, founded by David the First of Scotland, in whose reign was formed, in the same county, the no less splendid establishments of Melrose, Jedburgh, and Kelso. The donations of land with which the King endowed

these worldly distinctions proceed here from the Mendicant kindness the spirit of Saint, and from one of his impoverished descendants the episcopal creature, "that he had been a companion for the Cross."^{*}

It seems probable, notwithstanding, that David, who was a wise as well as a pious monarch, was not stirred solely by religious motives to these great acts of munificence to the church, but asserted political views in his plans generally. His possessions in Northumberland and Cumberland became precarious after the loss of the Battle of the Marston, and since the comparatively fertile valley of Teesdale was Thely to become the frontier of his kingdom, it is probable he wished to secure at least a part of these valuable possessions by placing them in the hands of the monks, whose property was for a long time respected, even amidst the rage of a frontier war. In this manner alone had the King some chance of ensuring protection and security to the cultivation of the soil; and, in fact, for several ages the possessions of these Abbeys were such a sort of Godies, enjoying the calm light of peace and immunity, while the rest of the country, compassed by wild clans and surrounding barons, was one dark scene of confusion, blood, and unrelenting outrage.

But these innovations did not continue down to the ruins of the monas. Long before that period the wars between England and Scotland had lost their original character of interested hostilities, and had become on the part of the English a struggle for subjugation, on that of the Scots a desperate and unflinching defence of their liberties. This introduced on both sides a degree of fury and animosity unknown in the earlier period of their history; and as religious examples were given way to national hatreds spurred by a love of plunder, the patrimony of the Church was no longer sacred from invasions on either side. Still, however, the tenants and vassals of the great Abbeys had many advantages over those of the lay barons, who were harassed by constant military duty, until they became desperate, and lost all relish for the arts of peace. The vassals of the

^{*} [This saying is related to King David's liberality in building and endowing religious houses in Scotland, as used by his successor James the First, is preserved in the old Scottish Chronicle, and repeated by Sir David Lindsay in his *Scotichie or the Monastrie*, as well as in the *Schepes or the Three Estates*.]

Church, on the other hand, were only liable to be called to arms on general occasions, and at other times were permitted to comparative quiet to pursue their farms and fires.² They of course exhibited superior skill in everything that related to the cultivation of the soil, and were therefore both wealthier and better informed than the military retainers of the monastic church and nobles in their neighbourhood.

The residence of these church vassals was usually in a small village or hamlet, where, for the sake of mutual aid and protection, some thirty or forty families dwelt together. This was called the *Town*, and the land belonging to the various families by whom the Town was inhabited, was called the *Township*. They usually possessed the land in common, though in various proportions, according to their several grants. The part of the Township properly arable, and kept as such continually under the plough, was called *in-field*. Here the use of quantities of manure supplied in some degree the exhaustion of the soil, and the farms varied tolerable oats and barley usually sown on alternate ridges, on which the labour of the whole community was bestowed without distinction, the produce being divided, after harvest, agreeably to their respective interests.

There was, besides, *out-field* land, from which it was thought possible to extract a crop now and then, after which it was abandoned to the "skily influences," until the exhausted powers of vegetation were restored. These out-field spots were selected by any farmer at his own choice, amongst the steep-walls and hills which were always annexed to the Township, to serve as pasturage to the community. The trouble of cultivating these patches of out-field, and the precarious chance that the crop would pay the labour, were considered as giving a right to any farmer, who chose to undertake the adventure, to the produce which might result from it.

There remained the pasturage of extensive moors, where the valleys often afforded good grass, and upon which the whole cattle belonging to the community fed indiscriminately during

² Small parsonages conferred upon monks and their heirs, held for a small quit-rent, in a moderate proportion of the produce. This was a favourite manner, by which the churchmen procured the subsistence of their dependents, and many descendants of such donors, as they are called, are still to be found in possession of their family inheritances in the neighbourhood of the great Monasteries of Scotland.

† Or *hagg*, a kind of moor-hay.

the summer, under the charge of the Town-herd, who regularly drove them out to pasture in the morning, and brought them back at night, without which protection they would have fallen a speedy prey to some of the Rascals in the neighbourhood. These are things to make modern agriculturists hold up their hands and stare; but the same mode of cultivation is not yet entirely in disuse, in some distant parts of North Britain, and may be witnessed in full force and exercise in the Zealand Archipelago.

The habitations of the church-barns were not less primitive than their agriculture. In each village or town were several small towers, having battlements projecting over the side walls, and usually an advanced angle or two with shot-holes for flanking the doorway, which was always defended by a strong door of oak, studded with nails, and often by an exterior grated door of iron. These small post-houses were collectively inhabited by the principal families and their families; but, upon the alarm of approaching danger, the whole inhabitants thronged from their own miserable cottages, which were situated around, to garrison these points of defence. It was then no easy matter for a hostile party to penetrate into the village, for the towers on habitations to the use of bows and the arms, and the towers being generally so placed, that the discharge from one covered that of another, it was impossible to assault any of them individually.

The interior of these houses was usually sufficiently wretched, for it would have been folly to have furnished them in a manner which could excite the envy of their less fortunate neighbours. Yet the families themselves exhibited in their appearance a degree of comfort, independence, and self-sufficiency, which could hardly have been expected. Their fields supplied them with bread and home-brewed ale, their herds and flocks with beef and mutton (the extravagance of killing hawks or stags was never thought of). Each family killed a roast, or fat bullock, in November, which was salted up for winter use, to which the goodwife could, upon great occasions, add a dish of pigeon, or a fat capon—the ill-cultivated garden afforded "leeks and cabbages," and the deer gave salmon to serve as a relish during the season of Lent.

Of fuel they had plenty, for the logs afforded turf; and the remains of the cleared woods continued to give them logs for

burning, as well as timber for the usual domestic purposes. In addition to these comforts the goodman would now and then sally forth, to the greenwood, and knock down a buck of venison with his gun or his cross-bow; and the Father Confessor seldom refused him absolution for the trespass, if duly invited to take his share of the smoking banquet. Some, still lazier, made, either with their own domestics, or by associating themselves with the men-troopers, in the language of chapeaus, "a start and overlap;" and the golden ornaments and silken head-gear worn by the females of one or two families of note, were lavishly taxed by their neighbours to such successful encroachments. This, however, was a more inexcusable crime in the eyes of the Abbot and Community of Saint Mary's, than the borrowing one of the "good king's deer;" and they failed not to discommodate and punish, by every means in their power, offences which were sure to lead to serious retaliation upon the property of the church, and which tended to alter the character of their peaceful manse.

As for the informers possessed by these dependants of the Abbots, they might have been truly said to be better fed than taught, even though their fare had been worse than it was. Still, however, they enjoyed opportunities of knowledge from which others were excluded. The monks were in general well acquainted with their vassals and tenants, and familiar in the families of the better class among them, where they were sure to be received with the respect due to their twofold character of spiritual father and secular landlord. Thus it often happened, when a boy displayed talents and inclination for study, one of the brethren, with a view to his being bred to the church, or out of good-will, in order to pass away his own idle time, if he had no better motive, initiated him into the mysteries of reading and writing, and imparted to him such other knowledge as he himself possessed. And the heads of these allied families, having more time for reflection, and more skill, as well as stronger motives for improving their small properties, bore amongst their neighbours the character of shrewd, intelligent men, who claimed respect as owners of their comparative wealth, even while they were despised for a less wealth and enterprising were than the other Borderers. They lived as much as they well could amongst themselves, avoiding the company of others, and dreading nothing more

thus to be involved in the deadly feud and endless contentions of the mediaeval landholders.

Such is a general picture of these circumstances. During the feud wars in the commencement of Queen Mary's reign, they had suffered dreadfully by the hostile invasion. For the English, now a Protestant people, were as far from sparing the church-lands, that they seized them with more unrelenting severity than even the possession of the laity. But the peace of 1550 had restored some degree of tranquillity to those devastated and harassed regions, and matters began again gradually to settle upon the former footing. The nobles regained their ravaged domains—the *gent* again retook his small fortalice which the enemy had razed—the poor labourer rebuilt his cottage—an easy task, where a few rails, stones, and some pieces of wood from the next copse, furnished all the materials necessary. The cattle, lastly, were driven out of the wastes and thickets in which the remnant of them had been secreted; and the mighty hall moved at the head of his vassals and their followers, to take possession of their wonted pastures. There ensued peace and quiet, the state of the age and nation considered, to the Minority of Saint Mary, and its dependancies, for several tranquil years.

CHAPTER SECOND.

In yon lone vale his early youth was led,
 Not solitary then—the lough-burn
 Of hill & dale often voiced its windings,
 From where the brook joins the majestic river,
 To the wild northern bog, the water's lower,
 Where none but he fast and lonely dwelled.

OLD POET.

We have said, that most of the houses dwelt in the village belonging to their townships. This was not, however, universally the case. A lonely tower, to which the reader must now be introduced, was at least one exception to the general rule.

It was of small dimensions, yet larger than those which occurred in the village, an instance that, in case of assault,

the proprietor would have to rely upon his own unaided strength. Two or three miserable huts, at the foot of the fortalice, held the bondsmen and tenants of the fane: The site was a beautiful green knoll, which started up suddenly in the very throat of a wild and narrow glen, and which, being surrounded, except on one side, by the winding of a small stream, afforded a position of considerable strength.

But the great security of Glendurg, for so the place was called, lay in its secluded, and almost hidden situation. To reach the tower it was necessary to travel three miles up the glen, crossing about twenty times the little stream, which, winding through the narrow valley, encountered at every hundred yards the opposition of a rock or precipitous bank on the one side, which altered its course, and caused it to shoot off in an oblique direction to the other. The hills which rose on each side of this glen are very steep, and are badly over the stream, which is thus imprisoned within their barriers. The sides of the glen are impracticable for horses, and are only to be traversed by means of the sheep-paths which lie along their sides. It would not be readily supposed that a road so long and so difficult could lead to any habitation more important than the summer dwelling of a shepherd.

Yet the glen, though lonely, nearly inaccessible, and sterile, was not then absolutely void of beauty. The turf which covered the small portion of level ground on the sides of the stream, was as close and verdant as if it had occupied the noyties of a hundred gardens once a fortnight; and it was garnished with an embroidery of clover and wild flowers, which the noyties would certainly have destroyed. The little brook, now confined between closer limits, now left at large to choose its course through the narrow valley, danced merrily on from stream to pool, light and untrifled, as that better class of spirits who pass their way through life, yielding to insurmountable obstacles, but as far from being subdued by them as the stiffer who meet by choice with an unconquerable wind, and shape his course so as to be driven back as little as possible.

The mountains, as they would have been called in England, flanked the steep fane, rose abruptly over the little glen, here presenting the grey face of a rock, from which the turf had been peeled by the torrents, and there displaying patches of wood

and vapour, which had escaped the smoke of the cattle and the sheep of the farms, and which, floating upwards up the beds of empty torrents, or occupying the convective spaces of the heath, gave it such beauty and variety to the landscape. Along these wooded woods rose the hill, in barren, but purple majesty; the dark rich hue, particularly in autumn, contrasting beautifully with the thickets of oak and birch, the mountain ash and thorns, the alders and quivering aspens, which clung round and varied the descent, and not less with the darkgreens and vibrant turf, which composed the level part of the nearer glen.

Yet, though thus embellished, the scene could neither be strictly termed sublime nor beautiful, and scarcely even picturesque or striking. But its extreme solitude pressed on the heart; the traveller felt that uncertainty whether he was going, or in what as well a path was to terminate, which, at times, strikes more on the imagination than the grand features of a show scene, when you know the exact distance of the inn where your dinner is booked, and at the moment preparing. There are ideas, however, of a far later age; for at the time we lived of the picturoques, the beautiful, the sublime, and all their intermediate shades, were ideas absolutely unknown to the inhabitants and occasional visitors of Glenelg.

There had, however, attached to the scene feelings fitting the time. Its name, signifying the Red Valley, seems to have been derived, not only from the purple colour of the heath, with which the upper part of the rising heath was profusely clothed, but also from the dark red colour of the rocks, and of the precipitous northern heath, which in that country we called *moors*. Another glen, about the head of Eitrick, has acquired the name from similar circumstances; and there are probably more in Scotland to which it has been given.

As our Glenelg did not abound in mortal residents, superstition, that it might not be absolutely destitute of inhabitants, had peopled its recesses with beings belonging to another world. The savage and capricious Brown Men of the Moors, a being which seems the genuine descendant of the northern demie, was supposed to be seen there frequently, especially after the autumnal equinox, when the fogs were thick, and objects not easily distinguished. The Scottish Satyr, too, a whimsical, irritable, and mischievous tribe, who, though at times capriciously benevolent, were more frequently adverse to mortals,

were also supposed to have formed a residence in a particularly wild scene of the glen, of which the real name was, in allusion to that circumstance, *Orrer nan Orna*, which, in corrupted Celtic, signifies the Hollow of the Fairies. But the neighbours were more cautious in speaking about this place, and avoided giving it a name, from its like common then throughout all the British and Celtic provinces of Scotland, and still retained in many places, that to speak either good or ill of this superstitious race of imaginary beings is to provoke their resentment, and that money and silence is what they chiefly desire from those who may intrude upon their secrets, or discover their haunts.

A mysterious tower was thus attached to the dale, which afforded access from the broad valley of the Tweed, up the little glen we have described, to the fortalice called the Tower of Glendowry. Beyond the knoll where, as we have said, the tower was situated, the hills grew more steep, and narrowed on the slender brook, so as scarce to leave a footpath; and there the glen terminated in a wild waterfall, where a slender stream of water dashed in a precipitous line of foam over two or three prodigious crags, by a wild and extensive moor, frequented only by waterbuck, while, waste, apparently almost uninhabitable, and serving in a great measure to separate the inhabitants of the glen from those who lived in the garrison.

To ruthless and indefatigable men-troopers, indeed, these resources were well known, and sometimes afforded a retreat. They often rode down the glen—called at the tower—asked and received hospitality—but still with a sort of reserve on the part of its more peaceful inhabitants, who mistook them as a party of North-American Indians might be misled by a new European soldier, as much out of fear as hospitality, while the uppermost wish of the hostler is the speedy departure of the strange guests.

This had not always been the current of feeling in the little valley and its tower. Simon Glendowry, its former inhabitant, boasted his connection by blood to that ancient family of Glendowryes, on the western border. He used to assemble at his fireside, in the autumn evenings, the heads of the family to which he belonged, one of whom fell by the side of the brave Earl of Douglas at Otterburne. On these occasions Simon

readily held upon his knee an ancient handkerchief, which had belonged to his mother before any of the family had consented to accept a bell under the peaceful domination of the Monks of Saint Mary's. In modern days Simon might have lived at ease on his own estate, and quietly succeeded against the fate that had doomed him to dwell there, and cut off his access to martial renown. But so many opportunities, say, so many calls there were for him, who in those days spoke long, to make good his words by his actions, that Simon Glendinning was soon under the necessity of mingling with the men of the Hatcherons, as it was called, of Saint Mary's, in that dangerous campaign which was conducted by the lords of Puckle.

The Catholic clergy were deeply interested in that national quarrel, the principal object of which was to prevent the marriage of the infant Queen Mary with the son of the heretical Henry VIII. The Monks had called out their vassals under an experienced leader. Many of themselves had taken arms, and marched in the field, under a banner representing a female, supposed to personify the Scottish Church, kneeling in the attitude of prayer, with the legend, *Afflictis speramus in deliverant*.*

The Scots, however, in all their wars had more craving for good and cautious guidance than for excitation, whether political or enthusiastic. Their handling and unflinching courage uniformly induced them to rush into action without duly weighing either their own situation or that of their enemies, and the inevitable consequence was frequent defeat. With the deliverance of Puckle we have nothing to do, excepting that, among ten thousand men of low and high degree, Simon Glendinning of the Tower of Glendoring led the van, so very disparaging to his death that ancient name from which he claimed his descent.

When the dreadful news, which spread terror and mourning through the whole of Scotland, reached the Tower of Glendoring, the widow of Simon, Elspeth Dryden by her family name, was alone in that desolate habitation, excepting a hand or two, able past martial and agricultural labour, and the helpless widows and families of those who had fallen with their master. The feeling of desolation was universal;—but what availed it! The monks, their peasants and protectors, were driven from their Abbey by the English forces, who now overran the country, and

* *Præcepta sunt illis afflicti sperare.*

coloured at least an appearance of submission on the part of the inhabitants. The Protestant Regiment formed a strong camp among the ruins of the ancient Castle of Rouleugh, and compelled the neighbouring country to come in, pay tribute, and take hostages from him, as the prices then went. Indeed, there was no power of resistance remaining, and the fire-brands whose high spirit defied even the appearance of surrender could only retreat into the wildest fastnesses of the country, leaving their houses and property to the wrath of the English, who detached parties everywhere to distress, by military coercion, those whose chiefs had not made their submission. The Abbot and his community having retreated beyond the Fens, their lands were severely damaged, as their settlements were held peculiarly liable to the alliance with England.

Amongst the troops detached on this service was a small party commanded by Stewardth Bolton, a captain in the English army, and full of the blust and unpretending gallantry and generosity which has so often distinguished that nation. Resistance was in vain. Elspeth Dryden, when she descried a dozen of horsemen, throwing their way up the glen, with a man at their head, whose scarlet cloak, bright armour, and dancing plume, proclaimed him a leader, saw no better protection for herself than to assume from the iron grates, covered with a long mourning veil, and holding one of her two sons in each hand, to meet the Englishman—state her deserted condition—place the little tower at his command—and beg for his mercy. She stated in a few brief words her situation, and added, "I submit, because I have no means of resistance."

"And I do not ask your submission, mistress, for the same reason," replied the Englishman. "To be satisfied of your peaceful intentions is all I ask; and from what you tell me there is no reason to doubt them."

"At least, sir," said Elspeth Dryden, "take share of what our stores and our gardens afford. Your horses are tired—your folk want refreshment."

"Not a whit—not a whit," answered the honest Englishman; "it shall never be said we disturbed by oursed the widow of a brave soldier while she was mourning for her husband.—Comrades, here about—Yet stay," he added, checking his war-horse, "my parties are out in every direction; they must have some token that your family are under my assurance of safety.—Here,

my little fellow," said he, speaking to the eldest boy, who might be about nine or ten years old, "hand me thy bonnet."

The child reddened, looked sulky, and hesitated, while the mother, with many a *peu* and *non* *peu*, and such nervous shillings as tender mothers give to spoiled children, at length succeeded in snatching the bonnet from him, and handing it to the English lady.

Stewart Bolton took his embroidered red cross from his breast-pocket, and putting it into the loop of the boy's bonnet, said to the mistress (for the title of lady was not given to dames of her degree), "By this token, which all my people will respect, you will be freed from any imperiourity on the part of our foreigners." He placed it on the boy's head; but it was no sooner done, than the little fellow, his veins swelling, and his eyes shooting fire through tears, snatched the bonnet from his head, and, ere his mother could interfere, skinned it into the back. The other boy ran instantly to fish it out again, threw it back to his brother, first taking out the cross, which, with great veneration, he kissed and put into his bosom. The Englishman was half-diverted, half-surprised with the scene.

"What mean ye by throwing away Saint George's red cross?" said he to the elder boy, in a tone between jest and earnest.

"Because Saint George is a southern saint," said the child, sulkily.

"Good!" said Stewart Bolton.—"And what did you mean by taking it out of the back again, my little fellow?" he demanded of the younger.

"Because the priest says it is the common sign of salvation to all good Christians."

"Why, good again?" said the bonnet soldier. "I protest unto you, mistress, I envy you these boys. Are they both yours?"

Stewart Bolton had reason to put the question, for Edmund Goodthing, the elder of the two, had hair as dark as the raven's plume, black eyes, large, bold and sparkling, that glinted under eyebrows of the same complexion; a skin deep and browned, though it could not be termed swarthy, and an air of activity, freedom, and determination, far beyond his age. On the other hand, Edward, the younger brother, was light-

haired, blue-eyed, and of fairer complexion, in countenance rather pale, and not exhibiting that ruddy hue which colours the sanguine cheek of robust health. Yet the boy had nothing sickly or ill-conditioned in his look, but was, on the contrary, a fair and handsome child, with a smiling face, and mild, yet cheerful eye.

The mother glanced a proud motherly glance, first at the son, and then at the other, ere she answered the Englishman, "Surely, sir, they are both my children."

"And by the same father, mistress?" said Staverth; but, seeing a blush of displeasure arise on her brow, he instantly added, "Nay, I mean no offence; I would have asked the same question at any of my gospies in merry Lincoln.—Well, dame, you have two fair boys; I would I could borrow one, for Dame Bolton and I two children in our old hall.—Come, little fellows, which of you will go with me?"

The trembling mother, half-fearing as he spoke, drew the children towards her, one with either hand, while they both answered the stranger. "I will not go with you," said Herbert, boldly, "for you are a false-hearted Southern; and the Southerne killed my father, and I will war on you to the death, when I can draw my father's sword."

"God-a-merry, my little levin-bolt," said Staverth, "the goodly custom of deadly feud will never go down in thy day, I presume.—And you, my fine white-head, will you not go with me, to ride a milk-horse?"

"Nay," said Edward, demurely, "for you are a knave."

"Why, God-a-merry still?" said Staverth Bolton. "Well, dame, I see I shall find no reward for my troop from you, and yet I do sorry you these two little chabby knaves." He sighted a moment, as was visible, in spite of gapes and corsets, and then added, "And yet, my dame and I would but quarrel which of the heavens we should like best; for I should wish for the black-spod roque—and also, I wanted me, for that blue-eyed, black-headed scolding. Nathelous, we must break our solitary vedlock, and wish joy to those that are more fortunate. Serpant Bolton, do thou remain here till needed—protect this family, as under assurance—do them as wrong and suffer no wrong to be done to them, as thou wilt answer it.—Dame, Bolton is a married man, old and steady, feed him on what you will, but give him not over much liquor."

Dame Glenfinning again offered refreshments, but with a stern voice, and an obvious desire her invitation should not be accepted. The fact was, that, supposing her hope as genuine in the eyes of the Englishman as in her own (the most solitary of parental errors), she was half afraid that the admiration he expressed of them in his blent manner might end as his actually carrying off one or other of the little darlings whom he appeared to covet so much. She kept hold of their hands, therefore, as if her feeble strength could have been of service, had any violence been intended, and now, with joy she could not disguise, the little party of home countermarch, in order to descend the glen. Her feelings did not escape Stewart Bolton: "I forgive you, dame," he said, "for being suspicious that an English falcon was hovering over your Scottish warblers. But fear not—those who have sweet children have sweet cares; nor does a wee man covet those of another household. Adieu, dame; when the black-eyed rogue is able to drive a ferry from England, teach him to spare women and children, for the sake of Stewart Bolton."

"God be with you, gallant Southern!" said Elspeth Glenfinning, but not till he was out of hearing, spurring on his good horse to regain the head of his party, whose plume and armour were now glancing and gradually disappearing in the distance, as they wound down the glen.

"Mother," said the elder boy, "I will not say amen to a prayer for a Southern."

"Mother," said the younger, more reverentially, "is it right to pray for a heathen?"

"The God to whom I pray only knows," answered poor Elspeth; "but these two words, Southern and heathen, have already cost Scotland ten thousand of her best and bravest, and me a husband, and you a father; and, whether blessing or blessing, I never wish to hear them more.—Follow me to the Place, ma," she said to Stewart, "and such as we have to offer you shall be at your disposal."

CHAPTER THIRD.

*They lighted fires on Tweed water,
And blew their smoke into the
And fired the March and Teviotdale,
All in an evening hour.*

ALAN MARSHALL.

THE report soon spread through the parishes of Saint Mary's and its vicinity, that the Mistress of Glendunag had received assurance from the English Captain, and that her cattle were not to be driven off, or her corn burned. Among others who heard this report, it reached the ears of a lady, who, once much higher in rank than Elizabeth Glendunag, was now by the same calamity reduced to even greater misfortune.

She was the widow of a brave soldier, Walter Arnesel, descended of a very ancient Border family, who once possessed immense estates in Scotland. These had long since passed from them into other hands, but they still enjoyed an ancient barony of considerable extent, not very far from the parish of Saint Mary's, and lying upon the same side of the river with the narrow vale of Glendunag, at the head of which was the little tower of the Glendunags. Here they had lived, bearing a respectable rank amongst the gentry of their province, though neither wealthy nor powerful. Their general regard had been much augmented by the skill, courage, and enterprise which had been displayed by Walter Arnesel, the last Baron.

When Scotland began to recover from the dreadful shock she had sustained after the battle of Pinkie-Clough,* Arnesel was one of the first who, assembling a small force, set an example in those bloody andexpiring skirmishes, which showed that a nation, though conquered and overrun by invaders, may yet wage against them such a war of detail as shall in the end become fatal to the foreigners. In one of these, however, Walter Arnesel fell, and the news which came to the house of his father was followed by the distracting intelligence, that a party

* [This engagement took place in 1547 on a field about seven miles east of Edinburgh. The Scotch forces were defeated with much loss by the English under the Earl Hertford, afterwards Duke of Somerset.]

of Taghliarum was coming to plunder the mansion and beds of his widow, in order, by this act of terror, to prevent others from following the example of the deceased.

The unfortunate lady had no better refuge than the miserable cottage of a shepherd among the hills, to which she was hastily removed, scarce conscious where or for what purpose her terrified attendants were removing her and her infant daughter from her own home. Here she was tended with all the diligent service of instant times by the shepherd's wife, Tilda Tuflet, who in better days had been her own housewren. For a time the lady was unconscious of her misery; but when the first stunning effect of grief was as far passed away that she could form an estimate of her own situation, the widow of Armand had cause to wry the lip of her husband in his dark and silent state. The domestics who had guided her to her place of refuge, were presently obliged to depart for their own safety, or to seek for necessary subsistence; and the shepherd and his wife, whose poor cottage she shared, were soon after deprived of the means of affording their late mistress even that coarse sustenance which they had gladly shared with her. Some of the English surgeons had discovered and driven off the few sheep which had escaped the first ravages of their ravens. Two were shared the fate of the remnant of their stock; they had afforded the family almost their sole support, and now famine appeared to stare them in the face.

"We are broken and beggared now, out and out," said old Martin the shepherd—and he wrung his hands in the bitterness of agony, "the thieves, the harrying thieves! not a cluck left of the half breed!"

"And to see poor Griary and Crumble," said his wife, "turning back their necks to the byre, and venting while the stout hearted villains were dragging them on w' their lasses!"

"There were but four of them," said Martin, "and I have seen the day forty and not have ventured this length. But our strength and manhood is gone with our poor master."

"For the sake of the holy soul, whistle, man," said the galewife, "our laddy is half gone already, as ye may see by that lightening of the so'ld—a wood made and she's dead out-right."

"I could almost wish," said Martin, "we were a' gone, for what to do poorer my poor wif. I can bide for myself, or you,

"This—we can make a feed—work or want—we can do both, but she can do neither."

They surveyed their situation thus openly before the lady, surprised by the paleness of her look, her quivering lip, and dead-set eyes, that she neither heard nor understood what they were saying.

"There is a way," said the shepherd, "but I know if she could bring her heart to it—there's Susan Glendinning's widow of the glen yonder, has had assurance from the Southern house, and was willing to steer them for one cause or other. Now, if the lady could bow her mind to take quarters with Elizabeth Glendinning till better days cast up, no doubt it wud be doing an honour to the like of her, but"—

"An honour," answered Tibb, "ay, by my word, an honour as wud be pride to her kin many a long year after her bones were in the mould. Oh! gentlemen, to hear ye even the Lady of Arrol to seeking quarters w' a Kirk-maid's widow!"

"Loud should I be to wish her to it," said Martin; "but what may we do?—to stay here is sure starvation, and where to go, I'm sure I ken nae mair than any top I ever backed."

"Speak na more of it," said the widow of Arrol, suddenly joining in the conversation, "I will go to the town.—Dame Knapth is of good folk, a widow, and the mother of orphan—she will give us house-room until something be thought upon. These evil shewens make the low look better than no field."

"See there, see there," said Martin, "you see the lady has taken our sense."

"And natural it is," said Tibb, "seeing that she is court-bred, and can lay silk broodery, forty white-socks and shall-work."

"Do you not think," said the lady to Martin, still clasping her child to her bosom, and making it clear from what motives she desired the refuge, "that Dame Glendinning will make us welcome?"

"Diffidly welcome, diffidly welcome, my lady," answered Martin cheerily, "and we shall deserve a welcome at her hand. Men are scarce now, my lady, with these wars; and give me a thought of time to it, I can do as good a day's dring as ever I did in my life, and Tibb can work even with any living woman."

"And muckle mair could I do," said Tibb, "were it any

friendly house; but there will be neither pasture to mow, nor garden to look up, in Elizabeth Glendinning's."

"Waikik wi' your pride, woman," said the shepherd; "enough ye can do, both outside and inside, an ye set your mind to it; and hard it is as if we two could work for three folk's meat, for my dairy was laddy there. Come awa, come awa, this time is staying here longer; we have five Scots miles ower moun and moor, and that is nae easy walk for a laddy bairn and brud."

Household stuff there was little or none to remove or care for; an old pony which had escaped the plunderers, owing partly to its pitiful appearance, partly from the reluctance which it showed to be caught by strangers, was employed to carry the few blankets and other trifles which they possessed. When Shagreen came to his master's well-known whistle, he was surprised to find the poor thing had been wounded, though slightly, by an arrow, which one of the thieves had shot off in anger after he had long chased it in vain.

"Ay, Shagreen," said the old man, as he applied something to the wound, "moot ye rue the lang-bow as well as all of us!"

"What comes in Scotland rue it not?" said the Lady of Avenel.

"Ay, ay, naeher," said Martin, "God keep the kindly Scot from the cloth-yard shaft, and he will keep himself from the handy stroke. But let us go our way; the touch that is left I can ruse back for. There is nae one to stir it but the good neighbours, and they!"—

"For the love of God, goodness," said his wife, in a reproaching tone, "hand your peace! Think what ye're saying, and we hae our muckle wild land to go over before we rin to the glirk gate."

The husband nodded acquiescence; for it was deemed highly impudent to speak of the thieves, either by their title of good neighbours or by any other, especially when about to pass the place which they were supposed to haunt.*

They set forward on their pilgrimages on the last day of October. "This is thy birthday, my sweet Mary," said the mother, as a sting of bitter reflection crossed her mind. "Oh, who could have believed that the head, which, a few years since, was washed amongst so many rejoicing friends, may perhaps this night seek a cover in vain!"

* *How D. The Nation*

The wild family then set forward,—Mary Arnold, a lovely girl between five and six years old, riding gipsy fashion upon Shagran, between two bundles of bedding; the Lady of Arnold walking by the animal's side; Tibb leading the bridle, and old Martin walking a little before, looking anxiously around him to explore the way.

Martin's task as guide, after two or three miles' walking, became more difficult than he himself had expected, or than he was willing to over. It happened that the extensive range of pasturage, with which he was conversant, lay to the west, and to get into the little valley of Glandberg he had to proceed easterly. In the wilder districts of Scotland, the passage from one vale to another, otherwise than by descending that which you leave, and ascending the other, is often very difficult.—Mounds and hollows, mosses, and rocks intervene, and all these local impediments which throw a traveller out of his course. So that Martin, however sure of his general direction, became cautious, and at length was forced reluctantly to admit, that he had missed the direct road to Glandberg, though he insisted they must be very near it. "If we can but win across this wide bog," he said, "I shall warrant ye are on the top of the tower."

But to get across the bog was a point of no small difficulty. The further they ventured into it, though proceeding with all the caution which Martin's experience recommended, the more unsteady the ground became, until after they had passed some places of great pond, their best argument for going forward came to be, that they had to encounter equal danger in returning.

The Lady of Arnold had been tenderly nurtured, but what will not a woman endure when her child is in danger? Complaining less of the dangers of the road than her attendants, who had been taught to shrink from their infancy, she kept herself close by the side of the pony, watching its every foot-step, and ready, if it should flounder in the morass, to snatch her little Mary from its back. At length they came to a place where the girths greatly hesitated, for all around him were broken lumps of heath, divided from each other by deep sloughs of black insidious mire. After great consideration, Martin, selecting what he thought the safest path, began himself to lead forward Shagran, in order to afford greater security to the child,

But Shagran started, laid his own back, stretched his two feet forward, and drew his hind feet under him, so as to adopt the best possible posture for obstinate resistance, and refused to move one inch in the direction indicated. Old Martin, much puzzled, now hesitated whether to exert his absolute authority, or to defer to the obstinacious obduracy of Shagran, and was not greatly comforted by his wife's observations, who, seeing Shagran stare with his eyes, darted his nostrils, and tremble with terror, hinted that "he surely saw more than they could see."

In that dilemma, the child suddenly exclaimed—"Jenny lolly signs to us to come you gate." They all looked in the direction where the child pointed, but saw nothing, save a wreath of rising mist, which slowly might form into a human figure; but which afforded to Martin only the sorrowful conviction, that the danger of their situation was about to be increased by a heavy fog. He once more essayed to lead forward Shagran; but the animal was inflexible in its determination not to move in the direction Martin recommended. "Take your own way for it, then," said Martin, "and let us see what you can do for us."

Shagran, abandoned to the direction of his own free-will, set off boldly in the direction the child had pointed. There was nothing wonderful in this, nor in its bringing them, safe to the other side of the dangerous moor; for the instinct of those animals in traversing bogs is one of the most curious parts of their nature, and is a fact generally established. But it was remarkable, that the child more than once cautioned the beautiful lady and her guide, and that Shagran seemed to be in the secret, always moving in the same direction which she indicated. The Lady of Arundel took little notice at the time, her mind being probably occupied by the instant danger; but her attendants exchanged expressive looks with each other more than once.

"Ah-Hallow Ewe!" said Tibb, in a whisper to Martin.

"For the mercy of Our Lady, not a word of that now!" said Martin in reply. "Tell your lands, woman, if you cannot be silent."

When they got once more on firm ground, Martin recognised certain landmarks, or signs, on the tops of the neighbouring hills, by which he was enabled to guide his course, and ere long they arrived at the Tower of Glendurg.

It was at the sight of this little fortitude that the misery of her lot pressed hard on the poor Lady of Arnaud. When by any accident they had met at church, market, or other place of public resort, she remembered the distant and respectful air with which the wife of the wealthy baron was addressed by the spouse of the humble peasant. And now, so much was her pride humbled, that she was to ask to share the precarious safety of the same fear's widow, and her pittance of food, which might perhaps be yet more precarious. Martin probably guessed what was passing in her mind, for he looked at her with a wistful glance, as if to suppress any charge of coquetry; and, answering to her looks, rather than his words, she said, while the sparkle of subdued pride once more glowed from her eye, "If it were for myself alone, I could but do—but for this infant—the last pledge of Arnaud!"—

"True, my lady," said Martin, hastily; and, as if to prevent the possibility of her retracting, he added, "I will stop on and see Dame Elzeth—I lend her husband wool, and have bought and sold with him, for so great a man as he was."

Martin's tale was soon told, and met all acceptance from her compassion in misfortune. The Lady of Arnaud had been weak and courteous in her prosperity; in adversity, therefore, she met with the greatest sympathy. Besides, there was a point of pride in sheltering and supporting a woman of such superior birth and rank; and, not to do Elzeth Christening injustice, she felt sympathy for one whose fate resembled her own in so many points, yet was so much more severe. Every species of hospitality was gladly and respectfully extended to the distressed travellers, and they were kindly requested to stay as long at Glanburg as their circumstances rendered necessary, or their inclination prompted.

CHAPTER FOURTH.

He's he I heard by thee d'clared,
 Is that three-hallow'd eve, d'clared,
 Where goblins haunt, from five, or ten,
 Or nine, or three, the walls of men.
Quaker's Ode to Free.

As the country became more settled, the Lady of Arundel would have willingly returned to her husband's mansion. But that was no longer in her power. It was a reign of minority, when the strongest had the best right, and when acts of usurpation were frequent amongst those who had much power and little conscience.

Julian Arundel, the younger brother of the deceased Walter, was a person of this description. He hesitated not to seize upon his brother's house and lands, as soon as the retreat of the English permitted him. At first, he occupied the property in the name of his niece; but when the lady proposed to return with her child to the mansion of its father, he gave her to understand, that Arundel, being a male heir, descended to the brother, instead of the daughter, of the last possessor. The ancient philosopher declined a dispute with the emperor who commanded twenty legions, and the widow of Walter Arundel was in no condition to maintain a contest with the leader of twenty men-at-arms. Julian was also a man of service, who could back a friend in case of need, and was sure, therefore, to find protection among the ruling powers. In short, however clear the little Mary's right to the possessions of her father, her mother saw the necessity of giving way, at least for the time, to the usurpation of her uncle.

His passions and ambitions were so far attended with advantage, that Julian, for very shame's sake, could no longer suffer her to be absolutely dependent on the charity of Elizabeth Glendinning. A drove of cattle and a bull (which were probably seized by some English farmer) were taken to the pasture of Glendinning; presents of raiment and household stuff were sent liberally, and some little money, though with a more sparing hand: for those in the situation of Julian Arundel could

came more ready by the goods, than the representing medium of value, and made their payments chiefly in kind.

In the meantime, the widows of Walter Avenel and Simon Glendinning had become habituated to each other's society, and were unwilling to part. The lady could hope no more secret and secure residence than in the Tower of Glendinning, and she was now in a condition to support her share of the normal housekeeping. Elspeth, on the other hand, felt pride, as well as pleasure, in the society of a guest of such distinction, and was at all times willing to pay much greater deference than the Lady of Walter Avenel could be prevailed on to accept.

Martin and his wife diligently served the united family in their several vocations, and yielded obedience to both mistresses, though always considering themselves as the especial servants of the Lady of Avenel. This distinction sometimes constituted a slight degree of difference between Susan Elspeth and Tilda; the former being jealous of her own consequences, and the latter apt to lay too much stress upon the rank and family of her mistress. But both were alike desirous to reward such petty squabbles from the lady, her husband never yielding to her old domestic in respect for her power. Neither did the difference exist in such a degree as to interrupt the general harmony of the family, for the one quickly gave way as she saw the other become worn; and Tilda, though she often gave the first provocation, had generally the sense to be the first in relinquishing the argument.

The world which lay beyond was gradually forgotten by the inhabitants of this sequestered place, and when she attended mass at the Monastery Church upon some high holiday, Alice of Avenel almost forgot that she once held an equal rank with the proud wives of the neighbouring barons and nobles who on such occasions crowded to the sanctuary. The recollection gave her little pain. She loved her husband for himself, and in his inevitable loss all lower subjects of regret had ceased to interest her. At times, indeed, she thought of claiming the protection of the Queen Regent (Mary of France) for her little orphan, but the fear of Julian Avenel always came between. She was sensible that he would have neither scruple nor difficulty in sparing away the child (if he did not proceed further), should he once consider his existence as formidable to his interest. Besides he led a wild and unsettled life, reling-

ling in all trade and shays, wherever there was a spear to be broken ; he refused no purpose of marrying, and the time which he continually was having might at length remove him from his married inheritance. Alice of Arundel, therefore, judged it wise to check all ambitious thoughts for the present, and remain quiet in the gate, but peaceable retreat to which Providence had conducted her.

It was upon an All-Hallow's Eve, when the family had settled together for the space of three years, that the domestic circle was assembled round the blazing turf-fire, in the old narrow hall of the Tower of Ghastburg. The idea of the master or mistress of the mansion looking or living apart from their domestics, was at this period never entertained. The highest end of the board, the most commodious settle by the fire,—these were the only marks of distinction ; and the servants mingled, with deference indeed, but unreserved and with freedom, in whatever conversation was going forward. But the two or three domestics, kept merely for agricultural purposes, had retired to their own cottages without, and with them a couple of wenches, usually employed within doors, the daughters of one of the kins.

After their departure, Martin locked, first, the iron gate, and, secondly, the inner door of the tower, when the domestic circle was thus arranged. Dame Elspeth was pelling the thread from her distaff ; Tibb watched the progress of scolding the whey, which hung in a large pot upon the roost, a chain terminated by a hook, which was suspended in the chimney to serve the purpose of the modern crane. Martin, while busied in repairing some of the household articles (for every man in those days was his own carpenter and smith, as well as his own taylor and shoemaker), kept from time to time a watchful eye upon the three children.

They were allowed, however, to exercise their juvenile restlessness by running up and down the hall, behind the seats of the older members of the family, with the privilege of occasionally making excursions into one or two small apartments which opened from it, and gave excellent opportunity to play at hide-and-seek. This night, however, the children seemed not disposed to avail themselves of their privilege of visiting these dark regions, but preferred carrying on their gambols in the vicinity of the light.

In the meanwhile, Alice of Arundel, sitting close to an iron mantelpiece, which supported a wheezy old clock of domestic manufacture, read small detached passages from a thick clasped volume, which she preserved with the greatest care. The art of reading the lady had acquired by her residence in a nursery during her youth, but she seldom, of late years, put it to any other use than perusing this little volume, which formed her whole library. The family listened to the passages which she selected, as to some good thing which there was a merit in hearing with respect, whether it was fully understood or no. To her daughter, Alice of Arundel had determined to impart their mystery more fully, but the knowledge was at that period attended with personal danger, and was not ready to be trusted to a child.

The noise of the rumping children interrupted, from time to time, the voice of the lady, and drew on the noisy spirits the rebuke of Elsie.

"Could they not go further a-field, if they believed to make such a din, and disturb the lady's good words?" And this command was backed with the threat of sending the whole party to bed, if it was not attended to punctually. Acting under the injunction, the children first played at a greater distance from the party, and more quietly, and then began to stray into the adjacent apartments, as they became impatient of the restraint to which they were subjected. But, all at once, the two boys came open-mouthed into the hall, to tell that there was an armed man in the garden.

"It must be Christo of Climbell," said Maria, rising; "what you have brought him here at this time?"

"Or how came he in?" said Elsie.

"Alas! what can he seek?" said the Lady of Arundel, to whom this man, a retainer of her husband's brother, and who sometimes executed his commissions at Climbell, was an object of secret apprehension and suspicion. "Quodcumque Haven!" she added, rising up, "where is my child?" All rushed to the spouse, Halbert Climbelling fastening himself with a rusty sword, and the younger sitting upon the lady's back. They hastened to the spouse, and were assured of a part of their society by meeting Mary at the door of the apartment. She did not seem in the slightest degree alarmed, or disturbed. They rushed into the spouse (a sort of interior apartment in

which the family ate their viands in the summer season), but there was no one there.

"Where is Christine of Cheshill?" asked Martin.

"I do not know," said little Mary; "I never saw him."

"And what made you, ye wretched loons," said Dame Elspeth to her two boys, "come you gate into the ha', reeking like hellings, to frighten the lady, and her far fine strong?" The boys looked at each other in silence and confusion, and their mother proceeded with her lecture. "Could ye find one night for dahn but Hallowe'en, and was there but when the lady was reeking to us about the lady's delate? May n'er be in my fingers, if I dinna see ye both for it!" The eldest boy bent his eyes on the ground, the younger began to weep, but neither spoke; and the mother would have proceeded to accusations, but for the interposition of the little maiden.

"Dame Elspeth, it was my fault—I did say to them, that I saw a man in the spence."

"And what made you do so, child," said her mother, "to startle us all thus?"

"Because," said Mary, lowering her voice, "I could not help it."

"Not help it, Mary!—you cautioned all this life gine, and you could not help it? Now mean you by that, maiden?"

"There really was an armed man in this spence," said Mary; "and because I was surprised to see him, I cried out to Halbert and Edward!"

"She has told it her-self," said Halbert Glenlaming, "or it had never been told by us."

"Nor by me neither," said Edward, anxiously.

"Mistress Mary," said Elspeth, "you never told us anything before that was not true; tell us if this was a Hallowe'en mischief, and make an end of it." The lady of Arundel looked as if she would have interposed, but knew not how; and Elspeth, who was too eagerly curious to regard any distant hint, persevered in her inquiries. "Was it Christine of the Cheshill?—I would not for a mark that he were about the house, and a lady so far where?"

"It was not Christine," said Mary; "it was—it was a gentleman—a gentleman with a bright countenance, like what I have seen happyes, when we dwell at Arundel!"

"What like was he?" continued Tibb, who now took share in the investigation.

"Black-haired, black-eyed, with a peaked black beard," said the child, "and many a bill of peering round his neck, and hanging down his breast over his breastplate; and he had a beautiful hawk, with silver bells, standing on his left hand, with a crimson silk hood upon his head"——

"Ask her no more questions, for the love of God," said the serious mental to Elgeth, "but look to my lady!" But the Lady of Arundel, taking Mary in her hand, turned hastily away, and, walking into the hall, gave them no opportunity of remarking in what manner she received the child's communication, which she thus cut short. What Tibb thought of it appeared from her crossing herself repeatedly, and whispering into Elgeth's ear, "Saint Mary preserve us!—the house has seen her father!"

When they reached the hall, they found the lady holding her daughter on her knee, and kissing her repeatedly. When they entered, she again arose, as if to share observation, and retired to the little apartment where her child and she occupied the same bed.

The boys were also sent to their cabin, and as was remarked by the hall fire men, the faithful Tibb and Dame Elgeth, excellent persons both, and as thorough gossips as ever wagged a tongue.

It was but natural that they should instantly resume the subject of the supernatural appearance, for such they deemed it, which had this night alarmed the family.

"I could have wished it had been the devil himself—he good to and preserve us!—rather than *Christie o' the Churchill*," said the mistress of the mansion, "for the word runs wild in the country, that he is one of the wisest *masterful* thieves ever lay on board."

"Hark-coot, Dame Elgeth," said Tibb, "dare ye anything from *Christie*, to be keep their sin holes close. You kirk-dik make sin a fether's about men stuffing a wee bit for their living! Our kirk-birds would ride with five men at their back, if a' the light-headed lads were out o' gait."

"Better they ride wi' none than before the country-side the gale they do," said Dame Elgeth.

"But what is to be said back the *Scotchmen*, then," said Tibb,

"If ye take away the lanes and broadworks! I trow we wold wien coulden do that wif rock and wheel, and as little the monks wif bell and book."

"And we woul as the lanes and broadworks has kept them back, I trow!—I was near beholiden to se Scotland, and that was Stewart's Bolton, then to a' the border-riders tair was Saint Andrew's cross—I reckon their sleeping back and forward, and lifting honest men's gear, has been a main cause of a' the breach between us and England, and I am awre that cost me a kind goodness. They spake about the wedding of the Prince and our Queen, but it's as like to be the driving of the Chamber-laid filth's stinking that brought them down on us like dragons." Tibb woul not have failed in other circumstances to answer what she thought reflections disparaging to her country folk; but she recollected that Dame Elspeth was mistress of the family, curbed her own restless patriotism, and hastened to change the subject.

"And is it not strange," she said, "that the heiress of Arncald should have seen her father this blessed night?"

"And ye think it was her father, then?" said Elspeth Glendinning.

"What else can I think?" said Tibb.

"It may have been something wear in his likeness," said Dame Glendinning.

"I ken nothing about that," said Tibb,—"but his likeness it was, that I will be sworn to, just as he used to ride out a-hawking; for having business in the country, he seldom laid off the broadsword, and for my part," added Tibb, "I doun think a man looks like a man unless he has steel on his breast, and by his side too."

"I have an skill of your harness on breast or side either," said Dame Glendinning; "but I ken there is little lack in Hollow's an sights, for I have had me myself."

"Indeed, Dame Elspeth?" said old Tibb, signing her steel close to the huge elbow-chair occupied by her friend, "I should like to hear about that."

"Ye mean ken, then, Tibb," said Dame Glendinning, "that when I was a boushie of sixteen or twenty, it werra my fault if I werra at a' the merry-makings tane about."

"That was very natural," said Tibb; "but ye has altered since that, or ye werra hard on how gallants was lightly."

"I have had that word when men or any one," said the matron. "Aye, Tibb, a lass like me woud be look woses, for I wouda ane if I feared that the wiles wad look after me."

"How should that be," said Tibb, "and you are a wad married woman to this day?"

"Ye, ye, murther," said the matron of Glenelg, hitching her seat of honour, in her turn, a little nearer to the cultivated one which Tibb was seated; "wed-favored is past my time of day; but I might pass them, for I wouda ane to-day but what I had a bit land at my breast-bone. My father was purser of Glenelg."

"Ye has tell'd me that before," said Tibb; "but what the Halloween?"

"Aye, aye, I had made joss then ane, but I favored none of them; and ane, at Halloween, Father Nicks the collar— he was collarer before this father, Father Glenelg, that now is—was cooking his hods and drinking his brown beer with us, and we wiles as might be, and they would have me try a crop to him who sold wed me; and the monk said there was an ill in it, and if there was, he would sell me for it. And who but I into the barn to wheen my three weights o' nothing—aye, and my wile wagers me for fear of wrong-doing and wrong-suffering both; but I had aye a bauld spirit. I had not wheened the last weight down yet, and the monk was shivering bright upon the floor, when he stalked the presence of my dear Father Glenelgman, that is now happy. I never saw him plainer in my life than I did that moment; he held up an arrow as he passed me, and I woud've aye of fright. Muckle wack then was to bring me to myself again, and aye they tried to make me believe it was a trick of Father Nicks and Simon between them, and that the arrow was to signify Cupid's shaft, as the Father called it; and many a time Simon wad thwap it to me after I was married—good man, he liked not it should be said that he was seen out of the body!—But mark the end of it, Tibb; we were married, and the gray-goose wing was the death of him after it!"

"As it has been of ever many brave men," said Tibb; "I wish these wiles ane a bird or a goose, in the wide world, faly the deeking that we has at the burn-side."

"But tell me, Tibb," said Dame Glenelgman, "what does your lady aye be reading out o' that thick black book w' the

silver slaps!—there are ever many gale words in it to come from my lady but a priest—do it were about Robin Hood, or some o' David Lindsay's ballads, and wad her better what to say to it. I can no misdeednaik your mistress ane way, but I wad like it to see a decent house haunted w' ghosts and ghouls."

"Ye hae nae reason to doubt my lady, or anything she says or does, Dame Glendinning," said the faithful Tibb, something offended; "and touching the lair, it's wad head she was born on Hallowe'en, was nine years gone, and they that are born on Hallowe'en wiles no mair than ither folk."

"And that wad be the cause, then, that the lair dines such madde dees about what it saw?—if it had been my Maister himself, forty Edward, who is o' softer nature, he wad hae yamoured the bad right o' a contrary. But it's like Mistress Mary has six rights mair natural to her."

"That may wad be," said Tibb; "for on Hallowe'en she was born, as I tell ye, and our wad parish priest wad thin her had the right over, and all-Hallow day began. But for o' that, the worst lair is just like ither lairs, as ye may see yourself, and except this blessed night, and ages before when we were in that warty bog on the road here, I trowe that it saw mair than ither folk."

"But what saw she in the bog, then," said Dame Glendinning, "body wae-wae and heather flowers?"

"The wae are something like a white lady that wisied on the gate," said Tibb; "when we were like to hae perished in the moss-bags—certain it was that Shagreen misted, and I ken Martin thinks he saw something."

"And what might the white lady be?" said Elspeth; "have ye any game o' that?"

"It's wad head that, Dame Elspeth," said Tibb; "if ye had lived under gyt folk as I hae done, ye wadna be to seek in that matter."

"I hae aye kept my ain ha' house aboon my head," said Elspeth, not without emphasis, "and if I havana lived w' gyt folk, gyt folk hae lived w' me."

"Wad, wad, dame," said Tibb, "your garden's grayed, there was nae offense meant. But ye mair see the good without furdher comes to just served w' the ordinary guests (speaks to them o' like Saint Anthony, Saint Cuthbert, and the like, that

come and gang at every dinner's bidding, but they has a sort of mawkish or ungainly, or what not, to themselves; and as for the White Maiden of Arund, she is laid over the hall country. And she is apt soon to grower and wall before any o' that sturdy class, as was well hand by twenty sick before the death of Walter Arund, holy be his rest!"

"If she can do the work than that," said Elspeth, somewhat scornfully, "they needna make many runs to her, I trow. Can she make one better feed for them than that, and has nothing better to do them work on them?"

"Many brave services can the White Maiden do for them to the best of that, and has done in the old histories," said Tibb, "but I mind o' nothing in my day, except it was her that she burn now in the bog."

"Arund, arund, Tibb," said Dame Glenkinsting, rising and lighting the two lamps, "these are great privileges of your grand folk. But Our Lady and Saint Paul are good enough saints for me, and I've warrant them never leave me in a bog that they can help me out o', seeing I send four waxen candles to their chapels every Candlemas; and if they are not soon to wup at my death, I've warrant them smelt at my joyful rising again, while Heaven send to all of us, Amen."

"Amen," answered Tibb, devoutly; "and now it's time I should lay up the wee bit gathering turf, as the fire is over low."

Bodily she set herself to perform this duty. The relief of Simon Glenkinsting did not pause a moment to cast a hostile and malicious glance all around the hall, to see that nothing was out of its proper place; then, wishing Tibb good-night, she retired to repose.

"The devil in the making," said Tibb to herself; "because she was the wife of a cock-bird, she thinks herself greater, I trow, than the housewren of a lady of that ilk!" Having given vent to her suppressed spleen in this little ejaculation, Tibb also betook herself to slumber.

CHAPTER FIFTH.

A priest, ye cry, a priest!—hush, sleepers! they,
 How shall they gather on the sloughing deck?
 Death's dogs which bark not—how shall they creep?
 The entering vanguard to the Master's fold!
 First to look before the morning dew,
 And sniff the more mysterious *Volks' dromes*,
 Then on the snow-white heads with the will.

REMARKS.

THE health of the Lady of Arnaud had been gradually decaying ever since her disaster. It seemed as if the few years which followed her husband's death had done on her the work of half a century. She lost the fresh elasticity of form, the colour and the mass of health, and became wasted, wan, and feeble. She appeared to have no forced complaint; yet it was evident to those who looked on her, that her strength waned daily. Her lips at length became blanched and her eye dim; yet she spoke not of any desire to see a priest, until Elieuth Glendinning in her soul could not refrain from hovering upon a point which she deemed essential to salvation. Alas of Arnaud received her thus kindly, and thanked her for it.

"If any good priest would take the trouble of such a journey," she said, "he should be welcome; for the prayers and lessons of the good must be at all times advantageous."

This quiet assurance was not quite what Elieuth Glendinning wished or expected. She made up, however, by her own enthusiasm, for the lady's want of eagerness to avail herself of ghostly counsel, and Martin was dispatched with such hints as Elieuth would make, to pray one of the religious men of Saint Mary's to come up to administer the last consolations to the widow of Walter Arnaud.

When the Superior had announced to the Lord Abbot, that the Lady of the unquiescent Walter de Arnaud was in very weak health in the Tower of Glendinning, and desired the assistance of a father confessor, the holy monk passed on the request.

"We do remember Walter de Arnaud," he said, "a good knight and a valiant; he was disappointed of his lands, and slain by the Scotsmen—May not the lady come hither to the sacrament of confession? the road is distant and painful to travel."

"The lady is unwell, holy father," answered the Sacristan, "and unable to bear the journey."

"True—ay—yes—then must one of our brethren go to her—Knowest thou if she hath sight of a jokaire from this Walter de Arundel?"

"Very little, holy father," said the Sacristan; "she hath resided at Glendunary since her husband's death, well-nigh on the charity of a poor widow, called Elspeth Glendunary."

"Wig, thou knowest all the widows in the countryside!" said the Abbot. "Ho! ho! ho!" and he shook his poorly sides at his own jest.

"Ho! ho! ho!" echoed the Sacristan, in the tone and tone in which an inferior applauds the jest of his superior:—Then added, with a hypocritical smile, and a sly twinkle of his eye, "It is our duty, most holy father, to comfort the widows—ho! ho! ho!"

This last laugh was more moderate, until the Abbot should put his monition on the jest.

"Ho! ho!" said the Abbot, "then, to leave jesting, Father Philip, take thou thy rolling gear, and go to comfort this Dame Arundel."

"But," said the Sacristan—

"Give me no But; neither But nor If pass between monk and Abbot, Father Philip; the bonds of discipline must not be relaxed—having gathered from this a screw-bolt—the multitude expect confessions and penitence from the Benefactor, as they would from so many beggary friars—and we may not desert the vineyard, though the toil be grievous unto us."

"And with as little advantage to the holy monastery," said the Sacristan.

"True, Father Philip; but wot you not that what prevents him from doing good? This Julian de Arundel lives a life and evil life, and should we neglect the widow of his brother, he might hang our heads, and we never able to show who hurt us—moreover it is our duty to an ancient family, who, in their day, have been benefactors to the Abbey. Keep with thee instantly, brother; this night and day, as it be necessary, and let none see how diligent Abbot Boniface and his faithful children are in the execution of their spiritual duty—till not deterring them, for the glow is five miles in length,—fear not withholding them, for it is said to be hindered of spectators,—nothing moving them

from pursuit of their spiritual calling; to the confusion of ambitious heretics, and the comfort and edification of all true and faithful sons of the Catholic Church. I wonder what our brother Bastace will say to this?"

Bastace, with his own picture of the dangers and toil which he was to encounter, and the feast which he was to acquire (both by journey), the Abbot moved slowly to finish his luncheon in the refectory, and the Saccristan, with an very good will, accompanied old Martin in his return to Orléans; the greatest impediment in the journey being the trouble of restraining his piousness, that she might tread in some thing like an equal pace with poor jaded Elagath.

After remaining an hour in private with his penitent, the monk returned mopey and full of thought. Dame Elagath, who had placed for the honored guest some refreshment in the hall, was struck with the countenance which appeared in his countenance. Elagath watched him with great anxiety. She observed there was that on his brow which rather resembled a person come from hearing the confession of some enormous crime, than the look of a confessor who resigned a reconciled penitent, not to earth, but to heaven. After long hesitating, she could not at length refrain from demanding a question. She was sure, she said, the lady had made an easy shift. Five years had they rooked together, and she could easily say, no woman lived better.

"Woman," said the Saccristan, sternly, "then speakest thou knowest not what—What could clearing the outside of the plate, if the table be foul with leprosy?"

"Our dishes and trenchers are not so clean as they could be wished, holy father," said Elagath, but half understanding what he said, and beginning with her apron to wipe the dust from the plates, of which she supposed him to complain.

"Furbear, Dame Elagath," said the monk; "your plates are as clean as wooden trenchers and pewter saucers can well be; the foulness of which I speak is of that pestiferous leprosy which is daily becoming ingrained in this our Holy Church of England, and as a mother-morn in the neo-gardland of the Sporn."

"Holy Mother of Heaven!" said Dame Elagath, crossing herself, "have I kept house with a heretic?"

"No, Elagath, no," replied the monk; "it were not strong a

speak for me to make of this unhappy lady, but I would I could say she is free from heretical opinions. Alas! they fly about like the passions by some-day, and infect even the true and fairest of the flock! For it is easy to see of this dame, that she hath been high in judgment as in rank."

"And she can write and read, I had almost said, as well as your reverence," said Elspeth.

"Whom doth she write to, and what doth she read?" said the monk, eagerly.

"Nay," replied Elspeth, "I cannot say I ever saw her write of all, but her maiden, that was—the now serves the family—says she can write—and for reading, she has often read to us good things out of a thick black volume with silver clasps."

"Let me see it," said the monk, hastily, "on your allegiance as a true vassal—on your faith as a Catholic Christian—instantly—instantly let me see it."

The good woman hesitated, dreading at the tone in which the confessor took up her instructions; and being moreover of opinion, that what so good a woman as the lady of Arneil studied so devoutly, could not be of a tendency actually evil. But borne down by the clamour, exclamations, and something like threats used by Father Philip, she at length brought him the fatal volume. It was easy to do this without suspicion on the part of the owner, as she lay on her bed surrounded with the baggage of a long conference with her confessor, and as the small round, or turret chest, in which was the book and her other trifling property, was accessible by another door. Of all her effects, the book was the last she would have thought of showing, for of what use or interest could it be to a family who neither read themselves, nor were in the habit of seeing any who did? so that Dame Elspeth had no difficulty in presenting herself of the volume, although her heart all the while accused her of an ungracious and an inhospitable part towards her friend and inmate. The double power of a hooded and a bearded superior was before her eyes; and to say truth, the boldness, with which she might otherwise have resisted this double authority, was, I grove to say it, much qualified by the curiosity she entertained, as a daughter of Eve, to have some explanation respecting the mysterious volume which the lady divided with so much care, yet whose contents she imparted with such caution. For never had Alice of Arneil read there

any passage from the book in question until the iron door of the tower was locked, and all possibility of intrusion prevented. Even then, she had shown, by the selection of particular passages, that she was more anxious to impress on their minds the principles which the volume contained, than to introduce them to it as a new rule of faith.

When Elspeth, half anxious, half remorseful, had placed the book in the monk's hands, he exclaimed, after turning over the leaves, "Here, by your order, it is as I suspected!—My uncle, my uncle!—I will abide no longer here—will hasten then, dare, in placing in my hands this perilous volume."

"Is it then witchcraft or devil's work?" said Dame Elspeth, in great agitation.

"Nay, God forbid!" said the monk, signing himself with the cross. "It is the Holy Scriptures. But it is rendered into the vulgar tongue, and therefore, by the order of the Holy Catholic Church, unfit to be in the hands of any lay person."

"And yet is the Holy Scripture recommended for our common salvation," said Elspeth. "Good father, you must instruct mine ignorance better; but lack of wit cannot be a deadly sin, and truly, to my poor thinking, I should be glad to read the Holy Scriptures."

"I dare say thou wouldst," said the monk; "and even thou did our mother Eve seek to have knowledge of good and evil, and thus she came into the world, and Death by sin."

"I am sure, and it is true," said Elspeth. "Oh, if she had died by the counsel of Saint Peter and Saint Paul!"

"If she had received the command of *Heaven*," said the monk, "which, as it gave her birth, life, and happiness, fixed upon the great rock millions as fast corresponded with its holy pleasure. I tell thee, Elspeth, the *Word* alspeth—that is, the last stone, read with undivided eye and undivided lips, is like those strong medicines which sick men take by the advice of the learned. Such patients recover and thrive; while those dealing in them, at their own hand, shall perish by their own deed."

"She died, she died," said the poor woman, "your reverence knows best."

"Not I," said Father Philip, in a tone so deferential as he thought could possibly become the Superior of Saint Mary's,—

"Not I, but the Holy Father of Christianity, and our own

holy father the Lord Abbot, know best. I, the poor Garrison of Saint Mary's, can but repeat what I hear from others my superiors. Yet of this, good woman, be assured—the Word, the more Word, abounds. But the church hath her ministers to glory and to expound the same unto her faithful congregation; and this I say, not so much, my beloved brethren—I mean my beloved sister* (for the Christian had got into the end of one of his old sermons)—“Thus I speak not so much of the rectors, curates, and secular clergy, so called because they live after the fashion of the secular or age, unhindered by those ties which separate us from the world; neither do I speak thus of the mendicant friars, whether black or grey, whether crusted or uncrusted; but of the monks, and especially of the monks Benedictine, reformed on the rule of Saint Bernard of Clairvaux, termed called Cistercians, of which monks, Christian brethren—sister, I would say—great is the happiness and glory of the country in possessing the holy ministers of Saint Mary's, whereof I, though an unworthy brother, may say it hath produced more saints, more bishops, more popes—may our persons make us thankful!—since my holy foundation in Scotland. Wherefore—But I see Martin hath my neck in readiness, and I will but salute you with the kiss of sisterhood, which salueth not ashamed, and so bidde me to my tedious return, for the glaze of bad reputation for the evil sports which haunt it. Moreover, I may arrive too late at the bridge, whereof I may be obliged to take the river, which I observed to be somewhat swollen.”

Accordingly, he took his leave of Dame Elspeth, who was confounded by the rapidity of his utterance, and the doctrine he gave forth, and by no means easy on the subject of the book, which her maidens told her she should not have recommended to any one, without the knowledge of its owner.

Notwithstanding the haste which the monk, as well as his neck, made to return to better quarters than they had left at the head of Otterburn; notwithstanding the eager desire Father Phibb had to be the very first who should acquaint the Abbot that a copy of the book they most dreaded had been found within the Hildesons, or patrimony of the Abbey; notwithstanding, moreover, certain feelings which induced him to hurry as fast as possible through the gloomy and self-repeated glaze, with the difficulties of the road, and the rider's want of habitude

of quick motion, were such, that twilight came upon him ere he had nearly cleared the narrow valley.

It was indeed a gloomy vale. The two sides of the vale were so near, that at every double of the river the shadows from the western sky fell upon, and totally obscured, the eastern bank; the thickets of aspenwood seemed to wave with a portentous agitation of boughs and leaves, and the very crags and scree seemed higher and grimmer than they had appeared to the monk while he was travelling in daylight, and in company. Father Philip was hastily remounted, when, emerging from the narrow glen, he gained the open valley of the Tweed, which held on its majestic course from current to pool, and from pool stretched away to other currents, with a dignity peculiar to itself amongst the Scottish rivers; for whatever may have been the thought of the nation, the Tweed usually fills up the space between its banks, seldom leaving those extensive sheets of slough which deform the margins of many of the coldest Scottish streams.

The monk, incredible to location which the age had not regarded as deserving of notice, was, nevertheless, like a prudent general, pleased to find himself out of the narrow glen in which the enemy might have stolen upon him unperceived. He drew up his bridle, reduced his pace to her natural and luxurious walk, instead of the agitating and broken trot at which, to his no small inconvenience, she had hitherto proceeded; and, wiping his brow, gazed forth at leisure on the broad moon, which, now mingling with the lights of evening, was shining over field and forest, village and fortress, and, above all, over the stately Monastery, now far and dim under the yellow light.

The worst part of the magnificent view, in the monk's apprehension, was that the Monastery stood on the opposite side of the river, and that of the many fine bridges which have since been built across that chaste stream, not one then existed. There was, however, in recompense, a bridge then standing which has since disappeared, although its ruins may still be traced by the curious.

It was of a very peculiar form. Two strong abutments were built on either side of the river, at a point where the stream was peculiarly contracted. Upon a rock in the centre of the current was built a solid piece of masonry, constructed like the pier of a bridge, and presenting, like a pier, an angle to the

current of the stream. The masonry continued solid until the pier rose to a level with the two abutments upon either side, and from thence the building rose in the form of a tower. The lower story of this tower consisted only of an archway or passage through the building, over either entrance to which hung a drawbridge with counterpoises, either of which, when dropped, connected the archway with the opposite abutment, where the further end of the drawbridge rested. When both bridges were thus lowered, the passage over the river was complete.

The bridge-keeper, who was the dependant of a neighbouring house, resided with his family in the second and third stories of the tower, which, when both drawbridges were raised, formed an isolated fortress in the midst of the river. He was entitled to a small toll or custom for the passage, concerning the amount of which disputes sometimes arose between him and the passengers. It is needless to say, that the bridge-ward had usually the better in these questions, since he could at pleasure detain the travellers on the opposite side, or, suffering him to pass half-way, might keep him prisoner in his tower till they were agreed on the rate of passage.*

But it was most frequently with the monks of Saint Mary's that the warder had to dispute his prerogative. These holy men wanted free, and at length obtained, a right of free passage to themselves, greatly to the discontent of the bridge-keeper. But when they demanded the same liberality for the numerous pilgrims who visited the shrine, the bridge-keeper would refuse, and was supported by his lord in his resistance. The controversy grew acrimonious on both sides; the Abbot refused communication, and the keeper of the bridge, though unable to retaliate in kind, yet made each individual monk who had to cross and recross the river, endure a sort of purgatory, as he would accommodate them with a passage. This was a great inconvenience, and would have proved a more serious one, but that the river was fordable for men and horse in ordinary weather.

It was a fine moonlight night, as we have already said, when Father Philip approached the bridge, the singular construction of which gave a curious idea of the insecurity of the place. The river was not in flood, but it was above its ordinary level—a heavy water, as it is called in that country, through which the

* Plate E. Drawbridge at Bridge-end.

monk had no particular inclination to risk, if he could manage the matter better.

"Peter, my good friend," cried the Sacristan, raising his voice, "my very excellent friend, Peter, be so kind as to lower the drawbridge. Peter, I say, dost thou not hear?—it's thy gossip, Father Philip, who calls thee."

Peter heard him perfectly well, and saw him into the bargain; but as he had considered the Sacristan as positively his enemy in his dispute with the convent, he went quietly to bed, after reconciling the monk through his keep-hole, despatching to his wife, that, "telling the water in a moonlight night would do the Sacristan no harm, and would teach him the value of a brig the next time, on which a man might pass high and dry, winter and summer, flood and ebb."

After exhausting his voice in entreaties and threats, which were equally unattended to by Peter of the Brig, as he was called, Father Philip at length moved down the river to take the ordinary ford at the head of the next stream. Crossing the rustic obstinacy of Peter, he began, nevertheless, to persuade himself that the passage of the river by the ford was not only safe but pleasant. The banks and scattered trees were so beautifully reflected from the bosom of the dark stream, the whole and so delicious picture formed so pleasing a contrast to his late agitation, to the warmth conceived by his vain endeavours to move the rebellious party of the bridge, that the result was rather agreeable than otherwise.

As Father Philip came close to the water's edge, at the spot where he was to enter it, there sat a female under a large broken scathed oak-tree, or rather under the remains of such a tree, wringing, wringing her hands, and looking earnestly on the current of the river. The monk was struck with astonishment to see a female there at that time of night. But he was, in all honest service,—and if a step further, I put it upon his own conscience,—a devoted spouse of duty. After observing the maiden for a moment, although she seemed to take no notice of his presence, he was moved by her distress, and willing to offer his assistance. "Damsel," said he, "dost thou suggest in so ordinary distress; peradventure, like myself, thou hast been refused passage at the bridge by the church's keeper, and thy waiting may concern thee, either for performance of a vow, or some other weighty charge."

The maiden uttered some heartless words, looked at the river, and then in the face of the Sacristan. It struck Father Philip at that instant, that a Highland Chief of distinction had been for some time expected to pay his vows at the shrine of Saint Mary's; and that possibly this fair maiden might be one of his family, travelling alone for accomplishment of a vow, or left behind by some accident, to whom, therefore, it would be but right and prudent to use every civility in his power, especially as she seemed unacquainted with the Lowland tongue. Such at least was the only motive the Sacristan was ever known to assign for his courtesy; if there was any other, I can never relate it to his own conscience.

To express himself by signs, the common language of all nations, the courteous Sacristan first pointed to the river, then to his man's crupper, and then made, as gracefully as he could, a sign to induce the fair solitary to mount behind him. She seemed to understand his meaning, for she rose up as if to accept his offer; and while the good monk, who, as we have hinted, was no great cavalier, laboured, with the pressure of the right leg and the use of the left rein, to place his mate with her side to the bank in such a position that the body might mount with ease, she rose from the ground with taller portentious activity, and at one bound was behind the monk upon the animal, much the firmer rider of the two. The male by no means seemed to approve of this double burden; she bounded, heeled, and would soon have thrown Father Philip over her head, had not the maiden with a firm hand detained him in the saddle.

At length the resistive bridle changed her humour; and, from refusing to budge off the spot, suddenly stretched her nose homeward, and dashed into the ford as fast as she could sweep. A new terror now invaded the monk's mind—the ford seemed unusually deep, the water added off in strong ripple from the quarters of the male, and began to rise upon her side. Philip lost his presence of mind, which was at no time his most ready attribute, the male yielded to the weight of the current, and as the rider was not attentive to keep her head turned up the river, she drifted downward, lost the ford and her footing at once, and began to swim with her head down the stream. And what was sufficiently strange, at the same moment, notwithstanding the extreme peril, the damsel began to sing, thereby

increasing, if anything could increase, the badly fair of the worthy Sufferer.

I.

Nearly swim we, the moon shines bright,
Both current and ripple are flowing to light.
We have round the right corner, I found him weak,
As we glided along beneath the eel.
That thing is broad beneath us far out as wide,
Their shadows are dancing in midst of the tide,
"Who makes my meetings," the voice he said,
"My back shall be more in too short be red ;
For a like even comes in a dainty mood,
And I'll have my share with the pin and the eel."

II.

Nearly swim we, the moon shines bright,
There's a golden glow on the distant height ;
There's a silver shadow on the silver dark,
And the drooping willows that were on the bank
I see the silver, both current and eel,
It is all well for the vapor hour ;
The moon for the chapel are leaving each cell,
But where's Father Philip, should not the bell?

III.

Nearly swim we, the moon shines bright,
Descended we drift through shadow and light,
Under you rest the silver sleep,
Dull and black, dark and deep.
The Eel has been from the bottomless pool,
He has lifted his mouth of death and of dool !
Look, Father, look, and you'll laugh to see
How he goes and glows with his eye on the sea !

IV.

Good luck to your fishing, when would ye tonight ?
A man of more, or a man of might !
Is it hymns or psalms that must float in your ears,
Or lower who seems to walk his long ?
Hark ! heard ye the Eel's reply, as we pass'd,—
"God's blessing on the water, he took'd the bridge that !
All that came in my ears are such,
Faint or hymns, better or much."

How long the funeral night have continued to sing, or where the terrified soul's journey might have ended, is uncertain. As she sang the last strains, they arrived at, or rather in, a broad tranquil sheet of water, caused by a strong moon or day-

land, running across the river, which dashed in a broad cataract over the barrier. The gale, whether from choice, or influenced by the action of the current, made towards the net intended to supply the constant supply, and entered it half swimming half wading, and pitching the unhappy monk to and fro in the middle of a fearful maze.

As his person flew hither and thither, his garment became loose, and in an effort to retain it, his hand lighted on the volume of the *Lady of Arvon* which was in his bosom. He soon had he grasped it, then his companion plucked him out of the middle into the stream, where, still keeping her head on his collar, she gave him two or three good scents in the watery fluid, so as to ensure that every other part of him had its share of wetting, and then quitted her hold when he was so near the side that by a slight effort (of a great one he was incapable) he might scramble on shore. This accordingly he accomplished, and turning his eyes to see what had become of his extraordinary companion, she was nowhere to be seen; but still he heard, as if from the further of the river, and raising with the noise of the water breaking over the damhead, a fragment of her wild song, which seemed to run thus:—

"Landed—landed! the black book hath won,
 She had you safe down with morning sun!
 Hail ye, and awe ye, and hither and ye be,
 For seldom they look that go swimming with me."

The contrary of the monk's terror could be endured no longer; his head grew dizzy, and, after staggering a few steps onward and reeling himself against a wall, he sank down in a state of insensibility.

CHAPTER SIXTH.

Now let us sit in meditation. That these words
 Be read from the vantage of the church,
 That these feet have to ascend from the street,
 We say, I trust, agree.—Y'th have to do this,
 Now hast the wilderness map and tender vine-plant,
 Oursen good advantage.

THE HYMNODIST.

THE vesper service in the Monastery Church of Saint Mary's was now over. The Abbot had directed himself of his regular

fiorent vestures of ceremony, and resumed his ordinary habit, which was a black gown, worn over a white cumber, with a narrow capulary, a decent and venerable dress, which was calculated to set off to advantage the partly worn of Abbot Boniface.

In quiet times no one could have filed the state of a retired Abbot, for such was his dignity, more respectably than the worthy prelate. He had, no doubt, many of those habits of self-indulgence which men are apt to acquire who live for themselves alone. He was vain, moreover, and when boldly exalted, had sometimes shown symptoms of timidity, not very consistent with the high claims which he preferred as an eminent member of the church, or with the practical defiance which he emitted from his religious brethren, and all who were placed under his command. But he was hospitable, charitable, and by no means of himself disposed to proceed with severity against any one. In short, he would in other times have chattered out his term of parliament with as much credit as any other "purple Abbot," who lived easily, but at the same time decorously—sleep soundly, and did not disgust himself with dreams.

But the wide storm spread through the whole Church of Rome by the progress of the reformed doctrine, sorely disturbed the repose of Abbot Boniface, and opened to him a wide field of duties and cares which he had never so much as dreamed of. There were opinions to be combated and refuted—practices to be inquired into—heretics to be detected and punished—the fallen off to be reclaimed—the wavering to be confirmed—scandal to be removed from the clergy, and the vigour of discipline to be re-established. Past upon past arrived at the Monastery of Saint Mary's—heresies racking, and ribes ulcerated—this from the Privy Council, that from the Primate of Scotland, and this other again from the Queen Mother, advising, approving, censuring, requesting advice upon the subject, and requiring information upon that.

These miseries Abbot Boniface received with an important air of helplessness, or a helpless air of importance, whichever the reader may please to term it, arising at once gratified vanity, and profound troubles of mind.

The sharp-witted Primate of Saint Andrews had discerned the deficiencies of the Abbot of Saint Mary's, and endeavoured to

provide for them by getting admitted into his Monastery as Sub-Prior a brother Chierican, a man of parts and knowledge, devoted to the service of the Catholic Church, and very capable not only to advise the Abbot on occasions of difficulty, but to make him sensible of his duty in case he should, from gnostature or difficulty, be disposed to shrink from it.

Father Ruston played the same part in the Monastery as the old general who, in foreign service, is placed at the elbow of the Prince of the Blood, who constantly commands in chief, on occasion of attempting nothing without the advice of his dry-nurse; and he shared the fate of all such dependants, being heartily disliked as well as feared by his principal. Still, however, the Princess's intention was fully answered. Father Ruston became the constant theme and often the laughter of the worthy Abbot, who heartily dared to turn himself in his bed without considering what Father Ruston would think of it. In every case of difficulty, Father Ruston was summoned, and his opinion asked; and so soon as the embarrassment removed, then the Abbot's next thought was how to get rid of his adviser. In every letter which he wrote to them in power, he recommended Father Ruston to some high church preferment, a bishopric or an abbey; and as they dropped one after another, and were otherwise employed, he began to think, as he continued to the Princess in the bitterness of his spirit, that the Monastery of Saint Mary's had got a most keen of their Sub-Prior.

Yet more indignant he would have been, had he suspected that Father Ruston's ambition was fixed upon his own wife, which, from some attacks of an apoplectic nature, deemed by the Abbot's friends to be more serious than by himself, it was supposed might be shortly vacant. But the confidence which, like other dignitaries, he reposed in his own health, prevented Abbot Ruston from imagining that it held any correspondence with the notions of Father Ruston.

The necessity under which he found himself of consulting with his grand adviser, in cases of real difficulty, rendered the worthy Abbot particularly desirous of doing without him in all ordinary cases of administration, though not without considering what Father Ruston would have said of the matter. He seemed, therefore, to give a hint to the Sub-Prior of the bold stroke by which he had despatched Brother Philip to Osnaburg; but

when the vapors came without his co-appearance he became a little uneasy, the more as other matters weighed upon his mind. The food with the warden or keeper of the bridge threatened to be attended with bad consequences, as the man's quarrel was taken up by the married women under whom he served, and pressing letters of an unpleasant tendency had just arrived from the Prince. Like a giddy man, who catches hold of his watch while he crosses the railway that induces him to use it, the Abbot, however reluctant, found himself obliged to require Eustace's presence, after the service was over, in his house, or rather palace, which was situated so, and made part of, the Monastery.

Abbot Boniface was seated in his high-backed chair, the grotesque carved back of which terminated in a mitre, before a fire where two or three huge logs were reduced to one red glowing mass of charcoal. At his elbow, on an ornate stand, stood the remains of a roasted capon, on which his reverence had made his evening meal, flanked by a goodly store of puddings, of excellent flavor. He was gazing idly on the fire, partly engaged in meditation on his past and present fortunes, partly occupied by endeavoring to trace towns and steeples in the red embers.

"You," thought the Abbot to himself, "in that red perspective I could fancy to myself the peaceful towers of Dunderburg, where I passed my life ere I was called to pump and to trouble. A quiet brotherhood we were, regular in our domestic duties, and when the feelings of humanity prevailed over us, we confessed, and were absolved by each other, and the most formidable part of the penance was the fast of the convent on the subject. I can almost fancy that I see the dinner garden, and the parterre which I grafted with my own hands. And for what have I changed all this, but to be overwhelmed with business which concerns me not, to be called My Lord Abbot, and to be tutored by Father Eustace? I would these terms were the Abbey of Abchurchwick, and Father Eustace the Abbot,—or I would he were in the fire on any terms, so I were rid of him! The Prince says our Holy Father the Pope hath an advice—I am sure he could not live a week with such a one as mine. Then there is no hearing what Father Eustace thinks till you define your own diffidence—No but will long faith his opinion—he is like a miter, who will not unloose his pores to bestow a

fasting, until the world who needs it has ceased his cries of poverty, and wrung out the boon by importunity. And thus I am dishonoured in the eyes of my religious brethren, who behold me treated like a child, while both as man and as monk—I will bear it no longer!—Brother Benoit"—(a lay brother answered to his call)—"tell Father Eustace that I need not his presence."

"I mean to say to your reverence, that the holy father is entering once more from the cloisters."

"Do it so," said the Abbot, "he is welcome,—remove those things—or rather, place a trencher, the holy father may be a little hungry—yes, no—remove them, for there is no good fellowship in him—let the stoup of wine remain, however, and place another cup."

The lay brother obeyed these contradictory commands in the way he judged most easily—he removed the cushion of the half-eaten repas, and placed two goblets beside the stoup of Eustace. At the same instant entered Father Eustace.

He was a thin, sharp-faced, slight-made little man, whose keen grey eyes seemed almost to look through the person to whom he addressed himself. His body was convulsed not only with the fits which he observed with rigid exactitude, but also by the active and unwearying exercise of his sharp and piercing intellect:—

A fiery soul, which, working out its way,
Fostered the purgatory flame;
And also inherited the torment of day.

He turned with courteous reverence to the Lord Abbot, and as they stood together, it was scarce possible to see a more complete difference of form and expression. The proclamaried ray face and laughing eye of the Abbot, which even his present anxiety could not greatly ruffle, was a wonderful contrast to the cold pallid cheek and quick penetrating glance of the monk, in which an eagle and lion spirit glared through eyes to which it seemed to give supernatural lustre.

The Abbot opened the conversation by noticing to his monk to take a stool, and moving to a cup of wine. The monastery was decked with respect, yet not without a remark, that the vulgar service was past.

"For the stomach's sake, brother," said the Abbot, colouring a little—"You know the text."

"It is a dangerous one," answered the monk, "to handle alone, or at late hours. Out off from human society, the juice of the grape becomes a perilous occupation of soldiers, and therefore I over-see it."

Abbot Barchas had poured himself out a goblet which might hold about half an English pint, but, either struck with the truth of the observation, or ashamed to act in direct opposition to it, he suffered it to remain untasted before him, and immediately changed the subject.

"The Primates hath written to us," said he, "to make strict search within our bounds after the heretical persons denounced in this list, who have withdrawn themselves from the justice which their opinions deserve. It is deemed probable that they will attempt to retire to England by our Borders, and the Primates request us to watch with vigilance, and what not."

"Assuredly," said the monk, "the magistrates should not hear the sword in vain—these be they that turn the world upside down—and doubtless your reverend wisdom will with due diligence second the exertions of the Right Reverend Father in God, being in the prescriptive defence of the Holy Church."

"Ay, but how is this to be done?" answered the Abbot, "Saint Mary aid us! The Primates writes to me as if I were a temporal baron—a man under command, having soldiers under him! He says, send forth—scur the country—guard the passes—Truly these men do not travel as those who would give their lives for nothing—the last who went south passed the dry-march at the Kiding-burn with an escort of thirty spears, as our reverend brother the Abbot of Kelso did write unto us. How are we to and singular to stop the way?"

"Your Bailiff is accounted a good man at arms, holy father," said Barchas: "your vassals are obliged to rise for the defence of the Holy Kirk—it is the tenure on which they hold their lands—if they will not come forth for the Church which gives them bread, let their possessions be given to others."

"We shall not be wanting," said the Abbot, collecting himself with importance, "to do whatever may advantage Holy Kirk—thyself shall bear the charge to our Bailiff and our officials—but here again is our controversy with the warden of the bridge and the Baron of Melgillat—Saint Mary! verily we do so multiply upon the House, and upon the generation, that

a man were not where to turn to! Thou didst say, Father Eustace, thou wouldst look into our evidence touching this free passage for the pilgrims?"

"I have looked into the Chancery of the House, holy father," said Eustace, "and therein I find a written and formal grant of all duties and customs payable at the shrineship of England, not only by endowment of this foundation, but by every pilgrim truly designed to accomplish his vows at the House, to the Abbot Ailford, and the monks of the house of Saint Mary in Ramseyshab, from that time and for ever. The deed is dated on Saint Bridget's Eve, in the year of Redemption 1137, and bears the sign and seal of the grantor, Charles of Meigilist, great-great-grandfather of this house, and purports to be granted for the safety of his own soul, and for the weal of the souls of his father and mother, and of all his predecessors and successors, being Dukes of Meigilist."

"Dost he allege," said the Abbot, "that the bridge-wards have been in possession of those dues, and have received them available for more than fifty years—and the house threatens violence—meanwhile, the journey of the pilgrims is interrupted, to the prejudice of their own souls and the dishonour of the patronage of Saint Mary. The Priorities advised us to put on a boat, but the wardens, whom thou knowest to be a gallant man, has sworn the deed. Fear him, but that if they put on a boat to the life's stream, he will drive her board from board—and then come say we should compound the claim for a small sum in silver." Does the Abbot pause a moment for a reply, but moving none, he asked, "But what chancest thou, Father Eustace! wyl art thou about?"

"Because I am surprised at the question, which the Lord Abbot of Saint Mary's asks at the youngest of his brethren."

"Youngest is thou of your shade with us, Brother Eustace," said the Abbot, "not youngest in years, or I think in experience. Sub-Prior also of this convent."

"I am ashamed," confessed Eustace, "that the Abbot of this venerable house should ask of any one whether he can alienate the patrimony of our holy and divine patroness, or give up to an unscrupulous, and perhaps a hostile laity, the rights conferred on this church by his devout progenitor. Popes and councils alike prohibit it—the honour of the living, and the weal of departed souls, alike forbid it—it may not be. To serve,

if he dare use it, we must surrender; but never by our consent should we see the gods of the church plundered, with as little scruple as he would drive off a herd of English horses. Stand yourself, reverend father, and doubt nothing but that the good cause shall prevail. What the spiritual sword, and direct it against the wicked who would weary our holy rights. What the temporal sword, if it be necessary, and stir up the courage and zeal of your loyal vassals."

The Abbot sighed deeply. "All this," he said, "is even spoken by him who hath to act it not; but"— He was interrupted by the entrance of Hester rather hastily. "The male on which the Sacristan had set out in the morning had returned," he said, "in the convent stable all over wet, and with the saddle torn round beneath her belly."

"Sacra Maria!" said the Abbot, "our dear brother hath perished by the way!"

"It may not be," said Hester, hastily—"let the bell be tolled—call the brethren to get torches—burn the village—hurry down to the river—I myself will be the foremost."

The real Abbot stood astonished and aghast, when at once he beheld his other Abbot, and saw all which he ought to have ordered, going forward at the dictation of the youngest monk in the convent. But ere the voices of Hester, which nobody dreamed of disputing, were carried into execution, the assembly was prevented by the sudden apparition of the Sacristan, whose supposed danger excited all the alarm.

CHAPTER SEVENTE.

Pass out the written traditions of the house,
 Dismiss the staffed lessons of that pious staff
 Which weighs upon the heart.

MARSH.

WHAT betwixt cold and fright, the affected Sacristan stood before his Superior, propped on the friendly arm of the convent infirm, drenched with water, and scarce able to utter a syllable.

After various attempts to speak, the first words he uttered were—

"Behn us merry—the moon shines bright."

"Swim, we merry!" retorted the Abbot, indignantly; "a merry night here ye choose for swimming, and a becoming salutation to your Superior!"

"Our brother is bewildered," said Eustace;—"speak, Father Philip, how is it with you?"

"Good luck to your fishing!"

continued the Sacristan, making a most delicious attempt at the tone of his strange companion.

"Good luck to your fishing!" repeated the Abbot, still more surprised than displeased; "by my halibone he is drunken with wine, and comes to our presence with his jolly catches in his throat! If beer and water can cure this folly!"—

"With your pardon, venerable father," said the Sub-Prior, "of water our brother has had enough; and methinks, the confusion of his eye is rather that of terror than of mirth welcoming his profane. Where did you find him, Rob Miller?"

"As it please your reverence, I did but go to shut the door of the mill—and as I was going to shut the door, I heard something green near to me; but judging it was one of Giles Fletcher's legs—for, so please you, he never shuts his gate—I caught up my lever, and was about—Saint Mary forgive me!—to strike where I heard the sound, when, as the minute would have it, I heard the second green just like that of a living man. So I rolled up my knaves, and found the Father Sacristan lying wet and senseless under the wall of our kitchen. So soon as we brought him to himself a bit, he prayed to be brought to your reverence, but I doubt me his wife have given a hot-smoking by the road. It was but now that he spoke in somewhat better form."

"Well!" said Brother Eustace, "then had done well, Rob Miller; only begone now, and remember a second time to pass, ere you strike in the dark."

"Please your reverence, it shall be a lesson to me," said the miller, "not to mistake a holy man for a bog sprout, so long as I live." And, making a bow, with profound humility, the miller withdrew.

"And now that this story is gone, Father Philip," said Eustace, "will thou tell our venerable Superior what else thou hast thou also promised, man? For we will have thee to thy cell."

"Water! water! not wine," muttered the exhausted Benedictine.

"Nay," said the monk, "if that be thy complaint, wine may perhaps cure thee," and he reached him a cup, which the patient drank off to his great benefit.

"And now," said the Abbot, "let his garments be changed, or rather let him be carried to the infirmary; for it will prejudice our health, should we hear his narrative while he stands there, streaming like a living hearth-stove."

"I will bear his adventures," said Eustace, "and report it to your reverence." And, accordingly, he attended the Benedictine to his cell. In about half-an-hour he returned to the Abbot.

"How is it with Father Philip?" said the Abbot; "and through what came he into such a state?"

"He comes from Ghentbrug, recovered so," said Eustace; "and for the rest, he telleth such a legend, as has not been heard in this Monastery the space a long day." He then gave the Abbot the outline of the Benedictine's adventures in the hazardous journey, and added, that for some time he was inclined to think his brain was wrong, seeing he had sung, laughed, and wept all in the same breath.

"A wonderful thing it is to be so," said the Abbot, "that Eustace has been permitted to put forth his head thus far on one of our sacred brethren?"

"True," said Father Eustace; "but for every tent there is a perspective; and I have my suspicions, that if the denouement of Father Philip consist of the Evil One, yet it may not have been altogether without his own personal fault."

"How!" said the Father Abbot; "I will not believe that thou artest doubt that Eustace, in former days, hath been permitted to collect alms and help men, even as he afflicted the poor Jew?"

"That forbid I should raise question of it," said the monk, crossing himself, "yet, when there is an expiation of the Benedictine's tale, which is less than unbecoming, I hold it not to consider it at least, if not to shudder at it. Now, this Erik the Miller hath a beauteous daughter. Suppose—I say only suppose—

that our Sisterhood met her at the door on her return from her walk to the other side, for there she took this evening lesson—suppose, that, in courtesy, and to save her sleeping time and shoes, the Sisterhood brought her across behind him—suppose he carried his familiarity farther than the modesty was willing to admit; and we may easily suppose, further, that this walking was the result of it."

"And this legend invented to deceive us?" said the Superior, reddening with wrath; "but most strictly shall it be sifted and required into; it is not upon us that Father Philip must hope to place the result of his own evil passions for things of Satan. Tomorrow also the monk is to appear before us—we will examine, and we will punish."

"Under your reverence's favour," said Eustace, "that were but your policy. As things now stand with us, the convent could hold of such flying report which tends to the scandal of our clergy. We must close the veil, not only by strengthening discipline, but also by suppressing and stifling the voice of scandal. If my conjectures are true, the abbess's daughter will be silent for her own sake; and your reverence's authority may also impose silence on her father, and on the Sisterhood. If he is again found to offend even the slightest distance on his order, he can be punished with severity, but at the same time with secrecy. For what say the Decretals? *Monachi silentium esse postulant, quodiam silentium silentii debent.*"

A sentence of Louis, as Eustace had before observed, had often much influence on the Abbot, because he understood it not fully, and was ashamed to acknowledge his ignorance. On these terms they parted for the night.

The next day, Abbot Benbowe strictly interrogated Philip on the real cause of his disorder of the previous night. But the Sisterhood stood firm to his story; nor was he found to vary from any point of it, although the answers he returned were in some degree evasive, owing to his intermingling with them over and over mistakes of the strange damsel's song, which had made such deep impressions on his imagination that he could not prevent himself from imitating it repeatedly in the course of his conversation. The Abbot had compassion with the Sisterhood's unwelcome fault, to which something supernatural seemed annexed, and finally became of opinion, that Father Eustace's more rational explanation was rather plausible than just. And,

Indeed, although we have recorded the adventure as we find it written down, we cannot believe to add that there was a solemn on the subject in the convent, and that several of the brethren pretended to have good reasons for thinking that the wife's black-eyed daughter was at the bottom of the affair after all. Whichever way it might be interpreted, all agreed that it had too influence a wound to be permitted to get about, and therefore the Sacristan was charged, on his vow of silence, to say no more of his doings; an injunction which, having some need for need by telling his story, it may be well conjectured that he joyfully obeyed.

The attention of Father Eustace was much less swiftly arrested by the marvellous tale of the Sacristan's danger, and his escape, than by the mention of the volume which he had brought with him from the Tower of Glendower. A copy of the Scriptures, translated into the vulgar tongue, had found its way even into the proper territory of the church, and had been discovered as one of the most hidden and sequestered treasures of the Eldons of Saint Mary's.

He anxiously requested to see the volume. In this the Sacristan was unable to gratify him, for he had lost it, as far as he recollected, when the supernatural being, as he conceived her to be, took her departure from him. Father Eustace went down to the spot in person, and searched all around it, in hopes of recovering the volume in question; but his labour was in vain. He returned to the Abbot, and reported that it must have fallen into the river or the mill-stream; "for I will hardly believe," he said, "that Father Philip's trusted friend would fly off with a copy of the Holy Scriptures."

"Nonsense," said the Abbot, "as it is, an honest translation, it may be thought that Satan may have power over it."

"Ay!" said Father Eustace, "it is indeed his chiefest magazine of artillery, when he ingenuously preoccupies and darts men to set forth their own opinions and expositions of Holy Writ. But though thus abused, the Scriptures are the source of our salvation, and are no more to be reckoned wisely, because of those rash men's perversities, than a powerful medicine is to be contemned, or held poisonous, because bold and evil doctors have employed it to the prejudice of their patients. With the permission of your reverence, I would that this matter were looked into more closely. I will repeat that the Tower of

Glendower are I am many hours older, and we shall see if any specter or white woman of the wild will venture to interrupt my journey or return. Bless I your reverend protection and your blessing!" he added, but in a tone that appeared to set no great store by either.

"Then hast look, my brother," said the Abbot; but no sooner had Erasmus left the apartment, than Beothorn could not help looking on the willing ear of the Sacristan his diabolical wish, that any spirit, black, white, or gray, would read the adviser such a lesson, as to cure him of his presumption in assuming himself wiser than the whole community.

"I wish him no worse lesson," said the Sacristan, "than to go striding merrily down the river with a ghost behind, and Eclipsa, night-worm, and mud-skip, all willing to have a match at him.

Merrily swim we, the moon shines bright!
Good luck to your fishing, when will you be right?"

"Brother Philip," said the Abbot, "we expect thee to say thy prayers, compose thyself, and bemoan that foolish dream from thy mind,—it is but a deception of the devil's."

"I will obey, reverend father," said the Sacristan, "but the time hangs by my memory like a bar in a beggar's rage, it struggles with the passion—the very bells of the convent seem to repeat the words, and jangle in the ears; and now you to put me to death at this very moment, it is my belief I should die saying it—"Now swim we merrily"—it is as it were a spell upon me."

His then again began to writhle

"Good luck to your fishing."

And shaking himself in the air with difficulty, he exclaimed, "It is too certain—I am but a lost priest! Swim we merrily—I shall sing it at the very mass—Woe is me! I shall sing all the remainder of my life, and yet never be able to change the tune!"

The honest Abbot replied, "he know many a good fellow in the same condition;" and concluded the remark with "ho! ho! ho!"—for his reassurance, as the reader may partly have observed, was one of those dull folks who lose a quiet joke.

The Sacristan, well acquainted with his superior's humour,

endeavored to join in the laugh, but his unfortunate coughs came upon him again, and interrupted the liberty of his customary sigh.

"By the road, Brother Philip," said the Abbot, much moved, "you become altogether unbecomingly and I am convinced that such a spell could not subvert over a person of religion, and in a religious house, unless he were under mortal sin. Wherefore, say the seven penitentiary psalms—make diligent use of thy scourge and hair-cloth—refrain for three days from all food, save bread and water—I myself will drive thee, and we will see if this sleeping devil may be driven out of thee; at least I think Brother Thomas himself could drive us better exorcisms."

The Scotman sighed deeply, but knew countenance was vain. He retired therefore to his cell, to try how far painfully might be able to drive off the assaults of the spirit-toss which haunted his memory.

Meanwhile, Father Ruston proceeded to the deanbridge, in his way to the lonely valley of Glen-dang. In a brief conversation with the churchwarden, he had the address to reach his more desirable in the monastery before him, and the current. He explained him that his father had been a tenant under the community; that his brother was childless; and that their possessions would revert to the church on his death, and might be either granted to himself, the warder, or to some greater favorite of the Abbot, as justice should be stood before them at the time. The Sub-Prior suggested to him also, the necessary connection of interests between the Monastery and the office which this man sought. He listened with temper to his rude and clerical answers; and by keeping his own interest firm pitched in his view, he had the satisfaction to find that Peter gradually softened his tone, and consented to let every pilgrim who travelled upon foot pass two of oxen or until Pastouret went, they who travelled on horseback or otherwise, consenting to pay the ordinary custom. Having thus accommodated a matter in which the woe of the current was so deeply interested, Father Ruston proceeded on his journey.

CHAPTER EIGHTH.

Day, duly set with thee, the winter's treasure,
 Though high are hush'd up—the first Father
 Bids us seek, while we were warm.

OUR FIAT.

A November mist overpread the little valley, up which slowly but steadily rode the Monk Eustace. He was not insensible to the feeling of melancholy inspired by the scene and by the season. The stream seemed to murmur with a deep and oppressed note, as if bewailing the departure of autumn. Among the scattered oaks which here and there fringed its banks, the oak-trees only retained that pallid green that precedes their sunset hue. The leaves of the willows were most of them stripped from the branches, lay rustling at each branch, and disturbed by every step of the monk, while the foliage of other trees, totally withered, kept still precarious possession of the boughs, waiting the first wind to scatter them.

The monk dropped into the natural train of powerful thought which these autumnal emblems of several hopes are peculiarly calculated to inspire. "These," he said, looking at the leaves which lay strewn around, "be the hopes of early youth, that formed that they may never wither, and liveliest in spring to become most contemptible in winter; but you, ye fragrant," he added, looking to a knot of beeches which still bore their withered leaves, "you are the proud plans of adventurous mankind, formed here, and still clinging to the mind of age, although it acknowledges their insanity! These beeches—these oaks, save the foliage of the hardy oak, which only begins to show itself when that of the rest of the forest has enjoyed half its maturity. A pile and decaying here is all its possession, but still it retains that symptom of vitality to the last,—so be it with Father Eustace! The fiery hopes of my youth I have trodden under foot for those neglected railings—to the pious dreams of my manhood I look back as to lofty chimæras, of which the path and cavern have long since dated; but my religious vows, the faithful profession which I have made in my mature age, shall retain life while sight of Eustace lives. Enigmas it may be—doubts it must be—yet live it shall, the proud determination to serve the church of which I am a

member, and to combat the heresies by which she is assailed." These points, at least thus thought, a man modern according to his imperfect knowledge, understanding the vital interests of Christianity with the utmost regard and sacred claims of the Church of Rome, and defending his cause with an ardour worthy of a heretic.

While standing around in this contemplative mood, he could not help thinking more than once, that he saw in his path the form of a female dressed in white, who appeared in the attitude of hesitancy. But the impression was only momentary; and whenever he looked steadily to the point where he considered the figure appeared, it always proved that he had mistaken some natural object, a white oak, or the trunk of a decayed birch-tree with its silver bark, for the appearance in question.

Father Erasmus had dwelt too long in Rome to partake the superstitious feelings of the more ignorant Scottish clergy; yet he certainly thought it extraordinary, that so strong an impression should have been made on his mind by the legend of the Sorister. "It is strange," he said to himself, "that this story, which doctrine was the invention of Brother Philip to cover his own impropriety of conduct, should run so much in my head, and disturb my more serious thoughts—I am wroth, I think, to have more command over my senses. I will repeat my prayers, and banish such folly from my meditation."

The monk accordingly began with devotion to tell his beads, in pursuance of the prescribed rule of his order, and was not again disturbed by any wanderings of the imagination, until he found himself beneath the little fortalice of Glasneag.

Dunes O'Connell, who stood at the gate, set up a shout of surprise and joy at seeing the good father. "Mama," she said, "I suppose, where he is the folk!—help the right reverend Sub-Prior to dismount, and take his mule from him.—O father! God has sent you in our need—I was just going to send men and horses to the convent, though I ought to be ashamed to give so much trouble to poor servants."

"Our trouble matters not, good dame," said Father Erasmus; "in what can I pleasure you? I came hither to visit the Lady of Aroon."

"Well-a-day!" said Dunes Alice, "and it was on her part that I had the boldness to think of summoning you, for the

good lady will never be able to wear over the day?—Would it please you to go to her chamber?"

"Hark she not been shaven by Father Philip?" said the monk.

"Shaven she was," said the Dame of Glendurg, "and by Father Philip, as your reverence truly says—but—I wish it may have been a doom shirk—Netherthought Father Philip looked but maddy upon it—and there was a book which he took away with him, that"—She paused, as if unwilling to proceed.

"Speak out, Dame Glendurg," said the Father; "with us it is your duty to have no secrets."

"Nay, if it please your reverence, it is not that I would keep anything from your reverence's knowledge, but I fear I should prejudice the lady as your opinion; for she is an excellent lady—much more than you both she dwelt in this tower, and none more exemplary than she; but the matter, doubtless, she will explain it herself to your reverence."

"I desire first to know it from you, Dame Glendurg," said the monk; "and I again repeat, it is your duty to tell it to me."

"This book, if it please your reverence, which Father Philip carried from Glendurg, was this morning returned to us in a strange manner," said the good widow.

"Returned?" said the monk; "how mean you?"

"I mean," answered Dame Glendurg, "that it was brought back to the Tower of Glendurg, the same best know how—that same book which Father Philip carried with him last yesterday. Old Martin, that is my lackey and the lady's servant, was driving out the cows to the pasture—for we have these good milk-cows, reverend father, blessed be Saint Waldeva, and thanks to the holy Monastery"—

The monk frowned with impatience; but he remembered that a woman of the good dame's condition was like a top, which, if you let it spin on untouched, must at last come to a pause; but, if you interrupt it by flogging, there is no end to its gyrations. "Nay, to speak no more of the cows, your reverence, though they are likely with an ear were tied to a stake, the labor was driving them out, and the lads, that is my Halbert and my Edward, that your reverence has seen at church on holidays, and especially Halbert,—for you patted him on the head and gave him a blessing of Saint Galfbert,

which he wears in his bonnet,—and little Mary Arund, that is the lady's daughter, they ran all after the cattle, and began to play up and down the pasture as young folk will, your reverence. And at length they lost sight of Martin and the cows, and they began to run up a little drough which we call *Over-um-Blind*, where there is a wee bit slope of a burn, and they saw there—Good gride us!—a White Woman sitting on the burn-side wringing her hands—as the helms were lighted to see a strange woman sitting there, all but Halbert, who will be extreme come Whitenside; and, besides, he never feared any thing—and when they went up to her—behold she was passed away!”

“For shame, good women!” said Father Martin; “a woman of your name to listen to a tale so silly!—the young folk told you a lie, and that was all.”

“Nay, sir, it was more than that,” said the old dame; “for, besides that they never told me a lie in their lives, I must warn you that on the very ground where the White Woman was sitting, they found the Lady of Arundell's book, and brought it with them to the tower.”

“That is worthy of mark at least,” said the monk. “Know ye no other copy of this volume within these bounds?”

“None, your reverence,” returned Elspeth; “why should I don't—no one could read it were there twenty.”

“Then you are sure it is the very same volume which you gave to Father Philip?” said the monk.

“As sure as that I now speak with your reverence.”

“It is past singular!” said the monk; and he walked across the room in a musing posture.

“I have been upon cattle to hear what your reverence would say,” continued Dame Goodenew, “respecting this matter—There is nothing I would not do for the Lady of Arundell and her family, and that has been proved, and for her servants to boot, both Martin and Tibb, although Tibb is not so civil sometimes as altogether I have a right to expect; but I cannot think it becoming to have angels, or ghosts, or fairies, or the like, walking upon a lady when she is in another woman's house, in respect it is no way creditable. One thing she had to do was always done to her hand, without costing her either pain or peace, as a country lady says; and besides the difficulty, I cannot but think that there is no safety in having such uncanny creatures about one. But I have tied red thread

round the baby's throat" (so her father still called them), "and given it one of them a rattapow of cowards, baby waving up a slip of white-cloth into their doublets; and I wish to know of your reverence if there be any thing more that a lone woman can do in the matter of ghosts and spirits!—Heaven! that I should have named their unlucky names twice over!"

"Dance Glendinning," answered the monk, somewhat abruptly, when the good woman had finished her narrative, "I pray you, do you know the sister's daughter?"

"Did I know Kate Hagger?" replied the widow; "as well as the beggar knows his doll—a nasty queen was Kate, and a speedy manner of my sin maybe twenty years ago."

"She cannot be the wench I mean," said Father Horton. "She often whom I inquire is named Ellen, a black-eyed girl—you may have seen her at the sick."

"Your reverence must be in the right; and she is my cousin's niece, doubtless, that you are pleased to speak of: but I think God I have always been too distant in attention to the town, to know whether young wenches have black eyes or green ones."

The good father had so much of the world about him, that he was unable to avoid smiling, when the dame heaved her absolute reluctance to a temptation, which was not quite so bold to tempt her as those of the other sex.

"Perhaps, then," he said, "you know her usual dress, Dame Glendinning?"

"Ay, ay, father," answered the dame readily enough, "a white kirtle the wench wears, to hide the dust of the mill as double—and a linen hood, that might well be spared, for modesty."

"Then, may it not be she," said the father, "who has brought back this book, and stepped out of the way when the children came near her?"

The dame paused—was unwilling to confess the solution suggested by the monk—but was at a loss to conceive why the loss of the mill should seem so far from home into or with a corner, nearly to have an old book with three children, from whose observation she wished to conceal herself. Above all, she could not understand why, since she had acquaintance in the family, and since the Dame Glendinning had always paid her welcome and friendship duly, the mill-lad of the mill had

not come in, to rest herself and eat a morsel, and tell her the current news of the world.

These very arguments satisfied the monk that his conjectures were right. "Dance," he said, "you must be continue in what you say. This is an instance—I would it were the sole one—of the power of the Enemy in these days. The matter must be sifted with a serious and careful hand."

"Indeed," said Elspeth, trying to catch and shine in with the ideas of the Sub-Prior, "I have often thought the pillars folk at the Monastery-wall were far more careless in sifting our matter, and in holding it too—some folk say they will not stick at either to put in a handful of ashes amongst Christian folk's corn-and."

"That shall be looked after also, dance," said the Sub-Prior, not displeased to see that the good old woman went off as a false scent; "and now, by your leave, I will see this lady—do you go before and prepare her to see me."

Dance Glendinning left the lower apartment, accordingly, while the monk paced in anxious reflection, considering how he might best discharge, with humanity as well as with effect, the important duty imposed on him. He resolved to approach the bedside of the sick person with reverence, mitigated only by a feeling for her weak condition—he determined, in case of her reply, to which his examples of hardened heretics might encourage her, to be prepared with answers to their customary scruples. High fraught, also, with and against her unorthodox intrusion into the priestly function, by study of the sacred Scriptures, he longed to launch the anathema which one of the modern school of heresy might return to him—the victorious rebuke which should be the dignified protest of the Overseer's treasury—and the healing, yet awful exhortation, which, under pain of releasing the last conclusions of religion, he designed to make to the patient, conjuring her, as the lord her own soul's welfare, to disclose to him what she knew of the dark mystery of infidelity, by which heretics were introduced into the most secluded spots of this very patrimony of the Church herself—what agents they had who could then glide, as it were unseen, from place to place, bring back the volume which the Church had interdicted to the spots from which it had been removed under her express auspices; and who, by encouraging the daring and profane thirst after knowledge

sympathy and wisdom to the lady, had encouraged the father of souls to use with effect his old host of ambition and vainglory.

Much of this premeditated disposition, coaxed the good father, when Elizabeth returned, her tears flowing faster than her apron could dry them, and made him a signal to follow her. "Now," said the monk, "as she then so near her end!—say, the Church must not break or bruise, when comfort is yet possible," and forgetting his position, the good Sub-Prior hastened to the little apartment, where, on the wretched bed which she had occupied since her misadventures had driven her to the Tower of Glendang, the widow of Walter Armoed had revolved up her spirit to her Creator. "My God!" said the Sub-Prior, "and has my unfortunate suffering suffered her to depart without the Church's consolation! Look to her, deane," he continued with eager impetuosity; "is there not yet a spark of the life left—may she not be recalled—recalled but for a moment!—Oh! would that she could express, but by the most imperfect word—but by the most feeble action, her eagerness in the useful task of penitential prayer!—Does she not breathe!—Art thou sure she hath not?"

"She will never breathe more," said the matron. "Oh! the poor fatherless girl—now motherless also—Oh, the kind companion I have had these many years, whom I shall never see again! But she is in heaven for certain, if ever woman went there; for a woman of better life!"

"Was to me," said the good monk, "if indeed she went not hence to good assurance—yes to the pious chaplain, who suffered the world to carry a chosen one from the back, while he busied himself with trimming his shag and his staff to give the monster battle! Oh! if in the long Reverend, ought but would should that poor spirit share, what has my delay cost!—the value of an immortal soul!"

He then approached the body, full of the deep remorse natural to a good man of his profession, who formerly believed the doctrine of the Catholic Church. "Ay," said he, gazing on the pallid corpse, from which the spirit had parted so placidly as to leave a smile upon the dim blue lips, which had been so long wasted by decay that they had parted with the last breath of animation without the slightest convulsive tremor—"Ay," said Father Tustice, "there lies the faded tree, and,

as it fell, so it then—well thought for me, should my regret have left it in disorder as an evil direction!" He then again and again conjured Dame Glendower to tell him what she knew of the disordered and ordinary walk of the deceased.

All looked to the high bosom of the deceased lady; for her companion, who advanced her sufficiently while alive, notwithstanding some trifling points of jealousy, now claimed her after her death, and could think of no attitude of pose with which she did not share her memory.

Indeed, the Lady of Arundel, however she might privately doubt some of the doctrines ascribed to by the Church of Rome, and although she had probably hastily appealed from that corrupted system of Christianity to the volume on which Christianity itself is founded, had nevertheless been regular in her attendance on the worship of the Church, not, perhaps, extending her scruples so far as to break off communion. Such indeed was the first sentiment of the earlier reformers, who seemed to have started, for a time at least, to avoid a schism, from the violence of the Pope rendered it inevitable.

Father Justice, on the present occasion, listened with surprise to everything which could lead to assure him of the lady's orthodoxy in the main points of belief, for his conscience reproached him sorely that, instead of protesting communion with the Dame of Glendower, he had not instantly listened where his presence was so necessary. "H," he said, addressing the dead lady, "thou art yet far from the utmost purity due to the followers of false doctrine—if thou dost but suffer for a time, to expiate faults done in the body, but persisting of mortal frailty more than of deadly sin, fear not that thy shade shall be long in the painful regions to which thou aspest be doomed—if vigils—if masses—if penance—if mortification of my body, all it resembles that exterminated form that the word hath abandoned, may secure thy deliverance. The Holy Church—the pious foundation—our blessed Patrons herself, shall intercede for one whose errors were counterbalanced by so many virtues—Leave me, dame—hark, and by her help, will I perform those duties which this phantasm now demands!"

Deeply left the monk, who employed himself in fervent and unceasing, though unavailing, prayer, for the soul of the departed spirit. For an hour he remained in the quietness of death,

and then returned to the hall, where he found the still weeping friend of the deceased.

But it would be unjust to Mrs. Glendinning's hospitality, if we suppose her to have been weeping during this long interval, or rather if we suppose her so entirely absorbed by the tidings of sorrow which she paid finally and placidly to her deceased friend, as to be incapable of attending to the rights of hospitality due to the holy visitor—who was confessor at once, and Sub-Prior—mighty in all religious and secular considerations, as far as the vicars of the Monastery were concerned.

Her barley-bread had been tasted—her choicest cake of home-brewed ale had been breathed—her best butter had been placed on the hall table, along with her most savory ham, and her choicest cheese, ere she abandoned herself to the extremity of sorrow; and it was not till she had arranged her little rug on the hearth, that she sat down in the chimney corner, threw her checked apron over her head, and gave way to the current of tears and woe. In this there was no promise or utterance. The good dame held the lacunæ of her house to be as committed a duty, especially when a monk was her visitor, as any other pressing call upon her conscience; nor until these were suitably attended to did she find herself at liberty to indulge her sorrow for her departed friend.

When she was conscious of the Sub-Prior's presence, she rose with the same attention to his reception; but he declined all the offers of hospitality with which she endeavored to tempt him. Not her butter, as yellow as gold, and the best, she assured him, that was made in the patrimony of Saint Mary—not the barley scones, which "the departed monk, God rest his soul! used to say were as good"—not the ale, nor any other order which poor Elspeth's stores afforded, could prevail on the Sub-Prior to break his fast.

"This day," he said, "I must not taste food until the sun go down, happy it, in so doing, I can expiate my own negligence—happy still, if my willingness of this trifling nature, undertaken in pure faith and singleness of heart, may benefit the soul of the deceased. Yet, dame," he added, "I may not as yet forget the living in my care for the dead, as to have bidst me that look, which is to the ignorant what, to our first parents, the tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil unapprop-

proved—excellent indeed in itself, but fatal because used by those to whom it is prohibited."

"Oh, bitterly, revered father," said the widow of Simon Goodwin, "will I give you the book, if so be I can while it lies the better; and indeed, poor things, as the time stands with them even now, you might take the heart out of their bodies, and they never find it out, they are no begotten!"

"Give them this novel instead, good dame," said the father, drawing from his pocket one which was amply illustrated with pictures, "and I will come myself, or send one of a fitting time, and teach them the meaning of those pictures."

"The tawny images?" said Simon Goodwin, forgetting for an instant her grief in her admiration, "and well I wot," added she, "it is another sort of a book than the poor Lady of Avenel's; and blessed might we have been this day, if your reverence had found the way up the glen, instead of Father Fick, though the Sacristan is a powerful man too, and speaks as if he would get the house fly abroad, were that the walls no gap thick. Simon's fortune (may he and they be blessed!) took care of that."

The monk ordered his wife, and was about to take his leave; and the good dame was still delaying him with questions about the funeral, when a horseman, armed and accoutred, rode into the little courtyard which surrounded the Keep.

* *Apollon—overstep.*

CHAPTER NINTH.

For aye they ride among our shores
With spears on spears and rusty spears,
There games are fought into our day,
Thus said John Upstart.

RANSMITH III.

THE Scottish laws, which were as wisely and judiciously made as they were severely and inflexibly executed, had in vain endeavored to restrain the damage done to agriculture, by the drink and headed proprietors retaining in their service what were called jock-men, from the just, or doubtless quilted with iron

which they were as defensive as armor. These military rioters conducted themselves with great violence towards the industrious part of the community—lived in a great measure by plunder, and were ready to execute any commands of their master, however unlawful. In adopting this mode of life, men resigned the quiet hopes and regular labours of industry, for an unsettled, precarious, and dangerous trade, which yet had such charms for those once accustomed to it, that they became incapable of following any other. Hence the complaint of John Upstart, a satirical character, representing a countryman, into whose mouth the poets of the day put their general satire upon men and manners.

They ride about in such a rage,
By land, by sea, and by air,
With buckles, horns, and brand,
Let where they ride and through the eye
The Devil sees, and the company,
Quoth John Upstart.

Christie of the Clackhill, the horseman who now arrived at the little Tower of Glendun, was one of the hopeful company of whom the poet complains, as was indicated by his "spiral on spear" (two plumes on his shoulder), his rusted spurs, and his long hair. An iron skull-cap, some of the brightest, bore for distinction a spike of the bull's, which was Armes's badge. A long two-edged straight sword, having a handle made of polished oak, hung down by his side. The woe-stricken condition of his horse, and the wild and haunted look of the rider, showed their occupation could not be executed as easy or a thriving one. He saluted Dame Glendun with little courtesy, and the meet with her; for the growing discontent to the religious orders had not failed to extend itself among a class of men of such dissolute habits, although it may be supposed they were tolerably indifferent alike to the law as the sacred doctrine.

"So, our lady is dead, Dame Glendun?" said the youth;—"my master has sent you even now a fat bullock for her soul—it may serve for her funeral. I have left him in the upper sleigh, as he is somewhat homely," and he nodded both with ear and horn—the worse the skin is off, and he is so much fat, the less like you are to have trouble—yes understand me? Let me have a peck of corn for my horse, and beef and beer for

* Homely—that which is easily recognized by the eye.

myself, for I must go on to the Monastery—though I think this work here might do mine around."

"This around, rule man!" said the Sub-Prior, knitting his brow—

"For God's sake!" cried poor Dame Gloucestre, startled at the idea of a quarrel between them.—"O Christ!—it is the Sub-Prior—O reversed etc, it is Christa of the Gloucestre, the lord's chief justice; ye know that little savings can be expected from the like of them."

"Are you a relative of the Lord of Arundel?" said the monk, addressing himself to the baroness, "and do you speak thus rashly to a brother of Saint Mary's, to whom thy master is so much beholden?"

"He means to be yet more beholden to your house, Sir Monk," answered the fellow; "for having his sister-in-law, the widow of Walter of Arundel, was on her death-bed, he sent me to say to the Father Abbot and the brethren, that he will hold the funeral-feast at their convent, and entertain himself therein, with a score of horse and some friends, and to abide there for three days and three nights,—having horse-meat and much more at the charge of the community; of which his intention he sends due notice, that fitting preparation may be timely made."

"Friend," said the Sub-Prior, "believe not that I will do to the Father Abbot the indignity of debasing such an around.—Think'st thou the goods of the church were bestowed upon her by holy princes and good nobles, now dead and gone, to be consumed in idleness by every prodigal houseman who numbers in his train more followers than he can support by honest means, or by his own handiwork? Tell thy master, from the Sub-Prior of Saint Mary's, that the Friends hath heard his overhaule to us that we submit no longer to this compulsory exercise of hospitality on slight or false pretences. Our lands and goods were given to relieve pilgrims and pious persons, not to host bands of idle soldiers."

"This to me!" said the angry specter, "this to me and to my master—Look to yourself then, Sir Friend, and try if *we* and *our* will keep bellies from wandering, and haystacks from burning!"

"Dost thou measure the Holy Church's patrimony with waste and dissipation," said the Sub-Prior, "and that in the face of

Ou man! I call on all who hear me to bear witness to the words this ruffian has spoken. Remember how the Lord James dressed such as you by scores in the black pool at Jedburgh—To him and to the Primate will I complain." The abbot shifted the position of his hands, and brought it down to a level with the monk's body.

Dame Glendinning began to shriek for assistance. "Tibb Tacket! Martin! where be ye all!—Christie, for the love of God, consider he is a man of Holy Kirk!"

"I care not for his spear," said the Sub-Prior; "if I am slain in defending the rights and privileges of my community, the Primate will know how to take vengeance."

"Let him look to himself," said Christie, but at the same time flinging his hands against the wall of the tower; "if the Fil men speik true who come hither with the Governor in the last mid, Norman Leslie has him at foot, and is like to set him free! We know Norman a true black-hearted, who will never quit the sick. But I had no design to offend the holy Father," he added, thinking perhaps he had gone a little too far; "I am a rude man, bred to house and sturap, and not used to deal with book-learned men and priests, and I am willing to ask his forgiveness—and his blessing, if I have said ought amiss."

"For God's sake! your reverence," said the widow of Glendinning apart to the Sub-Prior, "bestow on him your forgiveness—how shall we poor folk sleep in security in the dark night, if the convent is at feud with such men as he is?"

"You are right, dame," said the Sub-Prior, "your advice should, and must be, in the first instance considered.—Soldier, I forgive thee, and may God bless thee and send thee honesty."

Christie of the Clithell made an unwilling inclination with his head, and muttered apart, "That is as much as to say, God send thee starvation. But now to my master's demand, Sir Prior! What answer am I to return?"

"That the body of the widow of Walter of Awood," answered the Father, "shall be interred as becomas her rank, and in the tomb of her valiant husband. For your master's proffered visit of three days, with such a company and retinue, I have no authority to reply to it; you must intimate your Chief's purpose to the Reverend Lord Abbot."

"That will cost me a further ride," said the man, "but it is

all in the day's work.—How now, my lad," said he to Hallow, who was handling the long lanes which he had laid aside, "how do you like such a plaything?—Will you go with me and be a man-trouser?"

"The Saints in their merry world!" said the poor mother; and then, afraid of having displeased Christie by the vivacity of her exclamation, she followed it up by explaining, that since Simon's death she could not look on a spear or a bow, or any implement of destruction, without trembling.

"Follow!" answered Christie, "then shouldst take another husband, dance, and drive such follies out of thy thoughts—what sayest thou to such a strapping lad as I? Why, this old tower of thine is fearful enough, and there is no want of dingles, and crags, and lugs, and thickets, if one was not hard; a man might hole here and keep his half-score of beds, and as many geldings, and live on what he could lay his hand on, and be hard to thee, old wench."

"Alas! Master Christie," said the mother, "that you should talk to a lone woman in such a fashion, and death in the house besides!"

"Lone woman!—why, that is the very reason thou shouldst take a mate. Thy old friend is dead, why, good—dance thou another of somewhat tougher frame, and that will not die of the ply like a young chicken.—Better still—Come, dance, let me have something to eat, and we will talk more of this."

Dance Elspeth, though she well knew the character of the man, whom in fact she both defied and feared, could not help suspecting at the personal address which he thought proper to make to her. She whispered to the Sub-Prior, "say thing just to keep him quiet," and went into the tower to sit before the soldier the food he desired, trusting heretofore good cheer, and the power of her own charms, to keep Christie of the Chertill as well amused, that the altercation between him and the holy father should not be renewed.

The Sub-Prior was equally unwilling to hazard any unnecessary rupture between the community and such a person as John of Armat. He was sensible that moderation, as well as firmness, was necessary to support the tottering sense of the Church of Rome; and that, contrary to former times, the quarrels between the clergy and lay folk, in the present, usually terminated to the advantage of the latter. He resolved, there-

see, to avoid further strife by withdrawing, but failed not, in the first place, to poison himself of the volume which the Barnstons carried off the evening before, and which had been returned to the glen in such a marvellous manner.

Edward, the younger of Dame Elspeth's boys, made great objections to the book's being removed, in which Mary would probably have joined, but that she was now in her little sleeping chamber with Tibb, who was nursing her simple skill to console the young lady for her mother's death. But the younger Glenkinnag stood up in defence of her property, and, with a positiveness which had hitherto made no part of her character, declared, that now the head lady was dead, the book was Mary's, and no one but Mary should have it.

"But if it is not a fit book for Mary to read, my dear boy," said the father, gently, "you would not wish it to remain with her?"

"The lady read it," answered the young champion of property; "and so it could not be wrong—it shall not be taken away—I wonder where Halbert is!—according to the breeding tales of gay Charlie, I reckon,—he is always waiting for fighting, and now he is out of the way."

"Why, Edward, you would not fight with me, who am both a priest and an old man?"

"If you were as good a priest as the Pope," said the boy, "and as old as the hills to boot, you shall not carry away Mary's book without her leave. I will do battle for it."

"But see you, my love," said the monk, answered with the moderate friendship manifested by the boy, "I do not take it, I only borrow it; and I leave it in its place my own gay minstrel, as a pledge I will bring it again."

Edward opened the volume with eager curiosity, and glanced at the pictures with which it was illustrated. "Saint George and the dragon—Halbert will like that; and Saint Michael breasting his sword over the head of the Wicked One—and that will do for Halbert too. And see the Saint John leading his lamb to the wilderness, with his little cross made of reeds, and his scrip and staff—that shall be my favourite, and where shall we find one for poor Mary?—here is a beautiful woman weeping and lamenting herself."

"There is Saint Mary Magdalen repenting of her sin, my dear boy," said the father.

"That will not suit our Mary; for she commits no faults, and is never angry with us, but when we do something wrong."

"Then," said the father, "I will show you a Mary, who will protect her and you, and all good children. See how fairly she is represented, with her gown covered with golden stars."

The boy was lost in wonder at the portrait of the Virgin, which the Sub-Prior turned up to him.

"This," he said, "is really like our sweet Mary; and I think I will let you take away the black book, that has no such goodly stars in it, and leave this for Mary instead. But you must promise to bring back the book, good father—for now I think upon it, Mary may like that best which was her mother's."

"I will certainly return," said the monk, reading his answer, "and perhaps I may teach you to write and read such beautiful letters as you see there written, and to paint them blue, green, and yellow, and to blazon them with gold."

"Ay, and to make such figures as these blessed saints, and especially these two Marys!" said the boy.

"With their blessing," said the Sub-Prior, "I can teach you that art too, so far as I am myself capable of showing, and you of learning it."

"Then," said Edward, "will I paint Mary's picture—and remember you are to bring back the black book; that you must promise me."

The Sub-Prior, anxious to get rid of the boy's pertinacity, and to set forward on his return to the convent, without having any further interview with Christie the pilgrimage, answered by giving the promise Edward required, mounted his horse, and set forth on his return homeward.

The November day was well spent on the Sub-Prior pursued his journey; for the difficulty of the road, and the various delays which he had met with at the tower, had detained him longer than he proposed. A still easterly wind was sighing among the withered leaves, and stripping them from the bald trees that yet remained on the barren trees.

"Even so," said the monk, "our prospects in this vale of time grow more desolate as the stream of years passes on. Little have I gained by my journey, saving the certainty that Henry is busy among us with more than his usual activity, and that the spirit of teaching religious orders, and plundering the

Church's property, so general in the eastern Districts of Scotland, has now some nearer home."

The tread of a horse which came up behind him, interrupted his reverie, and he soon saw he was mounted by the same wild rider whom he had left at the tower.

"Good even, my son, and benefactor," said the Sub-Prior as he passed; but the rude soldier scarce acknowledged the greeting, by bowing his head; and dashing the spurs into his horse, went on at a pace which soon left the monk and his mule far behind. "And there," thought the Sub-Prior, "poor wretched plague of the times—a fellow whose birth designed him to cultivate the earth, but who is perverted by the unbalanced and unchristian divisions of the country, into a daring and dishonest robber. The houses of Scotland are now turned monstrous thieves and robbers, oppressing the poor by violence, and wasting the Church, by exacting free quarters from abbots and priors, without other shame or reason. I fear ere I shall be too late to restrain the Abbot to make a stand against these daring ravens—I must make haste." He struck his mule with his riding wand accordingly; but, instead of moving her forward, the animal suddenly started from the path, and the rider's utmost efforts could not force her forward.

"Art thou, son, infected with the spirit of the times?" said the Sub-Prior; "thou wert wont to be ready and accessible, not art now as remote as any wild judiceman or northern harrier of these ill."

While he was conferring with the startled animal, a voice, like that of a female, shouted in his ear, or at least very close to it,

"Good evening, Sir Priest, and as late as you ride,
With your mule as late, and your mule as idle;
But ride you through valley, or ride you o'er hill,
There is one that has warrant to ride on you still."

Look, look,
The villainess Mark I
I have a warrant to carry it back."

* To assess, in Scotland, is to exact free quarters upon the will of the landlord. It is believed equivalent to theft, by a statute passed in the year 1140. The great abbots and bishops oppressed the peasantry very much by exactions of this nature. The community of Aberbrothach complained of an *Abbot of Angus*, I think, who was in the regular habit of visiting them once a year, with a train of a thousand horse, and taking all the whole winter portions of the harvest were exhausted.

The Sub-Prior looked around, but neither look nor look was now which could conceal an unlooked suspicion. "May Our Lady have mercy on me!" he said, "I trust my senses have not forsaken me—yet how my thoughts should arrange themselves into shapes which I despise, and words which I care not for, or why there should be the sound of a female voice as now, in which the majority has been so long indifferent, baffles my comprehension, and almost reduces the reason of Philip the Hermit. Come, good monks, beside them to the path, and let us leave while our judgment serves us."

But the voice stood as if it had been rooted to the spot, looked from the point to which it was passed by its rider, and by her ears had done into her neck, and her eyes almost starting from their sockets, testified that she was under great terror.

While the Sub-Prior, by alternate threats and warning, endeavored to restrain the wayward animal to her duty, the wild animal voice was again heard close beside him.

"What, be I Sub-Prior, and come you not here
To conjure a host from a dead woman's bier?
Bids you, and awe you, be wary and wise,
Kiss back with the back, or you'll pay for your prize.
Back, back,
There's death in the back!
In the name of my master I bid thee leave back!"

"In the name of my Master," said the astonished monk, "that name before which all things created tremble, I conjure thee to say what thou art that hauntest me thus!"

The same voice replied,

"That which is neither ill nor well,
That which belongs not to Heaven nor to hell,
A wretch of the side, a heretic of the street,
Tired a willing thought and a sleeping dream;
A form that may spy
With the half-dead eye,
In the house of the willing man, be I."

"This is more than simple fantasy," said the Sub-Prior, rousing himself, though, notwithstanding the natural hardness of his temper, the awesome presence of a supernatural being so near him, failed not to make his blood run cold, and his hair bristle. "I charge thee," he said aloud, "be thou

around what it will, to depart and terrible me no more! False apost, thou shalt not appeal any more those who do the work faithfully."

The voice immediately answered—

"Nasty, like Peter, wouldn't thou let me say right!
[After the star when it shines, I was there through the night;
I was down on the forest and rain on the air,
And saved the world with the heavy night-mare,
Again, again,
At the crack of the gun,
When Robert the brave, I'll meet thee again.

The road was now apparently left open; for the male collected himself, and changed from her posture of terror to one which promised advance, although a profound perspiration, and general trembling of the joints, indicated the bodily terror she had undergone.

"I need to doubt the existence of Catholics and Romanists," thought the Sub-Prior, "but, by my Holy Order, I know no longer what to say!—My pulse beats irregularly—my head is cool—I am feeling free, everything but sin, and possessed of my ordinary faculties—Ethan some food is permitted to bewilder me, or the tales of Cornelius Agrippa, Paracelsus, and others who treat of occult philosophy, are not without foundation,—at the crack of the gun! I could have desired to avoid a second meeting, but I am on the service of the Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against me."

He moved onward accordingly, but with precaution, and not without fear; for he neither knew the manner in which, or the place where, his journey might be next interrupted by his invisible attendant. He descended the glen without interruption for about a mile further, when, just at the spot where the break approached the steep hill, with a swelling as abrupt as to leave scarcely room for a horse to pass, the male was again visited with the same symptoms of terror which had before interrupted her course. Better acquainted than before with the cause of her restlessness, the Friar employed no effort to make her proceed, but addressed himself to the object, which he doubted not was the same that had formerly misapprehended him, in the words of solemn exorcism prescribed by the Church of Rome on such occasions.

In reply to his demand, the voice again sang—

"Men of good are held as soldiers,"
 Men of evil are wild and restless;
 Let them still,
 In the world of the evil,
 For those he knows that walk that ill."

While the Sub-Prior listened, with his head turned in the direction from which the sound seemed to come, he felt as if something rushed against him, and ere he could discover the cause, he was pushed from his saddle with gentle but irresistible force. Before he reached the ground his senses were gone, and he lay long in a state of insensibility; for the sunset had not ceased to gild the top of the distant hill when he fell,—and when he again became conscious of existence, the pale moon was glowering on the landscape. He awakened in a state of terror, from which, for a few minutes, he found it difficult to rouse himself free. At length he sat upon the grass, and became sensible, by repeated exertion, that the only powerful injury which he had sustained was the numbness arising from extreme cold. The notion of something near him made the blood again run to his heart, and by a sudden effort he started up, and looking around, saw to his relief that the noise was occasioned by the fluttering of his own robe. The pensive maid had remained quietly beside her master during his trance, hovering on the grass which grew plentifully in that sequestered nook.

With some caution he collected himself, renovated the natural, and meditating upon his wild adventures, descended the glen till its junction with the broader valley through which the Tweed winds. The drawbridge was readily dropped at his first exclamation; and as much had he won upon the heart of the cheerful warden, that Peter appeared himself with a lantern to show the Sub-Prior his way over the garden pass.

"By my oath, sir," he said, holding the light up to Father Rastan's face, "you look awfully travelled and deadly pale—but a little matter serves to weary out you men of the veil. I saw who speak to you—I have ridden—before I was perched up here on this pillar betwixt wind and water—it may be thirty Scotch miles before I broke my hat, and have had the red of a herald's run in my cheek all the while—but will you drink some beer, or a cup of distilled water?"

"Neither—thanks."

"I may not," said Father Maurice, "being under a vow, but I thank you for your kindness, and pray you to give what I may not except to the next poor pilgrim who comes hither pale and fasting, for as it shall be the better both with him here, and with you hereafter."

"By my oath, and I will do so," said Peter Bridge-Ward, "even for thy sake.—It is strange now, how this Sub-Prior gets round such heart more than the rest of those scolded gentry, that think of nothing but quaffing and eating!—With, I say—with, we will give a cup of distilled water and a crust of bread unto the next pilgrim that comes over; and ye may keep for the purpose the grange of the last grapple," and the ill-beked homestead which the herds would not."

While Peter turned these charitable, and, at the same time, prudent objections, the Sub-Prior, whose mild interference had awakened the Bridge-Ward to such an act of unbecoming generosity, was going onward to the Monastery. In the way, he had to converse with and subdue his own, selfishness heart, as every, he was sensible, more formidable than any which the external power of Satan could plant in his way.

Father Maurice had indeed strong temptation to suppress the extraordinary incident which had befallen him, which he was the more reluctant to confess, because he had passed an adverse judgment upon Father Philip, who, as he was not unwilling to allow, had, on his return from Glendurg, encountered chivalry somewhat similar to his own. Of this the Sub-Prior was the more convinced, when, dealing in his house for the Food which he had brought off from the Tower of Glendurg, he found it was missing, which he could only account for by supposing it had been stolen from him during his trance.

"If I confess this strange violation," thought the Sub-Prior, "I become the ridiculed of all my brethren—I, whom the Priests sent hither to be a watch, as it were, and a check upon their follies. I give the Abbot an advantage over me which I shall never again recover, and Heaven only knows how he may abuse it, in his foolish stupidity, to the dishonour and loss of Holy Kirk.—But then, if I make not true confession of my shame, with what face can I again presume to administer or restrain others!—Draw, proud heart," continued he, addressing himself, "that the wall of Holy Church passes thee low in this matter

* An old-fashioned name for an action just for holding up one.

then their own justification.—Yes, Harven has punished thee even in that point in which thou didst deem thyself most strong, in thy spiritual pride and thy moral wisdom. Thou hast laughed at and derided the impotence of thy brethren—strong thyself as thou in their decision—tell what they may not believe—assert that which they will ascribe to idle fear, or perhaps to idle falsehood—sustain the disgrace of a silly railway, or a wilder fable.—Be it so; I will do my duty, and make ample reparation to my superior. If the discharge of this duty destroys my usefulness in this house, God and Our Lady will send me where I can better serve them."

There was no little merit in the resolution thus plently and generously formed by Father Eustace. To men of any rank the esteem of their order is naturally most dear; but in the monastic establishment, cut off as the brethren are, from other objects of ambition, as well as from all exterior friendship and relationship, the place which they hold in the opinion of each other is all in all.

But the consciousness how much he should rejoice the Abbot and most of the other monks of Saint Mary's, who were impatient of the unauthorised, yet irresistible control, which he was wont to exercise in the affairs of the convent, by a conviction which would put him in a ludicrous, or perhaps even in a criminal point of view, could not weigh with Father Eustace in comparison with the task which his belief enjoined.

As, strong in his feelings of duty, he approached the exterior gate of the Monastery, he was surprised to see torches gleaming, and men assembled around it, some on horseback, some on foot, while several of the monks, distinguished through the night by their white caparisons, were seeking themselves busy among the crowd. The Sub-Prior was received with a unanimous shout of joy, which at once made him sensible that he had himself been the object of their anxiety.

"There he is! there he is! God be thanked—there he is, hale and fit!" exclaimed the monks; while the monks exclaimed, "To Jesus hasten—the blood of thy servants is precious in thy sight!"

"What is the matter, children! what is the matter, my brethren?" said Father Eustace, dismounting at the gate.

"Nay, brother, if thou know'st not, we will not tell thee till thou art in the refectory," answered the monks; "unless it that

the Lord Abbot had ordered them, our anxious and faithful vassals, mutually to set forth to guard these dear innocent perils—Ye may engirdle your horses, children, and dainties; and to-morrow, each who was at this rendezvous may send to the convent kitchen for a quarter of a yard of roast beef, and a black-jack full of double ale."¹

The vassals dispersed with joyful acclamation, and the monks, with equal jubilee, conducted the Sub-Prior into the refectory.

¹ It was one of the few remembrances of Old Part, or Henry Jenkins, I forget which, that it came current in the veteran's neighbourhood, the evening, before the dissolution, used to dole out roast beef by the measure of feet and pints.

CHAPTER TENTH.

Here we stand—

Wonderous and well, may Heaven's high name be bless'd for'till
 As now, our Country stand'd a house against us.

Darwin.

No sooner was the Sub-Prior hurried into the refectory by his rejoicing companions, than the first person on whom he fixed his eye proved to be Clement of the Cloister. He was seated in the claustrary-corner, stowed and guarded, his features down into that air of sullen and torrid resolution with which these hardened in guilt are accustomed to view the approach of punishment. But as the Sub-Prior drew near to him, his face assumed a more wild and startled expression, while he exclaimed—"The devil! the devil himself, brings the dead back upon the living!"

"Nay," said a monk to him, "my refuge that Our Lady holds the attempt of the wicked on her faithful servants—our dear brother lives and moves."

"Lives and moves!" said the ruffian, doing and shuffling towards the Sub-Prior as well as his chains would permit; "nay, then, I will never trust when shaft and steel point more—it is even so," he added, as he gazed on the Sub-Prior with astonishment; "neither was nor wound—not so much as a rent in his flesh!"

"And whence should my wound have come?" said Father Rufina.

"From the good horse that never failed me before," replied Chrestie of the Chiffell.

"Hasten thence then for thy purpose!" said the Sub-Prior; "wouldst thou have slain a servant of the altar?"

"To choose!" answered Chrestie; "the Friar says, as the whole pack of ye were slain, there were more laid at Foulton."

"Villain! art thou heroic as well as murderous?"

"Not I, by Saint Giles," replied the rider; "I returned lately enough to the Laird of Minsore, when he told me ye were all slain and hewn; but when he would have had me go hear one Wycherly, a gossipier as they call him, he might as well have persuaded the wind with that had flung one rider to head down and help another into the saddle."

"There is some goodness about him yet," said the Priorism to the Abbot, who at that moment entered—"He refused to hunt a heretic prisoner."

"The better for him in the next world," answered the Abbot. "Prepare for death, my son,—we deliver thee over to the tender arm of our bella, for execution on the Gallows-hill by jump of light."

"Amen!" said the villain; "be the end I must have come by sooner or later—and what care I whether I feel the cross at Saint Mary's or at Castle?"

"Let me inspire your renewed patience for an instant," said the Sub-Prior, "until I shall inspire"—

"What?" exclaimed the Abbot, observing him for the first time—"Our dear brother returned to us when his life was unchaper'd for I—may, laid not to a slave like me—stung up—thou hast my blessing. When this villain came to the gate scor'd by his own evil conscience, and crying out he had murdered thee, I thought that the pulse of our men this had fallen—ye more shall a life as precious be exposed to such risks as occur in this border country; no longer shall we beloved and revered of Heaven hold us low & staid in the church as that of a poor Sub-Prior—I will write by express to the Priorate for thy speedy removal and advancement."

"Nay, but let me understand," said the Sub-Prior; "did the villain say he had slain me?"

"That he had transfixed you," answered the Abbot, "is full even with his lance—but it seems he had taken an indifferent aim. But no sooner didst thou fall to the ground mortally gored, as he deemed, with his weapon, than our blessed Patroness appeared to him, so he availed"—

"I availed no such thing," said the prisoner, "I and a woman in white intercepted me, so I was about to smite the palest woman, for they are usually well head—she had a bald-pate on her head, with one touch of which she struck me from my horse, so I might strike down a child of four years old with as true mark—and then, like a sleeping head as she was, she awoke to me,

"Thank the holy head
That rode on thy horse;
So with this slender staff
I had smothered thee now."

I gathered myself up with fear and difficulty, threw myself on my knees, and came forth like a lamb to get myself hanged for a rogue."

"That story, blessed brother," said the Abbot to the Sub-Prior, "is what threw thee out with our blessed Patroness, that she herself became the guardian of thy path—Not since the days of our blessed founder hath she shown such grace to any one. All unwearily were we to hold spiritual exorcism over thee, and we pray thee to prepare for thy speedy removal to Abbotshirkirk."

"Alas! my lord and father," said the Sub-Prior, "you would spare my very soul. Under the seal of confession will I presently tell thee why I remove myself rather the belied sport of a spirit of another sort, than the protected favourite of the heavenly powers. But first let me ask this category once a question or two."

"Be so good," replied the Abbot—"but you shall not convince me that it is fitting you reside in this inferior office in the convent of Saint Mary."

"I would ask of this poor man," said Father Ruston, "for what purpose he warranted the thought of getting to death one who never did him evil?"

"Ay! but thou dost menace me with evil," said the ruffian, "and no one but a fool is supposed to see. Dost thou not remember what you said touching the Prince and Lord

James, and the black pool of Jefferies! Didst thou think me fool enough to wait till thou hadst betrayed me to the sack and the fork! There was small wisdom in that, methinks—as little as in coming hither to tell my own misdoings—I think the devil was in me when I took this road—I might have remembered the proverb, "Never Trust Scepter hand!"

"And it was woful for that—for that only hasty work of mine, uttered in a moment of impetuosity, and forgotten ere it was well spoken!" said Father Bontace.

"Ay! for that, and—for the loss of thy gold crucifix," said Clotilde of the Clitell.

"Gracious Heaven! and could the yellow metal—the glittering earth—so far obscure every sense of what is thereby represented!—Father Abbot, I pray, as a dear boon, you will deliver this guilty person to my mercy."

"Nay, brother," interposed the Sacristan, "to your doom, if you will, not to your mercy—Remember, we are not all equally favoured by our blessed Lady, nor is it likely that every drop in the Chalice will serve as a coat of proof when a lance is couched against it."

"For that very reason," said the Sub-Prior, "I would not that for my weakness and the weakness were to fill as full with Julius of Arundel, this man's master."

"Our Lady forbid!" said the Sacristan, "he is a second John the Apostle."

"With our revered father the Abbot's permission, then," said Father Bontace, "I desire this man be freed from his chains, and suffered to depart untried;—and here, friend," he added, giving him the golden crucifix, "is the image for which thou wert willing to stain thy hands with murder. View it well, and may it inspire thee with other and better thoughts than those which related to it as a place of refuge! Part with it, nevertheless, if thy conscience require, and get thee one of such more valiant than Haman shall have no share in any of the collections to which it gives rise. It was the bequest of a dear friend to me; but dearer service can it never do than that of winning a soul to Heaven."

The Brother, now freed from his chains, stood gazing alternately on the Sub-Prior, and on the golden crucifix. "By Saint Giles!" said he, "I understood ye not!—As ye give me

gold for smacking my face at thee, what would you give me to lend it at a bargain?"

"The Church," said the Sub-Prior, "will try the effect of her spiritual weapons to bring these stray sheep into the fold, and she employs the edge of the sword of Saint Peter."

"Ay, but," said she reflex, "they say the Frigate accompanie a little struggling and burning in old hosts of conscience and of sword. Don have ye trust, I owe you a life, and it may be I will not forget my debt."

The lady now came bustling in, dressed in her blue coat and bandoliers, and attended by two or three lackeys. "I have been a thought too late in waiting upon your returned lordship. I am grown somewhat fatter since the field of France, and my leathern coat slips not on so soon as it was wont; but the diamond is ready, and though, as I said, I have been somewhat late"—

Here her intended passenger walked gravely up to the officer's room, to his great amazement.

"You have been waiting somewhat late, lady," said he, "and I am greatly obligated to your buff-coat, and to the time you took to put it on. If the weather now had suited some quarter of an hour sooner, I had been out of the reach of spiritual grace; but as it is, I wish you good even, and a safe retirement out of your garment of damask, in which you have made the air of a lay in amaze."

Wrath was the lady with this engagement, and exclaimed in ire—"As it were not for the presence of the venerable Lord Alford, thou knowest"—

"Nay, no, thou wouldst try conclusions," said Charles of the Chivalry, "I will meet thee at day-break by Saint Mary's Well."

"Hardened wretch!" said Father Rostock; "art thou not this instant delivered from death, and dost thou at some remote thoughts of slaughter?"

"I will meet with thee ere it be long, thou knowest," said the lady, "and teach thee thine Oremus."

"I will meet thy cattle in a moonlight night before that day," said he of the Chivalry.

"I will have thee by the neck ere many morning, thou strong thief," answered the modest officer of the Church.

"Then art thyself as strong a thief as ever told," retorted

Christie, "and if the worst were sure falling on that list course of things, I might well hope to have things other, by force of those reversed ones."

"A rest of their office and a rest of mine," answered the latter, "a cord and a confidence, that is all there will have from us."

"Bless," said the Sub-Prior, observing that his brethren began to take more interest than was exactly decorous in this youngling heterodox justice and integrity, "I pray you both to depart—Master Fido, retire with your fatherhood, and trouble not the man whom we have dismissed—And thou, Christie, or whatever be thy name, take thy departure, and remember thou owest thy life to the Lord Abbot's democracy."

"Nay, as to that," answered Christie, "I judge that I owe it to your own; but impale it to whom ye list, I owe a life saving ye, and there it is an end." And whistling as he went, he left the apartment, spending as if he held the life which he had forfeited not worth further thanks.

"Upholsters owe to brutality!" said Father Heston; "and yet who knows but some better one may be under so rude an exterior?"

"Save a thief from the gallows," said the Sacristan—"you know the rest of the proverb, and admitting, as may Heaven grant, that our love and faith are safe from this outrageous knave, who shall loose our mind and our soul, our hands and our backs?"

"Nay, that will I, my brethren," said an aged monk, "Ah, brethren, you little know what may be made of a repentant sinner. In Abbot Ingilfrun's days—ay, and I remember them as it were yesterday—the freethinkers were the best welcome ones that came to Saint Mary's. Ay, they paid tolls of every drive that they brought over from the South, and because they were something lightly come by, I have known them make this take a seventh—that is, if their confessor knew his business—ye, when we saw from the tower a score of fat bellhops, in a drove of sheep coming down the valley, with two or three stout men-at-arms behind them with their glittering steel caps, and their black-jacks, and their long hammers, the good Lord Abbot Ingilfrun was wont to say—he was a merry man—There come the tithe of the spoilers of the Egyptians! Ay, and I have seen the famous John the Amstrong—a fair man he was and

a poorly, the more pity that lamp was ever lighted for him—I have seen him come into the Abbey-church with rings made of gold in his hands, and every hand made of nine English nobles, and he would go from chapel to chapel, and from image to image, and from altar to altar, on his knees—and leave here a tassel, and there a noble, till there was as little gold on his hands as on my head—you will find no such Border thieves now!"

"No truly, Brother Nicolas," answered the Abbot; "they are more apt to take my gold the Church has left, than to beguile or borrow any—and for cattle, borrow me if I think they care whether horses have fed on the meadows of Lancaster Abbey, or of Saint Mary's!"

"There is no good thing left to them," said Father Nicolas; "they are slain naught—ah, the thieves that I have seen!—each proper man! and as pitiful as proper, and as pious as proud!"

"It doth not biding of it, Brother Nicolas," said the Abbot; "and I will now dismiss you, my brethren, holding your meeting upon this new legislation concerning the danger of our monasterial Sub-Prior, instead of the attendance on the hosts this evening—Yet let the bells be duly rung for the oblation of the Eucharist without, and also that the service may give due possession.—And now, brothers, brethren! The officers will bestow on each a grace-cup and a morsel as ye pass the battery, for ye have been tormented and starved, and dangerous it is to fall asleep in such case with empty stomach."

"*Oratio agnus pacis mactatus, Domine revolvamini,*" replied the brethren, departing in their due order.

But the Sub-Prior remained behind, and falling on his knees before the Abbot, as he was about to withdraw, poured him to hear under the seal of confession the adventures of the day. The second Lord Abbot yawned, and would have alleged fatigue; but to Father Bostone, of all men, he was accustomed to show indifference in his religious duties. The confession, therefore, proceeded, in which Father Bostone told all the extraordinary circumstances which had befallen him during the journey. And being questioned by the Abbot, whether he was not conscious of any secret sin, through which he might have been subjected for a time to the delusions of evil spirits, the Sub-Prior admitted, with frank avowal, that he thought he

might have deserved such penance for having judged with unbiassed eyes of the report of Father Flally the Russian.

"Heaven," said the peasant, "may have been willing to mortify me, not only that he ran at pleasure upon a conventionalist, but that he had beings of a different, and, as we word it, supernatural class, but also to punish our pride of superior wisdom, or superior courage, or superior learning."

It is well said that virtue is its own reward; and I question if duty was ever more completely recompensed, than by the sentence which the reverend Abbot so unswingly yielded to the confession of the Sub-Prior. To find the object of his fear, shall we say, or of his envy, or of both, accusing himself of the very error with which he had so lately charged him, was a corroborator of the Abbot's judgment, a crushing of his pride, and an atoning of his fears. The sense of triumph, however, rather increased than diminished his natural god-bumness, and so for was Abbot Justine from being disposed to tyrannise over his Sub-Prior, in consequence of this discovery, that in his exhortation he honored somewhat indignantly heretofore the natural egotism of his own gratified vanity, and his timid reluctance to hurt the feelings of Father Easton.

"My brother," said he, in rebuke, "it cannot have escaped your judicious observation, that we have often declined our own judgment in favour of your opinion, even about those matters which most nearly concerned the community. Nevertheless, grieved would we be, could you think that we did this, either because we deemed our own opinion less pregnant, or our wit more shrewd, than that of our other brethren. For it was done exclusively to give our younger brethren, such as your much-revered self, my dearest brother, that courage which is necessary to a free deliverance of your opinion,—we oft-times sitting apart our proper judgment, that our brethren, and especially our dear brother the Sub-Prior, may be comforted and encouraged in proposing valiantly his own thoughts. Which our deference and humility may, in some sort, have professed in your case, most reverend brother, that self-opinion of parts and knowledge, which hath led unfortunately to your over-estimating your own freedom, and thereby subjecting yourself as it had too visible, to the jokes and machinations of evil spirits. For it is known that Heaven always holds us in the least esteem when we deem of ourselves most highly; and also, on the other hand, it may be that we

have somewhat departed from what became our high seat in this Abbey, in suffering ourselves to be too much guided, and even, as it were, controlled, by the voice of our inferior. "Wherefore," continued the Lord Abbot, "in both of us such faults shall and must be amended—you heretofore presenting him upon your gifts and several wishes, and I taking heed not so easily to relinquish mine own opinion for that of one lower in place and in office. Nevertheless, we would not that we should thereby lose the high advantage which we have derived, and may yet derive, from your wise counsels, which hath been so often recommended to us by our most Reverend Primate. Wherefore on affairs of high moment, we will call you to our presence as private, and listen to your opinion, which, if it shall agree with our own, we will deliver to the Chapter, as coming directly from ourselves; thus sparing you, dearest brother, that wearing victory which is so apt to engender spiritual pride, and avoiding ourselves the temptation of falling into that violent facility of opinion, whereby our office is lowered and our power (were that of consequence) rendered less important in the eyes of the community over which we preside."

Notwithstanding the high station which, as a rigid Catholic, Father Easton entertained of the moment of confession, as his Church calls it, there was some danger that a sense of the divisions might have stolen on him, when he heard his Superior, with such simple reasoning, lay out a little plan for availing himself of the Sub-Prior's wisdom and experience, while he should take the whole credit to himself. Yet his conscience immediately told him that he was right.

"I should have thought more," he reflected, "of the spiritual Superior, and less of the individual. I should have speedily made up my mind to the fault of my spiritual father, and done what I might to support his character, and, of course, to extend his utility among the brethren, as well as with others. The Abbot cannot be humbled, without the community being humbled in his person. Her bond is, that over all her children, especially over those called to places of distinction, she can diffuse those gifts which are necessary to render them illustrious."

Actuated by these sentiments, Father Easton freely assented to the charge which his Superior, even in that moment of authority, had rather intimated than made, and signified his humble acquiescence in any mode of communicating his counsel

which might be most agreeable to the Lord Abbot, and might best remove from himself all temptation to glory in his own wisdom. He then prayed the Reverend Father to assign him such passages as might best suit his offices, attending, at the same time, that he had already fasted the whole day.

"And it is thus I complete it," answered the Abbot, instead of giving him credit for his abstinence; "it is these very passages, fasts, and vigils, of which we complain, as tending only to generate sin and flames of vanity, which, ascending from the stomach into the head, do but puff us up with vanity and self-opinion. It is a most and becoming that mortals should mingle fasts and vigils, for some part of every community must fast, and young stomachs may best endure it. Besides, in these it elates wicked thoughts, and the desire of worldly delights. But, reverend brother, for those to fast who are dead and married to the world, as I and thou, is work of supererogation, and is but the matter of spiritual pride. Wherefore, I say: thou, most reverend brother, go to the botery, and drink two cups at least of good wine, eating with a comfortable morsel, such as may best suit thy taste and stomach. And in respect that thine opinion of thy own wisdom hath at times made thee less considerate to, and compassionate with, the weaker and less learned brethren, I say: thou, during the cold season, be chosen for thy companion our reverend brother Nicolas, and without interruption or impetuosity, to listen for a strict hour to his narrative concerning those things which befall in the house of our venerable predecessor, Abbot Hughson, on whom and may Heaven have mercy! And for such holy exercise as may further advantage your soul, and expiate the faults wherof you have contritely and humbly accused yourself guilty, we will prefer upon that matter, and announce our will unto you the next morning."

It was remarkable, that after this reasonable exhorting, the feelings of the worldly Abbot towards his adviser were much more kindly and friendly than when he denoted the *Solo-Præ* the impossible and infallible person, in whose garment of virtue and wisdom no flaw was to be detected. It seemed as if this avowal of his own imperfections had recommended Father Eustace to the friendship of the Superior, although at the same time this avowal of benevolence was attended with some circumstances, which, to a man of the *Solo-Præ's* natural devotion

of mind and temper, were more generous than even undergoing the legends of the drill and various Father Nictolas. For instance, the Abbot seldom mentioned him to the other monks, without deprecating him our beloved Brother Eustace, poor man! —and now and then he used to warn the younger brethren against the stains of vainglory and spiritual pride, which Eustace sets for the more rigidly righteous, with such hints and demonstrations as did all but expressly designate the Father-Free as one who had fallen at one time under such delusions. Upon these occasions, it required all the virtue education of a week, all the philosophical discipline of the schools, and all the patience of a Christian, to enable Father Eustace to endure the progress and perambulating parade of his lament, but somewhat thick-headed Superior. He began himself to be desirous of leaving the Monastery, or at least he manifestly declined to interfere with the others, in that mystical and authoritative manner which he had at first practised.

CHAPTER ELEVENTH.

You call this sleeping, do you not?
Why 'tis the slow march of a host of battalions
Before a sleeping drake. The great sea
Rears up at once, and poses a while to watch
A passing march! Then the drake goes forward,
While all the waves, the water, the configuration,
Fell on the wings of the ill-fated fugitive
That appears in the race,

Our Part

Two or three years glided on, during which the storm of the approaching reformation in church government blew over each dry leaf and mossy perfume. Owing to the circumstances which we have related in the end of the last chapter, the Father-Free Eustace appeared to have altered considerably his habits of life. He attended, as all extraordinary occasions, to the Abbot, whether privately, or in the assembled Chapter, the support of his wisdom and experience; but in his ordinary habits he seemed now to live more for himself, and less for the community, than had been his former practice.

He often absorbed himself for whole days from the convent, and in the adventure of Glendougl took deeply on his memory; he was repeatedly induced to visit that lovely tower, and to take an interest in the nuns who had their shelter under its roof. Besides, he felt a deep anxiety to know whether the volume which he had lost, when so strongly preserved from the hands of the marauders, had again found its way back to the Tower of Glendougl. "It was strange," he thought, "that a spirit," for such he could not help judging the being whose name he had heard, "should, on the one side, seek the advancement of learning, and, on the other, interpose to save the life of a zealous Catholic priest."

But from no inquiry which he made of the various inhabitants of the Tower of Glendougl could he learn that the copy of the translated Scriptures, for which he made such diligent inquiry, had again been seen by any of them.

In the meanwhile the good father's occasional visits were of no small consequence to Edward Glendougl and to Mary Arnold. The former displayed a power of apprehending and retaining whatever was taught him, which filled Father Easton with admiration. He was at once acute and industrious, short and accurate; one of those rare combinations of talent and industry which are seldom united.

It was the earnest desire of Father Easton that the excellent qualities thus early displayed by Edward should be dedicated to the service of the Church, to which he thought the youth's own consent might be easily obtained, as he was of a calm, contemplative, retired habit, and seemed to number knowledge as the principal object, and its enjoyment as the greatest pleasure, in life. As to the mother, the Abb-Prior had little doubt that, trained as she was to view the medals of Saint Mary's with such profound reverence, she would be but too happy in an opportunity of enrolling one of her sons in its honored community. But the good Father proved to be mistaken in both these particulars.

When he spoke to Elspeth Glendougl of that which a mother best loves to hear—the proficiency and abilities of her son—she listened with a delighted ear. But when Father Easton hinted at the duty of dedicating to the service of the Church, talents which seemed fitted to defend and adorn it, the same undaunted attempt to shift the subject; and when

pressed father, enlarged on her own incapacity, as a lone woman, to manage the fee, on the advantage which her neighbours of the township were often taking of her unprotected state, and on the wish she had that Edward might fill his father's place, remain in the tower, and close her eyes.

On such occasions the Sub-Prior would observe, that even on a worldly point of view the welfare of the family would be best secured by one of the sons entering into the community of Saint Mary's, as it was not to be supposed that he would fail to afford his family the important protection which he could then easily extend towards them. What could be a more glowing prospect than to see him high in honour! or what more sweet than to have the last duties rendered to her by a son revered for his holiness of life, and exemplary manners! Besides, he endeavored to impress upon the dams that her oldest son, Halbert, whose bold temper and headstrong independence of a wandering life rendered him incapable of learning, was, for that reason, as well as that he was her oldest born, fitted to break through the oblige of the world, and manage the little fee!

Hephth dared not directly dissent from what was proposed, for that of giving displeasure, and yet she always had something to say against it. Halbert, she said, was not like any of the neighbour boys—he was taller by the head, and stronger by the hand, than any boy of his years within the Haldoune. But he was fit for no peaceful work that could be done. If he liked a buck ill, he liked a plough or a cattle worse. He had covered his father's old broadsword—suspended it by a belt round his waist, and seldom stirred without it. He was a sweet boy and a gentle if spoken fair, but cross him, and he was a born devil. "In a word," she said, bursting into tears, "deprive me of Edward, good father, and ye have no house of joy and pillar; for my heart tells me that Halbert will take to his father's path, and die like father's death."

When the conversation came to this crisis, the good-humoured monk was always content to drop the discussion for the time, trusting some opportunity would occur of removing her prejudices, for such he thought them, against Edward's proposed destination.

When, leaving the mother, the Sub-Prior addressed himself to the son, answering his need for knowledge, and pushing out

how scruply it might be gratified should he agree to take holy orders, he found the same repugnance which Deane Elsworth had exhibited. Edward pleaded a want of sufficient vocation; he as serious a prejudice—his reluctance to leave his mother, and other objections, which the Abb-Prior treated as answers.

"I plainly perceive," he said one day, in answer to them, "that the devil has his factors as well as Heaven, and that they are equally, or, alas! the former are perhaps more active, in besetting for their master the fast of the market. I trust, young men, that neither idleness, nor dissipated pleasures, nor the love of worldly gain and worldly grandeur, the chief evils with which the great Father of souls converts his back, are the causes of your declining the career to which I would invite you. But there all I trust—there all I hope—that the vanity of superior knowledge—a sin with which those who have made proficiency in learning are most frequently beset—has not led you into the evil hazard of listening to the dangerous doctrine which we now speak concerning religion. Better for you, that you were as greatly ignorant as the beasts which perish, than that the pride of knowledge should induce you to lead us on to the ruins of heresy." Edward Glendinning listened to the rebuke with a dejected look, and failed not, when it was concluded, secretly to vindicate himself from the charge of having pushed his studies into any subjects which the Church prohibited, and so the monk was left to form vain conjectures respecting the cause of his reluctance to embrace the monastic state.

It is an old proverb, used by Chaucer, and quoted by Elizabeth, that "the greatest evils are not the wheat men;" and it is as true as if the poet had not alluded, or the queen reasoned on it. If Father Estace had not had his thoughts turned so much to the progress of heresy, and so little to what was passing in the tower, he might have read, in the speaking eyes of Mary Arundel, now a girl of fourteen or fifteen, reasons which might diminish her youthful aversion towards the monastic vows. I have said, that she also was a promising pupil of the good father, upon whom her innocent and infantine beauty had an effect of which he was himself, perhaps, unconscious. Her zeal and expectations entitled her to be taught the arts of reading and writing;—and such lessons which the monk assigned her was noted over in company with Edward, and by him ex-

phased and re-explained, and again illustrated, until she became perfectly mistress of it.

In the beginning of their studies, Halbert had been their school companion. But the boldness and independence of his disposition soon quarrelled with an occupation in which, without assiduity and undivided attention, no progress was to be expected. The Sirs Puce's visits were at irregular intervals, and often weeks would intervene between them, in which case Halbert was sure to forget all that had been prescribed for him to learn, and much which he had partly acquired before. His deficiencies on these occasions gave him pain, but it was not of that sort which produces amendment.

For a time, like all who are fond of science, he endeavoured to detach the attention of his brother and Mary Avenel from their task, rather than to learn his own, and such dialogue as the following would ensue:—

"Take your horses, Edward, and make haste—the Laird of Columbie is at the head of the glen with his hounds."

"I care not, Halbert," answered the younger brother; "two brace of dogs may kill a deer without my being there to see them, and I must help Mary Avenel with her lesson."

"Ay! you will labour at the master's lesson till you turn monk yourself," answered Halbert.—"Mary, will you go with me, and I will show you the master's man I told you of?"

"I cannot go with you, Halbert," answered Mary, "because I must study this lesson—it will take no long to learn it—I am sorry I am so dull, for if I could get my task as fast as Edward, I should like to go with you."

"Should you indeed?" said Halbert; "then I will wait for you—and, what is more, I will try to get my lesson also."

With a snuff and a sigh he took up the primer, and began heavily to run over the task which had been assigned him. As if banished from the society of the two sisters, he sat and read solitary in one of the deep window-recesses, and after in vain struggling with the diffusion of his task, and his dissipation to learn it, he found himself involuntarily engaged in watching the movements of the other two students, instead of toiling any longer.

The picture which Halbert looked upon was delightful in itself, but somehow or other it afforded very little pleasure to him. The beautiful girl, with looks of simple, yet earnest

society, was bent on discouraging those interests which obstructed her progress to knowledge, and looking over and even to Edward for assistance, while, seated close by her side, and watchful to remove every obstacle from her way, he seemed at once to be proud of the progress which his pupil made, and of the assistance which he was able to render her. There was a bond between them, a strong and interesting tie, the desire of clearing knowledge, the pain of surmounting difficulties.

Feeling most acutely, yet agonised of the entire and source of his own emotions, Halbert could no longer endure to look upon this quiet scene, but, starting up, dashed his back from him, and exclaimed aloud, "To the fond I beguile all books, and the discourse that make them!—I would a score of Shakespeares would come up the glen, and we should learn how little all this nothing and nothing is worth."

Mary Arnold and his brother started, and looked at Halbert with surprise, while he went on with great animation, his letters swelling, and the tears starting into his eyes as he spoke.—"Yes, Mary—I wish a score of Shakespeares came up the glen this very day, and you should see one good head, and one good sword, do more to protect you, than all the books that were ever opened, and all the pens that ever grew on a pen-wick was."

Mary looked a little surprised and a little frightened at his volubility, but instantly replied affectionately, "You are wroth, Halbert, because you do not get your lesson so fast as Edward can; and so am I, for I am as stupid as you.—But come, and Edward shall at least teach us and teach us."

"He shall not teach us," still Halbert, in the same angry mood; "I never can teach him to do any thing that is honourable and manly, and he shall not teach us any of his monstrous tricks.—I hate the monks, with their dwelling round tons like so many frogs, and their long black petticoats like so many women, and their reverences, and their brotherships, and their lady-waives that do nothing but peddle in the mire with plough and harrow from Yale to Middlesex. I will call none lord, but him who wears a sword to make his table good; and I will call none man, but him that can bear himself manlike and masterful."

"For Heaven's sake, peace, brother!" said Edward; "if such words were taken up and reported out of the house, they would be our mother's ruin."

"Report them yourself, then, and they will be your making, and nobody's marring save mine own. Say that Halbert Glendinning will never be valed to an old man with a coal and shaver upon him, while there are twenty lads who wear crapes and pines that look bold fellows— Let them grant you those wretched acres, and much more may they bear you to make your brother." He left the room hastily, but instantly returned, and continued to speak with the same tone of quick and veiled feeling. "And you need not think so much, either of you, and especially you, Edward, need not think so much of your parchment book there, and your counting in reading it. By my faith, I will soon learn to read as well as you; and—for I know a better teacher than your grim old monk, and a better book than his pointed inventory, and since you like scholasticism so well, Mary Anne, you shall see whether Edward or I have most of it." He left the apartment, and came not again.

"What can be the matter with him?" said Mary, following Halbert with her eyes from the window, as with heavy and unequal steps he ran up the wild glen—"Where can your brother be going, Edward?—what lack?—what teacher does he talk of?"

"It avails not guessing," said Edward. "Halbert is angry, he knows not why, and speaks of he knows not what; let us go again to our lessons, and he will come home when he has tired himself with scrambling among the crags as usual."

But Mary's anxiety on account of Halbert seemed more deeply rooted. She declined prosecuting the task in which they had been so pleasantly engaged, under the cover of a bookcase; nor could Edward prevail upon her to resume it again that morning.

Meanwhile Halbert, his head unbowed, his features swollen with jealous anger, and the tear still in his eye, sped up the wild and upper extremity of the little valley of Glendinning with the speed of a rocket, viewing, as if in desperate defiance of the difficulties of the way, the wildest and most dangerous paths, and voluntarily exposing himself a hundred times to dangers which he might have escaped by turning a little aside from them. It seemed as if he wished his course to be as straight as that of the arrow to its mark.

He arrived at length in a narrow and secluded dale, or deep ravine, which ran down into the valley, and contributed a scanty

rivalled to the supply of the brook with which Glendary is watered. Up then he sped with the same precipitate haste which had marked his departure from the tower, nor did he pause and look around until he had reached the fountain from which the rivulet had its rise.

Here Halbert stopped short, and cast a glance, and almost a frightened glance around him. A large rock rose in front, from a cleft of which grew a wild holly-tree, whose dark green branches rustled over the spring which issues beneath. The leaves on either hand rose so high, and approached each other so closely, that it was only when the sun was at its meridian height, and during the summer solstice, that its rays could reach the bottom of the chasm in which he stood. But it was now autumn, and the leaves were gone, so that the inverted reflection of the sun was dancing on the polished fountain.

"It is the sun and the hour," said Halbert to himself; "and now I—I might even become what thou Edward with all his power! Mary should see whether he shines in fit to be consulted, and to sit by her side, and hang over her as she reads, and point out every word and every letter. And she loves me better than her—I am sure she does—for she comes of noble blood, and wears cloth and arvelion.—And do I myself not stand here clothed and crowned as my peers of them all?—Why should I fear to roll upon this slope—the slope!—Already have I restored the vase, and why not again? What can it do to me, who am a man of life and limb, and have by my side my father's sword? Does my heart beat—do my limbs tremble, at the thought of calling up a painted shadow, and how should I fear a host of Southrons in death and blood? By the soul of the first Glendary, I will make proof of the shame!"

He cast the leatheren bagges or books from his right foot, planted himself in a firm posture, unsheathed his sword, and first looking around to collect his resolution, he bowed three times deliberately towards the holly-tree, and as often to the little fountain, repeating at the same time, with a determined voice, the following rhyme:—

"Three to the holly tree—

Three to the well—

I bid thee awake,

Wake Maid of Aired!

Three glances on the lake—

Three glances on the Fell—

Wake thou, O wake,

Wake Maid of Aired!"

These lines were hardly uttered, when there stood the figure

of a female clothed in white, within three steps of Halbert Glendinning.

"I guess 'twas destined there to see
A lady richly clad as she—
Beautiful exceedingly."

"Glenrhyen Chronicle."

CHAPTER TWELFTH.

There's something in that radiant apparition,
Which, woe it is, our duty leaves.
The spring that, with its thousand crystal bubbles,
Droops from the bosom of some desert rock,
Is never still, but, ever well, is done'd
The hand of something pure, more refined,
And nobler than ourselves.

OUR PLAY.

Yours Halbert Glendinning had scarcely pronounced the apostolic rhythm, then, as we have mentioned in the conclusion of the last chapter, an appearance, as of a beautiful female, dressed in white, stood within two paces of him. His terror for the moment overcame his natural courage, as well as the strong resolution which he had formed, that the figure which he had now twice seen should not a third time desert him. But it would soon; there is something thrilling and abhorrent to flesh and blood in the circumstances that we stand in presence of a being in form like to ourselves, but so different in faculties and nature, that we can neither understand its purposes, nor calculate its means of pursuing them.

Halbert stood silent and gaped for breath, his hair erecting themselves on his head—his mouth open—his eyes fixed, and, on the side remaining sign of his late determined purpose, his sword pointed towards the apparition. At length, with a voice of ineffable sweetness, the White Lady, for by that name we shall designate this being, sang, or rather chanted, the following lines:—

"Yeeds of the dark eye, whither didst thou call me?
Whither art thou gone, if leave me yeel thee?"

In that world to dwell with us must know no fear nor falling;
 To counsel and cheer our speech is death, our gifts are unavailing
 The leaves that brought us hither are, most woe Egyptian ground,
 The deeps about which I ride for Araby's reward;
 The lady dead is drifting by, the leaves apls for my flag,
 For I must sail a thousand miles before the close of day."

The astonishment of Herbert began once more to give way to his resolution, and he gained voice enough to say, though with a shivering accent, "In the name of God, what art thou?" The answer was in melody of a different tone and measure:—

"What I am I need not shew—
 What I am thou wouldst not know—
 Something beyond heaven and hell—
 Something that neither thou nor I—
 Something that through thy wit or will
 May work thee good—may work thee ill.
 Neither substance calls me shadow,
 Nor King loudly near and meek,
 Daring by the damask spring,
 Riding on the white-roof's wing,
 A play to fastidious ladies
 Ruddy cheeks of woman's passion,
 With all our faces which they see,
 Like shadows from the mirror's glass
 Wayward, little is our need,
 Hearing harlot's loud and good,
 Happier than lord-lord men,
 Living freely than his spee;
 Far less happy, for we have
 Half our hope beyond the grave;
 One reason to joy or sorrow;
 One the sleep that knows no more,
 This is all that I can show—
 This is all that thou mayst know."

The White Lady passed, and appeared to speak no answer; but, as Herbert hesitated how to frame his speech, the vision opened gradually to him, and became more and more apparent. Justly guessing this to be a symptom of her disappearance, Herbert compelled himself to say:—"Lady, when I saw you in the glass, and when you brought back the black back of Mary of Aram, thou didst say I should one day learn to read it."

The White Lady replied,

"Ay! and I taught thee the word and the spell,
 To make me true by the Father's Will;

But thou hast loved the barren and the bleak,
 More than to seek my haunted walk;
 And thou hast loved the faint and the unseen,
 More than good taste and holy word;
 And thou hast loved the dear to look,
 More than the face and the better blood;
 And thou art a master of mine and of word,
 And dost control the picture of gentle blood."

"I will do as no longer, thy wishes," said Herbert; "I desire to learn; and thou dost provide me, that when I do so desire, thou wouldst be my helper; I am no longer afraid of thy presence, and I am no longer suspicious of instruction." As he uttered these words, the figure of the White Madonna grew gradually so distinct as it had been at first; and what had well-nigh faded into an ill-defined and colorless shadow, now assumed an appearance at least of unusual consistency, although the hues were less vivid, and the outline of the figure less distinct and defined—as at least it seemed to Herbert—than those of an ordinary idealist of the north. "Will thou grant my request," he said, "tho Lady, and give to my longing the lady look, while Mary of Arvel has as often wept for?"

The White Lady replied:

"Thy sorrow has my heart moved,
 Thine offered my trust, moved;
 Be that crown to harbor him,
 That deep without, or least the gate,
 There is a star for those who's here;
 Be his own vision, be mine to see;
 Valiant and constant close
 One being thus back the chance that's down."

"If I have been a better, Lady," answered young Glenelagh, "thou shalt now find me willing to prove forested with double speed. Other thoughts have filled my mind, other thoughts have engaged my heart, within a brief period—and, by heaven, other occupations shall hereforward fill up my time. I have lived as this day the space of years—I come father a boy—I will retain a man—a man, such as may converse not only with his own kind, but with whatever God permits to be visible to him. I will learn the contents of that mysterious volume—I will learn why the Lady of Arvel loved it—why the priests loved, and would have stolen it—why thou dost never receive it from their hands. What mystery is

went in it—*Speak, I require thee!*" The lady assumed an air particularly sad and solemn, on dropping her head, and folding her arms on her bosom, she replied:

"Within that awful volume lies	To read, to hear, to hope, to pray,
The mystery of existence!	To lift the dark, and drive the fog,
Happy they of human race,	And better had they ne'er been born,
To whom God has granted grace	Whom it should, as well to serve."

"Give me the volume, Lady," said young Glendinning—"They call me idle—they call me dull—in this pursuit my industry shall not fail, nor, with God's blessing, shall my understanding. Give me the volume." The apparition again replied:

"Many a hollow dash and clasp
I have held the book to sleep,
Edged firm around it glowing—
Edged strong over flowing—
The sacred pledge of man's
All things within,
Look to his vision,
How many for whom 'twas giv'n
Lost thy hand, and thus shall eye
Things ne'er seen by mortal eye."

Herbert Glendinning boldly reached his hand to the White Lady.

"Forsake them to go with me!" she said, as his hand trembled at the soft and cold touch of her own—

"Forsake them to go with me!
Still it is best to them
A promise to death,
Thou sayest drive the dull away,
And chase the King's fear,
But never more shalt thou
This haunted wall."

"If what thou sayest be true," said the undaunted boy, "my doubts are lighter than blue eyes. There shall be neither wall nor wind which I dare not visit. No fear of night, natural or supernatural, shall bar my path through my native valley."

He had scarce uttered the words, when they both descended through the earth with a rapidity which took away Herbert's breath and every other sensation, saving that of being hurried on with the utmost velocity. At length they stopped with a

dark as sudden, that the mortal journeyer through this unknown space must have been thrown down with violence, had he not been upheld by his supernatural companions.

It was more than a minute, ere, having ascended him, he beheld a grotto, or natural cavern, composed of the most splendid spars and crystals, which reflected in a thousand points the light of a brilliant flame that glowed on an altar of diamonds. This altar, with its fire, formed the central point of the grotto, which was of a round form, and very high in the roof, resembling in some respects the dome of a cathedral. Corresponding to the four points of the compass, there went off four long galleries, or avenues, constructed of the same brilliant materials with the dome itself, and the termination of which was lost in darkness.

No human imagination can conceive, or words suffice to describe, the glorious splendor which, shot fiercely forth by the flame, was reflected from so many beveled, diamond points of reflection, shewn by the sparry pillars and their numerous angular crystals. The fire itself did not remain steady and unmoved, but rose and fell, sometimes ascending in a brilliant pyramid of condensed flames half-way up the lofty apse, and again falling into a softer and more vapory form, and hovering, as it were, in the vicinity of the altar to reflect its strength by another powerful action. There was no visible fuel by which it was fed, nor did it emit either smoke or vapour of any kind.

What was of all the most remarkable, the black volcano on either side of the altar lay not only unquenched, but extended in the slightest degree, until the intensity of fire, which, while it seemed to be of force sufficient to melt diamond, had no effect whatever on the mineral rock thus subjected to its intense influence.

The White Lady, having passed long enough to let young Glenlaming take a complete survey of what was around him, now said in her usual slow,

"How like the volcano thou lately hast sought;
Track it, and take it,—'twill surely be brought!"

Encouraged in some degree with marriage, and desperately desirous of showing the courage he had boasted, Glenlaming plunged his hand, without hesitation, into the flame, trusting to the rigidity of the motion, to snatch out the volcano before the fire could greatly affect him. But he was much disap-

potated. The flame instantly caught upon his sleeve, and though he withdrew his hand immediately, yet his arm was so dreadfully scorched, that he had well-nigh succumbed with pain. He suppressed the natural expressions of anguish, however, and only indicated the agony which he felt by a convulsion and a muttered groan. The White Lady passed her cold hand over his arm, and, ere she had finished the following mystical chant, his pain had entirely gone, and no mark of the scorching was visible:—

"Back thy deed,
Mortal woe!
To heavenly flames applying;
Healer wert
Ere thing of deed,
On his own woe words relying;
Help thou of such danger told,
Help, and prove thy luck again."

Obedient to what he understood to be the meaning of his redresser, Halbert bared his arm, to the shoulder, throwing down the mantle of his sleeve, which no longer touched the foot on which he stood than it collected itself together, shrouded itself up, and was without any visible fire reduced to light tinder, which a sudden breath of wind dispersed into empty space. The White Lady, observing the surprise of the youth, immediately repeated:—

"Mortal woe and mortal woe,
Cannot break this charmed roof;
All that mortal art hath wrought,
In our cell returns to naught,
The million gold returns to clay,
The petal'd flower melts away;
All is earth, all is fire,
Sought stands that but truth alone.
Not he that thy words gives o'er;
Grieve! prove thy doom can move."

Indebted by her words, Halbert Glendinning made a second effort, and, plunging his bare arm into the flame, took out the scathed volume without feeling either heat or inconvenience of any kind. Astonished, and almost terrified at his own success, he beheld the flame collect itself, and shoot up into one long and dead stream, which seemed as if it would ascend to the very roof of the cavern, and then, sinking so

calmly, became totally extinguished. The deepest darkness ensued; but Halbert had no time to consider his situation, for the White Lady had already caught his hand, and they ascended to upper air with the same velocity with which they had sunk into the earth.

They stood by the fountain in the Ocean-savannah when they emerged from the bowels of the earth; but on seeing a hundred gleams around him, the youth was surprised to observe that the shadows had fallen far to the east, and that the day was well-nigh spent. He gazed on his mediocrity for explanation, but her figure began to fade before his eyes—her cheeks grew paler, her features less distinct, her form became shadowy, and blended itself with the mist which was ascending the hollow vortex. What had lost the symmetry of form, and the delicate, yet clear lines of feminine beauty, now resembled the fitting and pale ghost of some maiden who has died for love, as it is seen indistinctly and by moonlight, by her pined love.

"Stay, spirit!" said the youth, indignant by his success in the supernatural chase, "thy kindness must not leave me, no one armed with a weapon he knows not how to wield. Thou must teach me the art to read and to understand this volume; else what avails it me that I possess it?"

But the figure of the White Lady still waned before his eye, until it became as evanescent as pale and indistinct as that of the moon when the winter morning is far advanced, and ere she had ended the following chant, she was entirely invisible:—

"Alas! alas!
Not even the grave
Thine holy characters in stone;
His bones of painted wax,
Not so as a grave to share
The lone bestow'd on Adam's tomb
With patient love,
Thou wilt provide
The fitting time, the fitting guide."

The form was already gone, and now the voice itself had melted away in melancholy sadness, softening, as if the Being who spoke had been slowly wafted from the spot where she had commenced her melody.

It was at this moment that Halbert felt the extremity of the terror which he had hitherto so manfully suppressed. The very

necessity of existence had given him spirit to make it, and the presence of the mysterious Being, while it was a subject of fear to itself, had nevertheless given him the sense of protection being near to him. It was when he could reflect with composure on what had passed, that a cold tremor shot across his limbs, his hair bristled, and he was almost to look around lest he should find at his elbow something more frightful than the first vision. A horror arising suddenly realised the fanciful and wild idea of the most imaginations of our modern poets:—

It fear'd his shock, it robed his hair,
Like a meadow gale in spring;
It shaghtle strongly with his form,
Till it felt like a welcoming.

The youth stood silent and astonished for a few minutes. It seemed to him that the extraordinary Being he had seen, half his terror, half his protection, was still hovering on the gale which swept past him, and that she might again make herself visible to his organs of sight. "Speak!" he said, wildly waving his arms, "speak yet again—he once more possess, kindly thine!—thine have I now upon thee, yet the idea of thy invisible presence around or beside me, makes my heart beat faster than if the earth yawned and gave up a demon."

But neither sound nor appearance indicated the presence of the White Lady, and nothing supernatural beyond what he had already witnessed, was again visible or visible. Embarrassed, in the meanwhile, by the very emotion of again meeting the presence of this mysterious Being, had recovered his natural velocity. He looked around once more, and resumed his solitary path down the valley into whose recesses he had penetrated.

Nothing could be more strongly contrasted than the scene of passion with which he had bounded over stock and stag, in order to plunge himself into the *Correspondence*, and the altered mood in which he now returned homeward, industriously seeking out the most practicable path, not from a wish to avoid danger, but that he might not by parental and distrust his attention, deeply fixed on the extraordinary scenes which he had witnessed. In the former case, he had sought by hurried and bodily exertion to indulge at once the fiery exultation of

* *Coleridge.*

passion, and to banish the cares of the world from his recollections, while now he studiously avoided all interruption to his contemplative walk, lest the difficulty of the way should interfere with, or distract, his own deep reflections. Thus slowly passing forth his course, with the air of a pilgrim rather than of a deer-hunter, Halbert stood the close of the evening resigned to his paternal tower.

CHAPTER THIRTEENTH.

*The Miller was of merry make,
 To meet him was no error;
 There drest in his own skin he rode,
 Was called in their parts,
 Queen's Kins or was better.*

It was after sunset, as we have already stated, when Halbert Glendinning returned to the shade of his father. The hour of dinner was at noon, and that of supper about an hour after sunset at this period of the year. The former had passed without Halbert's appearing; but this was no uncommon circumstance, for the chase, or any other pastime which occurred, made Halbert a frequent neglecter of hours, and his mother, though angry and disappointed when she saw him not at table, was so much accustomed to his occasional absence, and knew so little how to teach him more regularity, that a torty observation was almost all the censure with which such occasions were visited.

On the present occasion, however, the wrath of good Dame Elsiebeth soared higher than usual. It was not merely on account of the speared boy's head and trappings, the baggage and the idle notions, with which her table was set forth, but also because of the arrival of no less a person than Rob Miller, as he was universally termed, though the man's name was Happer.

The object of the Miller's visit to the Tower of Glendinning was like the purpose of those enthusiasts whose potestates send to each other's courts, partly celestial, partly politic. In outward show, Rob came to visit his friends of the Haldons, and share the festivity common among country folk, after the burn-

yard has been filled, and to renew old intimacies by new accessibility. But in very truth he also came to have an eye upon the questions of such stock, and to obtain such information respecting the extent of the crop raised and gathered in by such means, as might prevent the possibility of abstracted culture.

All the world knows that the cultivators of such luxury or regality, composed or specified, as Swedenborg, are obliged to keep their eyes to be guided at the mill of the territory, in which they pay a heavy charge, called the values weakness. I could speak to the things of course at other too, but let that pass. I have not enough to interest that I talk not without look. Those of the Swedenborg, or cultivated ground, were inside in perception, of devoting from this things (as Swedenborg), they carried their gaze to another mill. Now with another mill, erected on the bank of a big house, lay within a tempting and convenient distance of Glastonbury; and the Miller was so obliging and his charges so moderate, that it required Nath Miller's stout vigilance to prevent encroachments of his right of monopoly.

The most affected means he could derive was the share of good fellowship and neighborly friendship,—under colour of which he made his annual cruise through the barney—quartered every cornstack, and compared its contents by the toll, so that he could give a stored last afterwards whether or not the grain came to the right mill.

Diana Elgath, like her company, was obliged to take these boundary runs in the name of politeness; but in her case they had not occurred since her husband's death, probably because the Tower of Glastonbury was distant, and there was but a trifling quantity of arable or hybrid land attached to it. This year there had been, upon some operations of old Martin's, several holes torn in the midfield, which, the season being dry, had exposed remarkably well. Perhaps this circumstance contained the hint Miller's including Glastonbury, on this occasion, in his annual round.

Diana Glastonbury returned with pleasure a visit which she used formerly only to endure with patience; and she had changed her view of the matter chiefly, if not entirely, because Nath had brought with him his daughter Myra, of whose features she could give no slight account, but whose dress she had described so accurately to the Sub-Prætor.

Eligible this girl had been an object of very trifling con-

Education by the eyes of the good widow ; but the Bob-Fraser's particular and acute but mysterious suspicion had set her brains to work on the subject of Myra of the Mill, and she had here asked a broad question, and there she had thrown out an innuendo, and there again she had gradually led on to a conversation on the subject of poor Myra. And from all inquiries and investigations she had collected, that Myra was a dark-eyed laughter-loving wench, with cherry-cheeks, and a skin as white as her father's finest boiled trout, out of which was made the Abbot's own waist-bread. For her temper, she sang and laughed from morning to night, and for her fortune, a paternal stroke, besides that which the Miller might have derived by means of his paternal golden flax, Myra was to inherit a good handsome lump of land, with a prospect of the mill and mill-arns descending to her husband on no very long, if a fair wind were spoken in season to the Abbot, and to the Prior, and to the Bob-Fraser, and to the baroness, and so forth.

By turning and again turning these advantages over in her own mind, Maypole at length came to be of opinion, that the only way to save her son Halbert from a life of "spun, spun, and snuff," as they called that of the border-riders, from the dust of a dragoon's shaft, or the leap of an hawk-coot, was, that he should marry and settle, and that Myra Happer should be his destined bride.

As if to her wish, Bob Miller arrived on his strong-bulk mare, bearing on a pillow behind him the lovely Myra, with cheeks like a peep-out (if Dame Glendinning had ever seen one) white all about with rustic roquetry, and a profusion of hair as black as sheep. The bewitch which Dame Glendinning had been helping forth in her imagination, became unexpectedly realized in the bosom form of Myra Happer, whom, in the course of half-an-hour, she settled upon as the maiden who was to be the mother and mistress of Halbert. True, Myra, as the dame soon saw, was like to lose herself round a Maypole as well as managing a domestic establishment, and Halbert was like to break more heads than he would guard studs of none. But then a miller should always be of steady make, and has been described so often the days of Chaucer and James I.* Indeed,

* This verse we have chosen for a motto to this chapter to form a poem inspired by James I. of Scotland. As for the Miller who figures among the Chaucerian pilgrims, besides his round and bushy, he looked after all

to be able to outdo and bully the whole nation (and more we use this barbarous phrase), in all athletic exercises, was one way to render any the collection of them which men would have disputed with a less formidable champion. Then, as to the delinquences of the miller's wife, the same was of opinion that they might be supplied by the activity of the miller's mother. "I will keep house for the young folk myself, for the tower is grown very lonely," thought Dame Glendinning, "and to live near the kirk will be much comfortable in my old age—and then Edward may agree with his brother about the fee, more especially as he is a favourite with the Sub-Prior, and then he may live in the mill tower like his worthy father before him—and who knows but Mary Armet, high-blood as she is, may e'en drive in her stool to the chimney-stack, and sit down here for good and a'!—It's true she has no father, but the like of her for beauty and some wifery crossed my own; and I have heard every wench in the Haldanes of Saint Mary's—ay, and their mothers that bore them—ay, she is a sweet and a lovely creature as ever laid stool over brown hair—ay, and then, though her uncle keeps her out of her sin for the present time, yet it is to be thought the grey-pose shaft will find a hole in her coat of proof, as, God help us! it has done in many a better man's—And, moreover, if they should stand on their pedigree and gentle race, Edward might say to them, that is, to her gentle kith and kin, 'While e' ye was her best friend, when she came down the glen to Glendinning in a misty evening, on a horse such like a coward than ought she'd!—And if they tax him with churl's blood, Edward might say, that, *dearly* the old proverb, *how*

*Churls dead
Make gentle bold;*

yet, moreover, there comes no churl's blood from Glendinning or Dryden; for, says Edward!—"

truce, all of which, but especially the last, shows that he relied more on the strength of the outside than that of the inside of his shield.

The miller was it dead and for the cause,
Puffing for men of letters, and also of horses;
That proved weak, for whatsoever he ran,
As whodunnits were how away the man;
He was dark slacker's blood, a thick green
There's no use then that he will leave of her,
On blood it is a running with the crowd, etc.

The honest voice of the Miller at this moment recalled the dance from her reverie, and compelled her to remember that if she meant to realise her very wish, she must begin by laying the foundation in civility to her guest and his daughter, whom she was at that moment most strongly neglecting, though her whole plan turned on constituting their lovers and good spirits, and that, in fact, while arranging matters for an intimate & union with her company, she was suffering them to sit unattended, and in their rising gear, as it were to resume their journey. "And as I say, dance," concluded the Miller (for she had not marked the beginning of his speech), "as ye be as bairns with your boninage, or ought else, why, Myself and I will not our way down the glae again to Johnnie Brownie's, who pressed us right kindly to bide with him."

Starting at once from her dream of marriage and intermarriages, with, milkmaids, and barons, Dame Elspeth set for a moment like the milk-maid in the field, when she crosses the plough, on the contents of which so many golden dreams were founded. But the foundation of Dame Glendinning's hopes was only tottering, not overthrown, and she busied to restore its equilibrium. Instead of attempting to account for her absence of mind and want of attention to her guests, which she might have found something difficult, she assumed the offensive. She on this ground when he made it necessary, by a bold attack, to disguise his weakness.

A loud exclamation she made, and a passionate complaint she set up against the wickedness of her old friend, who could for an instant doubt the heartiness of her welcome to him and to his hopeful daughter; and then to think of his going back to John Brownie's, when the mill tower stood where it did, and had room in it for a friend or two in the worst of times—and to be too a neighbour that his unquenchable gossip flame, blazed by his cast, used to think the best friend he had in the Haldenss! And on the next trying her complaint with as much seriousness, that she had wellnigh proposed on herself as well as upon Elspeth Miller, who had no need to take anything in disguise; and as it suited her plans to pass the night at Glendinning, would have been equally contented to do so, even had her reception been less vehemently hospitable.

To all Elspeth's expostulations on the wickedness of her proposal to leave her dwelling, he answered composedly, "Nay,

dance, what could I tell! ye might have had other grief to grieve, for ye looked as if ye scarce saw us,—or what know I! ye might have in mind the woe Martin and I had about the last barley ye sowed—for I saw dry millstone* will sometimes stick in the throat. A man needs but his eyes, and yet folk shall hold him for both miller and miller's man, that is miller and knave;† all the country over."

"Alas, that you will say so, neighbour Rob," said Dame Kyngh. "ye that Martin should have had my words with you about the mill-stone! I will chide him soundly for it, I promise you, on the faith of a true widow. You know full well that a true woman is sure put upon by her servants."

"Nay, dame," said the miller, unbuttoning the broad belt which made fast his cloak, and spread, at the same time, to reveal by his side a strange Andrea Fornas, "hear so grudge at Martin, for I hear none—I take it to be me as a thing of mine office, to maintain my right of millers, look and grapple;‡ And manna good, for so the old song says,

I live by my mill, God bless her,
That pound, chide, and wile.

The poor old slut, I am beholden to her for my living, and bound to stand by her, as I say to my self knave, so right and so wrong. And so should every honest fellow stand by his loved-woman—And so, Kyngh, ye may doff your cloak since our neighbour is so kindly glad to see us—why, I think we are as blithe to see her—not one in the Midlands pays their millers more duty, caputs, sayings, and savings, and mill-covers, seed and weed."

With that the miller hung his simple cloak without further ceremony upon a large pair of stag's antlers, which adorned a

* Dry millstone was a fine, or compensation in money, for not grinding at the mill of the lord. It was and is considered a wretched service.

† The older miller is in the language of rhinogs, called the knave, which, indeed, signified originally his knave (*Knave*—German), but by degrees came to be taken in a worse sense. In the old translation of the Bible, Paul is made to turn himself the knave of our brethren. The difference of word taken by the miller's servant was called *knavehood*.

‡ The miller was the regular master for grinding the corn. The loaf, signifying a small quantity, and the grapple, a handful, were traditional proportions demanded by the miller, and estimated to or raised by the *thickster* or *thicksteress* provided. These and other petty dues were called to ground the *caput*.

near the walled walls of the tower, and moved for what we vulgarly call clock-pieces.

In the meantime Dame Elipeth insisted to disfigure her the daisied, whom she destined for her future daughter-in-law, of her head, mantle, and the rest of her rising gear, giving her to appear as becometh the barren daughter of the wedding flatter, gay and gaudy, in a white kirtle, the seams of which were embroidered with green silken lace or fringe, interspersed with some silver thread. An ancient glance did Elipeth cast upon the good-humoured face, which was now more fully shown to her, and was only obscured by a quantity of raven black hair, which the maid of the mill had retained by a snood of green silk, embroidered with silver, corresponding to the trimmings of her kirtle. The countenance itself was exceedingly comely—the eyes black, large, and regally good-humoured—the mouth was small—the lips well formed, though somewhat full—the teeth were partly white—and the chin had a very pleasing dipple in it. The nose belonging to this joyous face was full and round, and firm and fair. It might become coarse and masculine some years hence, which is the common fate of English beauty; but in Elipeth's sixteenth year she had the shape of a Helen. The anxious Elipeth, with all her maternal partiality, could not help admiring within herself, that a better man than Halbert might go further and live wiser. She looked a little glibly, and Halbert was not wiser; still it was true he should be settled, for to that point the dance always returned, and here was an excellent opportunity.

The simple meaning of Dame Elipeth now exhausted itself in commendations of her hair gown, from the snood, as they say, to the single-sided shoe. Myrie listened and blushed with pleasure for the first five minutes, but ere ten had elapsed, she began to view the old lady's compliments rather as evidence of wit, than of vanity, and was much more disposed to laugh at them to be flattered with them, for Nature had mingled the good-humour with which she had endowed the daisied with an equal portion of shrewdness. Even Dick himself began to tire of hearing his daughter's praises, and broke in, with, "Ay, ay, she is a clever queen enough, and were she five years older, she shall lay a knotted sock on an ear" with *et cetera* in the Halibone. But I have been looking for your two sons, dame.

"*Dear*—properly a horse of colour.

"Now say directly that Halbert's turned a wild springald, and that we may have word of him from Waterford one moon-light night or another."

"God forbid, my good neighbour; God, in his mercy, forbid!" said Dame Glendinning earnestly; for it was tantamount to the very hypothesis of her apprehensions to hint any probability that Halbert might become one of the marauders so common in the age and country. But, fearful of having betrayed too much alarm on this subject, she immediately added, "That though, since the last rout at Pinkesham, she had been all of a tremble when a gun or a spot was raised, or when even spoke of fighting; yet, thanks to God and our Lady, her own were like to live and she honest and peaceful tenants to the Abbey, as their father might have done, but for that evil hosting which he went forth to with many a brave man that never returned."

"Ye need not tell me of it, dame," said the Miller, "since I was there myself, and made two pair of legs (and these were not mine, but my mare's) worth one pair of hands. I judged how it would be when I saw our host break ranks, with rushing on through that broken ploughed field, and so as they had made a prisoner of me, I was pricked off with myself while the play was good."

"Ay, ay, neighbour," said the dame, "ye were eye a wiso and a wary man; if my Simon had had your wit, he might have been here to speak about it this day, but he was eye cracking of his good blood and his high blooded, and less would not serve him then to hide the bang to the last, with the arch, and knights, and esquires, that had no wives to greet for them, or else had wives that could not have soon they were widows; but that is not for the like of us. But, touching my son Halbert, there is no fear of him; for if it should be his misfortune to be in the life case, he has the best pair of heels in the Haldens, and could run almost as fast as your mare herself."

"Is that he, neighbour?" quoth the Miller.

"No," replied the mother; "that is my youngest son Edward, who can read and write like the Lord Abbot himself, if it were not a sin to say so."

"Ay," said the Miller; "and is that the young clerk the Sub-Prior thinks so much of? they say he will come for him, that lad, who here but he may come to be Sub-Prior himself! --as broken a chap has come to head."

"To be a Prior, neighbour Miller," said Edward, "a man must first be a priest, and for that I judge I have little chance."

"He will talk to the plough-potter, neighbour," said the good dame; "and so will Halbert too, I trust. I wish you saw Halbert,—Edward, where is your brother?"

"Hawking, I think," replied Edward; "at least he left us this morning to join the Lord of Chelmie and his hounds. I have heard them baying in the glen all day."

"And if I had heard that music," said the Miller, "it would have done my heart good, ay, and maybe taken me two or three miles out of my road. When I was the Miller of Macfarlane's house, I have followed the hounds from Edinburgh to the foot of Hecnam Law—followed them on foot, Dame Glendinning; ay, and led the dogs when the Lord of Crawford and his gay riders were all tapers out by the mosses and glis. I brought the stag on my back to Hecnam Cross, when the dogs had pulled him down. I think I see the old grey knight, as he sits so upright on his strong war-horse, all white with foam, and 'Miller,' said he to me, 'as thou wilt turn thy back on the mill, and wend with me, I will make a man of thee.' But I chose rather to abide by ship and hap, and the better luck was mine, for the proud Percy caused hang five of the Lord's henchmen at Alwick for bringing a rickie of houses some mile beyond Forberry, and it might have been my luck as well as another man's."

"Ah, neighbour, neighbour," said Dame Glendinning, "you were age was and wry; but if you like hawking, I must say Halbert's the lad to please you. He hath all those fair holiday terms of hawk and hound as ready in his mouth as Tom with the w'd's tail, that is the Lord Alton's wayer."

"Rangin' he not homeward at dinner-time, dame," demanded the Miller; "for we call none the dinner-hour at Kennasdale?"

The widow was forced to admit that even at this important period of the day Halbert was frequently absent; at which the Miller shook his head, intimating at the same time, some allusion to the proverb of Macfarlane's goose, which "Elded their ply better than their meat."

* A breed of wild geese, which long frequented one of the uppermost branches in Loch Leven called Jack-Thorn, were supposed to have some mysterious connection with the ancient family of Macfarlane of that ilk, and it is said were never seen after the ruin and extinction of that house.

That the doing of dinner might not become the Miller's disposition to prejudice Halbert, Dame Glendinning called hastily on Mary Arved to take her task of entertaining Myne-Happen, while she herself walked to the kitchen, and entering at once into the province of Tibb Tacket, rearranged serving trestlers and dishes, snatched pots from the fire, and placed grace and gratitude on it, accompanying her own tasks of personal activity with such a continual list of injunctions to Tibb, that Tibb at length lost patience, and said, "There was no quibble work about making an odd coffee, as if they had been to banquet the blood of Bracc." But this, as it was supposed to be spoken aside, Dame Glendinning did not think it necessary to hear.

CHAPTER FOURTEENTH.

Hey, let me have the friends who eat my victuals,
As various as my dishes.—*The host's thought.*
Where can huge plain predominate—*John Fiddlers,*
His coat is mighty bold, our English eagle;
The worthy Alarums, a butcher's darning;
The pair of wickets'd Gamels, with salt meat;
Their blood the Dandy, a green goose is typical.
And as the house is spread at once and still
On the same principle—*Unity.*

NEW PLAN.

"*ARE* what have been in this?" said Rob Miller, as Mary Arved entered the apartment to supply the absence of Dame Glendinning.

"The young Lady of Arved, father," said the Maid of the Mill, dropping as low a courtesy as her young manners enabled her to make. The Miller, her father, called his house, and made his reverence, not altogether so low perhaps as if the young lady had appeared in the pride of rank and riches, yet

The MacFalls had a house and garden upon that same island of Inch-Town. Here James VI. was on one occasion regaled by the distaffs. His Majesty had been previously much amused by the good parenting each other on the back. But when one which was brought to table was found to be tough and dried, James observed—"that MacFalls's good blood their play better than their meat," a proverb which has been current ever since.

as as to give high birth the due homage which the Scotch for a length of time scrupulously rendered to it.

Indeed, from having had her mother's example before her for so many years, and from a native sense of propriety and even of dignity, Mary Arscot had acquired a demeanor, which marked her title to consideration, and effectually checked any attempt at familiarity on the part of those who might be her associates in her present situation, but could not be well termed her equals. She was by nature mild, pensive, and contemplative, gentle in disposition, and most placable when accidentally offended; but still she was of a retired and reserved habit, and shunned to mix in ordinary sports, even when the nice comeliness of a fair or waltz gave her an opportunity of mingling with companions of her own age. If at such seasons she was seen for an instant, she appeared to behold them with the composed indifference of one to whom their gaiety was a matter of no interest, and who seemed only desirous to glide away from the scene as soon as she possibly could.

Something also had transpired concerning her being born an All-Edwin Eve, and the power with which that circumstance was supposed to invest her over the invisible world. And from all these particulars combined, the young men and women of the Highlands used to distinguish Mary among themselves by the name of the Spirit of Arscot, as if the fair but fragile form, the beautiful but rather colourless cheek, the dark blue eye, and the shaly hair, had belonged rather to the immaterial than the substantial world. The general tradition of the White Lady, who was supposed to wait on the business of the family of Arscot, gave a sort of zest to this piece of rural wit. It gave great offence, however, to the two sons of Simon O'Sheehing; and when the expression was in their presence applied to the young lady, Edward was wont to check the petulance of those who used it by strength of argument, and Halbert by strength of arm. In such cases Halbert had the advantage, that although he could render no aid to his brother's argument, yet when circumstances required it, he was sure to have that of Edward, who never indeed himself commenced a fray, but on the other hand, did not testify any reluctance to enter into combat in Halbert's behalf or in his name.

But the mutual attachment of the two youths, being themselves from the retired situation in which they dwelt, con-

passive strength in the Hallidons, did not serve in any degree to alter the feelings of the inhabitants towards the young lady, who seemed to have dropped amongst them from another sphere of life. Still, however, she was regarded with respect, if not with fondness; and the attention of the Sub-Prior to the family, not to mention the formidable name of Julius Armand, which every one was mindful of those tumultuous times tended to render more famous, attached to her name a certain importance. Thus some regard to her acquaintance out of pride, while the more timid of the house were anxious to inoculate upon their children the necessity of being respectful to the noble orphan. So that Mary Armand, little loved, because little known, was regarded with a mysterious awe, partly derived from fear of her uncle's non-troopers, and partly from her own refined and distant looks, enhanced by the superstitious opinions of the time and country.

It was not without some portion of this awe, that Myra felt herself left alone in company with a young person so distant in rank, and so different in bearing, from herself; for her worthy father had taken the first opportunity to step out unobserved, in order to mark how the banquet was filled, and what prospect it afforded of grat to the mill. In youth, however, there is a sort of free-masonry, which, without much conversation, teaches young persons to estimate each other's character, and places them at ease on the shortest acquaintance. It is only when taught doubt by the commerce of the world, that we learn to derive our character from observation, and to disguise our real sentiments from those with whom we are placed in communion.

Accordingly, the two young women were soon engaged in such objects of interest as best became their age. They visited Mary Armand's pigeon, which she reared with the tenderness of a mother; they turned over her slender boxes of fairy, which yet contained some articles that excited the respect of her suspension, though Myra was too good-humoured to scold at every. A golden cressy, and some female ornaments working superior taste, had been received in the moment of their utmost adversity, more by Dick Tuck's presence of mind, than by the care of their owner, who was at that sad period too much sunk in grief to pay any attention to such circumstances. They struck Myra with a deep impression of veneration; for, except-

ing what the Lord Abbot and the convent might possess, she did not believe there was so much real gold in the world as was exhibited in those few trinkets, and Mary, however sage and serious, was not above being pleased with the admiration of her rustic companion.

Nothing, indeed, could exhibit a stronger contrast than the appearance of the two girls,—the good-humoured laughter-loving countenance of the Maid of the Mill, who stood gazing with unexpressed astonishment on whatever was in her inexperienced eyes rare and costly, and with an humble, and at the same time cheerful acquiescence in her inferiority, asking all the little queries about the use and value of the ornaments, while Mary Arund, with her quiet composed dignity and placidity of manner, produced them one after another for the amusement of her companion.

As they became gradually more familiar, Myrie of the Mill was just venturing to ask, why Mary Arund never appeared at the Mappels, and to express her wonder when the young lady told she disliked dancing, when a trampling of horses at the gate of the tower interrupted their conversation.

Myrie flew to the shut-window in the hall anxious of unobtrained female curiosity. "Glad Mary! even holy! have come two well-mounted gallants; will you stop this way to look at them?"

"No," said Mary Arund, "you shall tell me who they are."

"Well, if you like it better," said Myrie—"but how shall I know them?—Stay, I do know one of them, and so do you, lady; he is a little man, somewhat light of hand, they say, but the gallants of these days think no great harm of that. He is your uncle's headman, that they call Christie of the Chisel; and he has not his old green jerkin and the rusty black-jack over it, but a scarlet cloak, laid down with silver lace three inches broad, and a breast-plate you might see to dress your hair in, as well as in that back-sword in the ivory frame that you showed me even now. Come, dear lady, come to the shut-window and see him."

"If it be the man you mean, Myrie," replied the nephew of Arund, "I shall see him soon enough, considering either the pleasure or comfort the sight will give me."

"Nay, but if you will not come to see gay Christie," replied the Maid of the Mill, her face flushed with eager curiosity,

"come and tell me who the gallant is that is with him, the handsmest, the very handsmest young man I ever saw with sight."

"It is my father-brother, Hubert Glendinning," said Mary, with apparent indifference; for she had been accustomed to call the sons of Elspeth her father-brothers, and to live with them, as if they had been brothers in earnest.

"Nay, by Our Lady, that it is not," said Myrie; "I know the favour of both the Glendinnings well, and I think this rider be not of our country. He has a crimson velvet bonnet, and long brown hair falling down under it, and a beard on his upper lip, and his chin clean and close shaved, save a small patch on the point of the chin, and a sky-blue jacket slashed and lined with white satin, and trunk-bree to suit, and no weapon but a rapier and dagger—Well, if I was a man, I would never wear weapon but the rapier! It is so slender and becoming, instead of having a sword of iron at my back, like my father's broadsword with its great rusty basket-hilt! Do you not delight in the rapier and poniard, lady?"

"The best sword," answered Mary, "if I must needs answer a question of the sort, is that which is drawn in the best cause, and which is best used when it is out of the scabbard."

"But can you not guess who this stranger should be?" said Myrie.

"Indeed, I cannot even attempt it; but, to judge by his complexion, it is no matter how little he is known," replied Mary.

"My business on his happy face," said Myrie, "if he is not going to alight here! Now, I am as much pleased as if my father had given me the silver earrings he has provided me withal;—nay, you had as well come to the window, for you must see him by and by whether you will or not."

I do not know how much sooner Mary Arund might have sought the point of observation, if she had not been warded from it by the unrestrained curiosity expressed by her bosom friend; but at length the same feeling prevailed over her sense of dignity, and satisfied with having displayed all the indifference that was necessary in point of decorum, she no longer thought herself bound to restrain her curiosity.

From the balcony or projecting window, she could perceive that Charlie of the Cliffhill was attended on the present occa-

sion, by a very gay and gallant cavalier, who from the nobleness of his countenance and manner, his rich and handsome dress, and the sherry appearance of his horse and furniture, must, she agreed with her new friend, be a person of some consequence.

Christie also seemed conscious of something, which made him call out with more than his usual freedom of manner, "What, ha! no ha! the horse! Oh! peasants, will no one answer when I call!—Ho! Martin,—Till,—Dane Glendinning!—a curtain on you, must we stand keeping our horses in the cold here, and they steaming with heat, when we have ridden so sharply?"

At length he was obeyed, and old Martin made his appearance. "Ha!" said Christie, "art thou there, old Trosperny! here, stable me those steeds and see them well bedded, and stretch those old limbs by rubbing them down; and see thou quit not the stable till there is not a turned hair on either of them."

Martin took the horses to the stable as commanded, but suppressed not his indignation a moment after he could vent it with safety. "Would not any one think," he said to Jasper, an old ploughman, who, in coming to his assistance, had heard Christie's expensive injunctions, "that the lord, that Christie of the Cheteld, was laid or laid at least of him? No such thing, man! I remember him a little dirty brawny boy in the house of Arundel, that everybody in a frosty morning like this warmed his fingers by looking or colling; and now he is a gentleman, and sends, d—a him and ransom him, as if the gentlemen could not so much as keep their own wickedness to themselves, without the like of him going to hell in their very company, and by the same road. I have as much a mind as ever I had to my dinner, to go back and tell him to send his horse himself, since he is as wide as I am."

"Hout, hout, man!" answered Jasper, "keep a calm enough; better to beech a fool than fight with him."

Martin acknowledged the truth of the proverb, and, much comforted therewith, betook himself to cleaning the stranger's horse with great assiduity, remarking, it was a pleasure to handle a handsome nag, and turned over the other to the charge of Jasper. Nor was it until Christie's commands were strictly complied with that he deemed it proper, after fitting obseques, to join the party in the apence; not for the purpose

of waiting upon them, as a more modern reader might possibly expect, but that he might have his share of dinner in their company.

In the meanwhile Charlotte had presented her companion to Dame Glendinning as Sir Pierce Shaston, a friend of his and of his master, come to spend three or four days with little else in the town. The good dame could not conceive how she was entitled to such an honour, and would fain have pleaded her want of every sort of convenience to entertain a guest of that quality. But, indeed, the visitor, when he cast his eyes round the bare walls, upon the huge black chimney, examined the rags and broken furniture of the apartment, and beheld the embarrassment of the mistress of the house, intimated great reluctance to intrude upon Dame Glendinning's vault, which would scarce, from all appearances, prove otherwise than an inconvenience to her, and a pain to himself.

But the reluctant business and her guest had to do with an honourable man, who allowed all expectations with, "such was his master's pleasure. And, moreover," he continued, "though the Baron of Arden's will must and ought to prove law to all within ten miles round him, yet here, dame," he said, "is a letter from your petticoated lacon, the lord-plunk poodle, who enjoys you, as you regard his pleasure, that you afford to this good knight such decent accommodation as is to your power, suffering him to live as privately as he shall desire. —And for you, Sir Pierce Shaston," continued Charlotte, "you will judge for yourself, whether safety and safety is not more your object even now, than soft beds and high chairs. And do not judge of the dame's pride by the appearance of her cottage; for you will see by the dinner she is about to spread for us, that the usual of the Kirk is seldom found with her ladies here." To Mary Arden Charlotte presented the stranger, after the best fashion he could, as to the name of his master she knew.

While he thus blundered to remember Sir Pierce Shaston to his kin, the widow, having consulted her son Edward on the real import of the Lord Althorpe's language, and having found that Charlotte had given a true exposition, saw nothing else left for her but to make that file as easy as she could to the stranger. He himself also seemed reminded to his lot by some feeling probably of strong necessity, and accepted with a good

grace the hospitality which the dame offered with a very indifferent one.

In fact, the dinner, which was cooked before the assembled guests, was of that substantial kind which warrants plenty and wastes. Dame Glendinning had cooked it after her best manner; and, delighted with the handsome appearance which her good cheer made when placed on the table, forgot both her place and the reason which interrupted them, in the hospitable duty of pressing her assembled visitors to eat and drink, watching every tumbler as it waxed empty, and loading it with fresh supplies as the guest could utter a negative.

In the meanwhile, the company attentively regarded each other's motions, and seemed endeavoring to form a judgment of each other's character. Sir Pierre Shafton endeavored to speak to no one but to Mary Arnest, and on her he conferred exactly the same familiar and compassionate, though somewhat unusual sort of attention, which a pretty fellow of those days will sometimes condescend to bestow on a country rose, when there is no prettier or more fashionable woman present. The manner which was different, for the etiquette of those times did not permit Sir Pierre Shafton to pick his teeth, or to yawn, or to gesticulate like the lawyer whose tongue (as he says) was cut out by the Turks, or to affect declamation or bluntness, or any other infirmity of the organs. But though the sublimity of his conversation was different, the groundwork was the same, and the high-flown and crested compliments with which the gallant knight of the sixteenth century interlarded his conversation, were as much the offspring of egotism and self-conceit, as the jargon of the epigrams of our own days.

The English knight was, however, something derided at finding that Mary Arnest listened with an air of indifference, and answered with wonderful brevity, to all the fine things which ought, as he conceived, to have dazzled her with their brilliancy, and pained her by their obscurity. But if he was disappointed in making her derided, or rather the expected impression, upon her when he addressed, Sir Pierre Shafton's discourse was marvellous in the case of Myla the Miller's daughter, and met the loss so that she did not comprehend the meaning of a single word which he uttered. Indeed, the gallant knight's language was far too coarse to be understood by persons of much greater sensibility than Myla's.

It was about this period, that the "only true poet of his time, the witty, content, fastidiously-quick, and quickly-functious, John Lyly—in the arts at Apollo's table, and in whom Phœbus gave a wreath of his own hairs without mistaking"—he, in short, who wrote that singularly ornamented work, called *Euphues and his England*, was in the very zenith of his clarity and reputation. The quaint, forced, and unnatural style which he introduced by his *Anatomy of Wit*, had a decline as rapid as it was momentary—all the court ladies were his scholars, and to "parley Euphruisme," was as necessary a qualification to a courtly gallant, as those of understanding how to use his rapier or to dance a minuet.*

It was no wonder that the Maid of the Mill was soon as effectually blinded by the intricacies of this erudite and courtly style of conversation, as she had ever been by the dust of her father's own mediocrity. But there she sat with her mouth and eyes as open as the mill-door and the two windows, showing teeth as white as her father's belted floor, and underscoring to some a word or two for her own future use out of the pearls of rhetoric which Sir Francis Shafton scattered around him with such beauteous profusion.

For the whole part of the company, Edward felt ashamed of his own manner and slowness of speech, when he observed the handsome young courtes, with an ease and volubility of which he had no conception, run over all the commonplace topics of high-flown gallantry. It is true the good sense and natural taste of young Glendinning soon informed him that the gallant cavalier was speaking nonsense. But, alas! where is the man of modest merit, and real talent, who has not suffered from being cautious in conversation, and outstripped in the race of life, by men of less reserve, and of qualities more showy, though less substantial! and well constituted must the mind be that can yield up the prize without any to competitors more unworthy than himself.

* Such, and yet more extravagant, are the compliments paid to this writer by his editor, Elzevir. Forwithstanding all exaggeration, Lyly was really a man of wit and imagination, though both were deflected by the most theatrical affectation that ever disfigured a printed page.

† *Wit's Anatomy*, is a satire on Chaucer's tale, upon the relation of marriage and betrothal to several nations. Otherwise quite uninteresting, why'th be noticed here—*Euphues*, the *Anatomy of Wit*, and *Euphues and his England*, by John Lyly, were not published till 1600.]

Edward Gladwin had no such philosophy. While he despised the jargon of the gay cavalier, he carried the faculty with which he could run on, as well as the ready wit and expression, and the perfect ease and elegance with which he offered all the little arts of politeness to which the duties of the table gave opportunity. And if I am to speak truth, I must own that he carried those qualities the more as they were all exercised in Mary Arundel's service, and, although only as far accepted, as they would not be refused, indicated a wish on the stranger's part to place himself in her good graces, as the only person in the room to whom he thought it worth while to recommend himself. His tall, rank, and very handsome figure, together with some sparks of wit and spirit which flashed across the cloud of nonsense which he uttered, rendered him, as the words of the old song say, "a lad for a lady's liking;" so that poor Edward, with all his real worth and acquired knowledge, as his homely friend, blue cap, and downy beard, looked like a clown beside the courtier, and, feeling the full inferiority, ascribed no good-will to him by whom he was eclipsed.

Christie, on the other hand, as soon as he had alluded to the full and uncontrolled appetite, by means of which persons of his profession could, like the wolf and eagle, gorge themselves with as much food at one meal as might serve them for several days, began also to feel himself more in the background than he liked to be. This worthy had, amongst his other good qualities, an excellent opinion of himself; and, being of a bold and forward disposition, had no mind to be thrown into the shade by any one. With an impatient familiarity, which such persons mistake for graceful ease, he broke in upon the knight's finest speeches with as little reserve as he would have driven the point of his lance through a lord's doublet.

Sir Piers Shallow, a man of rank and high birth, by no means encouraged or endured this familiarity, and required the intruder either with total neglect, or such laconic replies as indicated a sovereign contempt for the rude speaker, who affected to converse with him upon terms of equality.

The Miller told his piece; for, as his usual conversation turned chiefly on his clapper and toll-dale, he had no mind to lose of his wealth as possessor of Christie of the Clothall, or to irritate his discourse on the English cavalier.

A little specimen of the conversation may not be out of place,

were it but to show young ladies what fine things they have lost by living when Euphrosine is out of fashion.

"Credit me, dearest lady," said the knight, "that such is the meaning of our English courtesy, of the ladyhood above, that, as they have infinitely refused upon the plain and rational doctrine of our fathers, which, as I may say, were bestowed the mantle of country rusticity in a May-gown than that of courtly elegance in a gaffard, as I hold it infinitely and matter-of-factly impossible, that those who may exceed us in that garden of wit and courtesy shall either amend it. 'Twas delightful but in the language of literary Euphrosine will stop to no one but Alexander, none can sound Apollo's pipe but Cephæus."

"Valiant de," said Mary, who could scarcely help laughing, "we have but to agree in the choice which hath bestowed this solitude with a glimpse of the aim of courtesy, though it rather blinds than enlightens us."

"Pretty and quaint, dearest lady," answered the Euphratist. "Ah, that I had with me my *Academy of Wits*—that all-to-be-superficial volume—that quaternione of human wit—that treasury of quaint invention—that exquisitely pleasant-to-read, and inevitably necessary-to-be-remembered manual, of all that is worthy to be known—which instructs the rule in civility, the doll in intellectuality, the heavy in jocosity, the blunt in gentility, the vulgar in nobility, and all of them in that considerable perfection of human civilities, that eloquence which no other eloquence is sufficient to praise, that art which, when we call it by its own name of Euphrosine, we bestow on it its richest panegyric."

"By Saint Mary," said Christine of the Ginkbill, "if your worship had told me that you had left such stores of wealth as you talk of at Frother Gossie, Long Dicks and I would have had them off with us if men and horses could have carried them; but you told us of no treasure I was of, save the silver tongue for turning up your nostrils."

The knight treated this intruder's epistle—for certainly Christine had no idea that all these epistles, which counted so rich and splendid, were hatched upon a small quarto volume—with a stare, and then, turning again to Mary Arden, the only person whom he thought worthy to address, he proceeded in his strain of high-brow courtesy, "Now then," said he, "do I beg to commend the splendour of Oriental pearls; even these are the

delicacies of a choice repast is vain offered, to the long-earred grasp of the woman, who turneth from those to devour a tit-bit, hardly as able as it to pour forth the treasures of courtesy before the eyes of the ignorant, and to spend the duration of the intellectual banquet before those who are, morally and metaphysically speaking, no better than asses."

"So Knight, mine that is your quality," said Edward, "we cannot strive with you in loftiness of language, but I pray you in fair courtesy, while you honour my father's house with your presence, to spare us such vile comparisons."

"Pshaw, good village," said the knight, graciously waving his hand, "I praise your, kind motto, and you, my gods, whom I may assure will honour, let me prevail upon you to imitate the humble hospitality of that honest yeoman, who sits as merry as a mallard, and of that society damned, who seems as with her ears she drink in what she did not altogether comprehend, even as a piddling blundering to a tale, wherein, however, he knoweth not the point."

"He vilifies the world," at length said Dame Glouchering, who began to be tired of sitting so long silent, "marvellous fine words, neighbour Hapton, are they not?"

"Even words—very laud words—very excellent good words," murmured the Miller, "nevertheless, to speak my mind, a bag of linen were worth a bushel of them."

"I think so too, under his worship's favour," answered Christie of the Chiswell. "I well remember that at the race of Mortons, as we call it, near Berwick, I took a young Southern fellow out of saddle with my lance, and met him, it might be, a god's length from his nag; and so, as he had some gold on his broad chestnut, I deemed he might let the like on it in his pocket too, though that is a rule that does not age hold good—So I was speaking to him of manners, and out he comes with a handful of such tokens as his honour there hath gleaned up, and craved me for money, as I was a true son of Mars, and suchlike."

"And obtained no money at thy hand, I dare be sworn," said the knight, who deemed not to speak English excepting to the fair sex.

"By my troth," replied Christie, "I would have thrust my lance down his throat, but just then they being open that accursed postern-gate, and forth pecked old Hunsdon and Henry Percy, and as many fellows as their backs at turned the chase southward

again. So I've pricked Haggel with the spear, and went off with the rest, for a man should ride when he may not wrothle, as they say in Tyndale."

"Trust me," said the knight, again, turning to Mary Arund, "if I do not pity you, lady, who, being of noble blood, are thus in a manner compelled to shade in the cottage of the ignorant, like the precious stone in the head of the fool, or like a precious gem set on the knee of an ass.—But soft, what gallant love we have, whose garb answereth more of the matter than cloth has decoration, and whose looks seem more lady than his habit, even as"—

"I pray you, Sir Knight," said Mary, "to spare your courtesy awhile for reined ears, and give me leave to name unto you my kinsman-brother, Richard Gloucester?"

"The son of the good dame of the cottage, as I opine," answered the English knight; "for by some such name did my gentle dissembler the mistress of this mansion, which you, madam, enrich with your presence.—And yet, touching this parcel, he hath that shows him which becometh to higher birth, for all are not black who dig coals"—

"Nor all white who are millers," said honest Haggel, glad to get in a word, as they say, sideways.

Richard, who had sustained the glance of the Englishman with some impatience, and knew not what to make of his manner and language, replied with some severity, "Sir Knight, we have in this land of Scotland an ancient saying, 'Scorn not the hawk that holds you'—you are a guest of my father's house to shelter you from danger, if I am rightly informed by the domestic. Scorn not its homeliness, nor that of its inmates—you might long have shivered at the court of England ere we had sought your favour, or numbered you with our society. Since your fate has sent you hither amongst us, be contented with such fare and such converse as we can afford you, and more is not for our kindness; for the Scots wear short patience and long danger."

All eyes were turned on Richard while he was thus speaking, and there was a general feeling that his countenance had an expression of intelligence, and his person an air of dignity, which they had never before observed. Whether it were that the wonderful being with whom he had so lately held communication, had bestowed on him a grace and dignity of look and

bearing which he had not before, or whether the being conversant in high matters, and called to a destiny beyond that of other men, had a natural effect in giving becoming confidence to his language and manner, we pointed not to determine. But it was evident to all, that from this day young Hilbert was no altered man; that he acted with a steadiness, promptitude, and determination, which belonged to ripe years, and bore himself with a manner which appeared in higher rank.

The knight took the rebuke with good humour. "By mine honour," he said, "thou hast reason on thy side, good friend—nevertheless, I speak not as in defiance of the roof which shelters me, but rather in your own praise, to whom, if this roof be secure, thou mayest nevertheless rise from its lowliness; even as the lark, which maketh its humble nest in the furrow, ascends towards the sun, as well as the eagle which buildeth her eyrie in the cliff."

This high-flown discourse was interrupted by Dame Gloucestre, who, with all the busy activity of a mother, was leading her son's treasurer with food, and dining in his ear her reproaches on account of his prolonged absence. "And see," she said, "that you do not one day get such a sight, while you are walking about among the haunts of them that are not of our flesh and bone, as I saw Sir Hugo Morrey when he slept on the greenward ring of the Ashl Kiriball at sunset, and awakened at daybreak in the wild hills of Breckfaston. And see that, when you are looking for deer, the red stag does not gale you as he did Bishop Thurburn, who never overtook the wound that he took from a buck's horns. And see, when you go swaggering about with a long broadsword by your side, which it becomes so painful men to do, that ye dare meet with them that have broadsword and lance both—there are more of such riders in this land, that neither fear God nor regard man."

Here her eye, "in a fine fiery rolling," fell full upon that of Christa of the Oliveliff, and as once her face for having given offence interrupted the current of maternal rebuke, which, like rebuke maternal, may be often better meant than aimed. There was something of shy and restrained significance in Christa's eye, its eye grey, blue, brown, yet bright, formed to express all those quivering and molten, which made the dense intensely conjecture she had said too much, while she saw in imagination her twelve

gently cover up having done the glass in a moonlight night, with half a score of Border squaws in their hands.

Her voice, therefore, sunk from the elevated tone of paternal authority into a whispering apologetic sort of strain, and she proceeded to say, "It is so that I have my ill thoughts of the Border men, for Tidd Thicket there has often heard me say that I thought your and brother's natural to a Borderman as a you to a guest, or a father like to a lady; and—have you not heard me say it, Tidd?"

Tidd showed something less than her expected clarity in attesting her mistress's deep respect for the frolicsome of the northern hills; but then composed, and at length reply, "Hear ye, mistress, the warmest I have heard you say something like that."

"Mother!" and Richard, in a firm and commanding tone of voice, "what or whom is it that you fear under my father's roof?—I will hope that it includes not a guest in whose presence you are afraid to say your pleasure to me or my brother! I am sorry I have been detained so late, being against of the far journey which I should counteract on my return.—I pray you let this excuse suffice: and what attitude you, will, I trust, be making less than acceptable to your guests."

An answer calculated so justly betwixt the submission due to his parent, and the natural feeling of dignity in one who was by birth master of the mansion, evoked universal satisfaction. And as Elspeth herself confided to Tidd on the same evening, "She did not think it had been in the coldest. Till that night he took pets and passions if he was spoke to, and lap through the house like a four-year-old at the least word of advice that was related at him, but now he spoke as grave and as dense as the Lord Abbot himself. She knows," she said, "what might be the upshot of it, but it was like he was a wonderer/coldest even now."

The party then separated, the young men retiring to their apartments, the elder to their household ones. While Christine went to see his house properly accommodated, Edward betook himself to his book, and Richard, who was as impetuous in employing his hands as he had hitherto appeared impatient in mental exercise, applied himself to constructing a place of concealment in the floor of his apartment by raising a plank, beneath which he resolved to deposit that copy of the Italy

Scriptures which had been so strongly repined from the possession of man and spirits.

In the meanwhile Sir Piercie Shafton sat still as a stone, in the chair in which he had deposited himself, his hands folded on his breast, his legs stretched straight out before him and resting upon the heels, his eyes cast up to the ceiling as if he had meant to count every beam of every rafter with which the arched roof was canopyed, wearing at the same time a face of an solemn and imperishable gravity, as if his existence had depended on the accuracy of his calculation.

He could scarce be roused from his listless state of contemplative absorption so as to take some supper, a meal at which the younger ladies appeared not. Sir Piercie strolled around twice or thrice as if he missed something; but he asked not for them, and only evinced his sense of a proper occasion being wanting, by his distraction and absence of mind, seldom speaking until he was twice addressed, and then replying, without trope or figure, in that plain English, which nobody could speak better when he had a mind.

Charles, finding himself in unsatisfied possession of the conversation, engaged all who chose to listen with details of his own wild and inglorious warfare, while Dame Elspeth's couch layed with leaves, and Tibb Tacket, rejoiced to find herself once more in the company of a jack-man, listened to his tale, like Eustachius to Ortelius's, with unflagging delight. Sometimes the two young Glendinninge were each wrapped up in his own reflections, and only interrupted in them by the signal to move forward.

CHAPTER FIFTEENTH.

*He staid as idle, 'tis true, but when new pleasures,
And with them fresh as human soul glided creatures,
Which else was none, and drew except as payment.*

OUR PLAY.

In the morning Charles of the Clithell was nowhere to be seen. As this worthy personage did seldom place himself on sounding a trumpet before his movements, no one was surprised at his nocturnal departure, though some alarm was excited but he had

not made it empty handed. So, in the language of the national ballad,

None was to explore, and none to bind,
But sought was every thicket to wind.

All was in order, the key of the stable left above the door, and that of the iron-grate in the handle of the lock. In short, the retreat had been made with scrupulous attention to the security of the garrison, and so far Gloriot left them nothing to complain of.

The safety of the premises was ascertained by Halbert, who, instead of picking up a gun or cross-bow, and sallying out for the day as had been his frequent custom, now, with a gravity befitting his years, took a survey of all around the tower, and then returned to the apiece, or public apartment, in which, at the early hour of seven, the morning meal was prepared.

There he found the *Reposist* in the same elegant posture of abstract calculation which he had exhibited on the preceding evening, his arms folded in the same angle, his eyes turned up to the same column, and his hands resting on the ground as before. Tired of the affectation of indolent importance, and not much flattered with his guest's persevering in it to the last, Halbert resolved at once to break the ice, being determined to know what circumstances had brought to the Tower of Gloriot a guest as new as supercilious and so silent.

"Sir Knight," he said with some firmness, "I have twice given you good morning, to which the chance of your mind hath, I presume, prevented you from yielding attention, or from making return. This exchange of courtesy is at your pleasure to give or withhold—But, as what I have further to say concerns your comfort and your motions in an especial manner, I will entreat you to give me some signs of attention, that I may be sure I am not wasting my words on a monumental heap."

At this unexpected address, Sir Florio Shafon opened his eyes, and offered the speaker a broad stare; but as Halbert retained the glance without either confusion or dismay, the knight thought proper to change his posture, drew in his legs, raised his eyes, fix them on young Gloriot, and assume the appearance of one who listens to what is said to him. Nay, to make his purpose more evident, he gave value to his resolution in these words, "Speak; we do hear."

"Sir Knight," said the youth, "it is the custom of this House, or priory of Saint Mary's, to trouble with requests no guests who receive our hospitality, providing they tarry in our house only for a single revolution of the sun. We leave that both gentlemen and doctors come hither for sanctuary, and we seem to select from the pilgrim, whom chance may make our guest, an avowal of the cause of his pilgrimage and journey. But when one so high above our rank as yourself, Sir Knight, and especially one to whom the possession of such possessions is not indifferent, shows his determination to be our guest for a longer time, it is our usage to inquire of him whence he comes, and what is the cause of his journey?"

The English knight gaped twice or thrice before he answered, and then replied in a hesitating tone, "Truly, good village, your question hath in it somewhat of embarrassment, for you ask me of things concerning which I am not as yet altogether determined what answer I may find it convenient to make. Let it suffice then, kind friend, that thou hast the Lord Abbot's authority for trusting me to the best of that power of thine, which, indeed, may not always so well suffice for my accommodation as other of us would desire."

"I must have a more precise answer than this, Sir Knight," said the young Glendinning.

"Friend," said the knight, "be not outrageous. It may suit your northern manners thus to press hardily upon the secrets of thy betters; but believe me, that even as the late, struck by an unskilful hand, hath produced discords, so"—At this moment the door of the apartment opened, and Mary Arscott presented herself—"But who can talk of discords," said the knight, assuming his complimentary vein and manner, "when the veil of harmony descends upon us in the presence of our passing beauty! For even as flowers, waters, and other minute veils of sense and reason, do fly from the presence of the splendour sun of heaven, when he arises in his glory, so do shreds, veils, and all trepid passions retreat, and, as it were, and wrap, from the face which now beams upon us, with power to compose our angry passions, illuminate our doubts and difficulties, soothe our wounded minds, and hush to rest our disorderly apprehensions; for as the heat and warmth of the eye of day is to the material and physical world, so is the eye which I now bow down before to that of the intellectual universe."

He concluded with a profound bow; and Mary Arnest, passing from one to the other, and plainly seeing that something was amiss, could only say, "For heaven's sake, what is the meaning of this?"

The newly-acquired tact and intelligence of her father-brother was so yet insufficient to enable him to give an answer. He was quite uncertain how he ought to deal with a guest, who, possessing a singularly high tone of personal superiority and importance, assumed nevertheless an illis anxious in what he said, that it was quite impossible to discuss with accuracy whether he was in *just* or *wrong*.

Forcing, however, the internal resolution to bring Sir Francis Shandon to a reckoning at a more fit place and season, he resolved to postpone the matter so far as at present; and the entrance of his mother with the *dundee* of the Mail, and the return of the honest Miller from the stockyard, where he had been wandering and calculating the probable amount of the season's profit, rendered further discussion impossible for the moment.

In the course of the calculation it could not but strike the man of mind and prudence, that, after the church's dues were paid, and after all which he himself could by any means deduct from the crop, still the residue which must revert to Dame Goodfellow could not be less than considerable. I wot not if this led the honest Miller to cherish any plans similar to those adopted by Elsie, but it is certain that he accepted with grateful alacrity an invitation which the dame gave to his daughter, to remain a week or two as her guest at Goodfellow.

The principal persons being thus in high good humor with each other, all business gave place to the hilarity of the morning report; and so much did Sir Francis appear gratified by the attention which was paid to every word that he uttered by the post-brown Myra, that notwithstanding his high birth and distinguished quality, he bestowed on her some of the more ordinary and somewhat stale tropes of his education.

Mary Arnest, when relieved from the awkwardness of feeling the full weight of his conversation addressed to herself, enjoyed it much more; and the good knight, encouraged by these confiding marks of approbation from the sex, for whose sake he cultivated his oratorical talents, made speedy intimation of his purpose to be more communicative than he had shown himself

in his conversation with Halbert Oleslawing, and gave them to understand, that it was in consequence of some pressing danger that he was at present their involuntary guest.

The conclusion of the breakfast was a signal for the separation of the company. The Mother went to prepare for his departure, his daughter to arrange notions for her unexpected stay, Edward was summoned to consultation by Martin concerning some agricultural matter, in which Halbert could not be brought to interest himself; the dame left the room upon her household concerns, and Mary was in the act of following her, when she suddenly recollected, that if she did so the strange knight and Halbert must be left alone together, at the risk of another quarrel.

The maiden no sooner observed this circumstance, than she instantly returned from the door of the apartment, and, seating herself in a small stone window seat, resolved to maintain that curb which she was sensible her presence imposed on Halbert Oleslawing, of whose quick temper she had some apprehensions.

The stranger marked her motions, and, either interpreting them as serving his society, or desirous to those hours of gossamer which permitted him not to have a lady in silence and solitude, he instantly placed himself near to her side and opened the conversation as follows:—

"Greet me, fair lady," he said, addressing Mary Arundel, "in much rejoiceth me, being, as I am, a banished man from the delights of mine own country, that I shall find here, in this obscure and solitary cottage of the north, a fair form and a gentle soul, with whom I may explain my mutual sentiments. And let me pray you, in particular, lovely lady, that, according to the universal custom now predominant in our court, the garden of superior wits, you will exchange with me some epithet whereby you may mark my devotion to your service. Be hanceforward named, for example, my Protection, and let me be your Affinity."

"Our northern and country manners, Sir Knight, do not permit us to exchange epithets with those to whom we are strangers," replied Mary Arundel.

"Nay, but are now," said the knight, "how you are startled! even at the utterance thereof, which awakens aside from the sliding of a handkerchief, though he meet in this encounter

the wearing of a penon. This courtly exchange of epithets of honour, is no more than the compliments which pass between valour and beauty, whenever they meet, and under whatever circumstances. Elizabeth of England herself calls Philip Spenser her Comrade, and he in return calls that princess his Inspiration. Wherefore, my fair Protection, for by such epithet it shall be mine to demonstrate you"—

"Not without the young lady's consent, sir!" interrupted Halbert; "most truly do I hope your courtly and quaint language will not so far prevail over the more ordinary rules of civil behaviour."

"Fair tenant of an indifferent eyefield," replied the knight, with the same sweetness and civility of mine, but in a tone somewhat more lofty than he used to the young lady, "we do not, in the northern parts, much intermingle discourse, save with those with whom we may stand on some footing of equality, and I must in all discretion, remind you, that the necessity which makes us inhabitants of the same vale, doth not place us otherwise on a level with each other."

"By Saint Mary," replied young Glendinning, "it is my thought that it does; for plain men hold, that he who asks the shelter is indebted to him who gives it; and so far, therefore, is our make equalled while the roof covers us both."

"Then art altogether devoted," answered Sir Percie, "and that thou mayest fully adapt thyself to our solitary condition, know that I account not myself thy guest, but that of thy master, the Lord Abbot of Saint Mary's, who, for reasons best known to himself and me, deigneth to administer his hospitality to me through the means of thee, his earnest and usual, who art, therefore, in good truth, as passive an instrument of my accommodation as this ill-made and ragged joint-stool on which I sit, or as the wooden trestler from which I eat my coarse commons. Wherefore," he added, turning to Mary, "direct me, or rather, as I said before, most lovely Protection!"

Mary Arden was about to reply to him, when the stern, firm, and resolute expression of voice and countenance with which Halbert concluded, "Not from the King of Scotland, did he live, would I brook such terms!" induced her to throw herself between him and the stranger, exclaiming, "For God's sake Halbert, leave what you do!"

"Fare ye. Good Night."

"Fear not, *Forest Protection*," replied Sir Florio, with the utmost severity, "that I can be provoked by this reckless and outrageous proposal to do ought unbecoming your presence or mine own dignity; for as soon shall the governor's linstock give fire unto the axle, as the spark of passion inflame my blood, tempered as it is to severity by the respect due to the presence of my gracious Protection."

"You may well call her your Protection, Sir Knight," said Halbert; "by Saint Andrew, it is the only sensible word I have heard you speak! But we may meet where her protection shall no longer afford you shelter."

"*Forest Protection*," continued the scurrilous, not even hesitating with a look, far less with a direct reply, the threat of the unnamed Halbert, "doubt not that thy faithful Affinity will be more concerned by the speech of this rascally, than the light and serious mien is perturbed by the laughing of the cottage-car, proud of the height of his own daughter, which, as he conceals, effects has never unto the auguste luminary."

To what lengths an unnecessary caution might have driven Halbert's indignation, is left uncertain: for at that moment Edward rushed into the apartment with the intelligence that two most important officers of the Court, the High-justice and High-treasurer, were just arrived with a sumpter-train, loaded with provisions, announcing that the Lord Abbot, the Earl-Poore, and the Barchina, were on their way thither. A circumstance so very extraordinary had never been recorded in the annals of Saint Mary's, or in the traditions of Gloucestre, though there was a faint legendary report that a certain Abbot had died there in old days, after having been breathered in a heating expedition across the wilds which lie to the northward. But that the present Lord Abbot should have taken a voluntary journey to so wild and dreary a spot, the very *Kontakion* of the Halldons, was a thing never dreamt of; and the news excited the greatest surprise in all the members of the family serving Halbert alone.

This fiery youth was too full of the truth he had resolved to think of anything as unconnected with it. "I am glad of it," he exclaimed, "I am glad the Abbot comes thither. I will know of him by what right this stranger is sent thither to chamber ever so under our father's roof, as if we were slaves and not freemen. I will tell the proud priest to his heart!"—

"Alas! alas! my brother," said Edward, "think what those words may cost thee!"

"And what will, or what can they cost me," said Halbert, "that I should sacrifice my human feelings and my justifiable resentment to the fear of what the Abbot can do?"

"Our mother—our mother!" exclaimed Edward; "think, if she is deprived of her home, expelled from her property, how can you spend what your reason may see?"

"It is too true, by Heaven!" said Halbert, striking his forehead. Then, stamping his foot against the floor to express the full energy of the passion to which he dared no longer give vent, he turned round and left the apartment.

Mary Arnes looked at the stranger knight, while she was endeavoring to frame a request that he would not report the unprovoked violence of her father-tyrant, to the prejudice of her family in the mind of the Abbot. But Sir Percie, the very peak of courtesy, conjectured her meaning from her embarrassment, and would not to be entreated.

"Obedit ergo, laetant Protection," said he, "your AFFIDITY is less than capable of seeing or hearing, far less of seeing or uttering, sight of an unwomanly nature which may have charmed while I enjoyed the Elysium of your presence. The made of life passion may indeed rarely agitate the bosom of the noble; but the heart of the courtesan is polished to resist them. As the house lake receives not the influence of the breeze, even so"—

The voice of Dame Glendinning, in shrill remonstrance, here diverted Mary Arnes's attention, who instantly obeyed, not a little glad to escape from the compliments and smiles of this scorching gallant. Her was it apparently less a relief on his part; for no sooner was she past the threshold of the room, than he exchanged the look of formal and elaborate politeness which had accompanied each word he had uttered hitherto, for an expression of the utmost hostility and scorn; and after indulging in one or two potentia pueris, broke forth into a satirical

"What the foul fiend sent this wench hither? As if it were not sufficient plague to be harbored in a house that would hardly serve for a dog's kennel in England, baited by a rude peasant boy, and dependent on the faith of a mercenary retainer, but I cannot even have time to muse over my own misdeeds,

but must come aloft, fish, fidget, and make speeches, to please the pale battle phantom, because she has gentle blood in her veins! By some means, setting prejudice aside, the mill-maid is the more attractive of the two—Bet gutterson, Francis Shadon; then must not lose thy well-earned claim to be accounted a devoted servant of the fair sex, a witty-learned, prompt, and accomplished courtier. Rather thank heaven, Francis Shadon, which hath sent thee a subject, wherein, without derogating from thy rank (since the honours of the Arund family are beyond dispute), thou mayest find a whatstone for thy witty compliments, a stop wherein to sharpen those scold rapiers, a butt wherein to shoot the arrows of thy gallantry. For even as a British blade, the more it is rubbed the brighter and the sharper will it prove, so——But what need I waste my stock of similitudes in holding converse with myself!—Yonder comes the motishful retinue, like some half-score of cranes winging their way slowly up the valley—I hope, s'gad, they have not forgotten my trunk-maid of apparel amid the ample provision they have made for their own belly-timber—Marry s'gad, I was finely helped up if the venture has succeeded among the Brevish Bordenes!"

Stung by this reflection, he ran hastily down stairs, and caused his horse to be saddled, that he might, as soon as possible, ascertain this important point, by meeting the Lord Abbot and his retinue as they came up the glen. He had not ridden a mile before he met them advancing with the slowness and decorum which became persons of their dignity and profession. The knight failed not to greet the Lord Abbot with all the formal compliments with which men of rank at that period exchanged courtesies. He had the good fortune to find that his mule was numbered among the train of baggage which attended upon the party; and, attended in that particular, he turned his horse's head, and accompanied the Abbot to the Tower of Glendurg.

Great, in the meanwhile, had been the turmoil of the good Dame Elveth and her mediators, to prepare for the fitting reception of the Father Lord Abbot and his retinue. The monks had indeed taken care not to trust too much to the state of her pantry; but she was not the less anxious to make such additions as might enable her to claim the thanks of her feudal lord and spiritual father. Meeting Hildbert, as, with his blood

on fire, he returned from his altercation with her guest, she commanded him instantly to go forth to the hill, and not to return without venison, reminding him that he was apt enough to go farther for his own pleasure, and must now do so for the credit of the house.

The Miller, who was now hastening his journey homewards, promised to send up some venison by his own servant. Dame Elspeth, who by this time thought she had guests enough, had begun to suspect of her maintenance to poor Myra, and was just considering by what means, short of giving offence, she could send off the head of the Mill behind her father, and adjourn all her own moral reflections till some future opportunity, when the unexpected generosity on the part of the ape rendered any present attempt to return his daughter on his hands too highly objectionable to be further thought on. So the Miller departed alone on his homeward journey.

Dame Elspeth's sense of hospitality proved in this instance its own reward; for Myra had learnt too near the Chequer to be altogether ignorant of the noble art of cookery, which her father patronised to the extent of conversing on festival days and dainties as his daughter could prepare in emulation of the kitchen of the Abbot's kitchen. Laying aside, therefore, her holiday habits, and adopting a dress more suitable to the occasion, the good-humoured maiden hired her merry maids, drove the slaves; and, as Elspeth acknowledged in the language of the time and country, took "maids and schelds part with her" in the labours of the day; showing unparalleled talent, and indefatigable industry, in the preparation of mutton, Maccaroni, and heaven knows what delicious broths, which Dame Glouffiering, assisted by her skill, dared not even have dreamt of presenting.

Leaving this able substitute in the kitchen, and supposing that Mary Arund was so brought up, that she could intrust nothing to her care, unless it might be seeing the great chamber stored with rushes, and ornamented with such flowers and branches as the season afforded, Dame Elspeth hastily donned her best attire, and with a beating heart presented herself at the door of her little tower, to make her adieu to the Lord Abbot as he crossed her humble threshold. Edward stood by his mother, and felt the same palpitations, which his philosophy was at a loss to account for. He was yet to learn how long it

in our race, is enabled to triumph over the force of external circumstances, and how much our feelings are affected by novelty, and blunted by use and habit.

On the present occasion, he witnessed with wonder and awe the approach of some half-score of robbers, who came upon other pilgrims, stuffed in their long black garments, and only relieved by their white caparisons, shoving more like a funeral procession than aught else, and not questioning their pace beyond that which permitted easy conversation and easy digestion. The solemnity of the scene was indeed somewhat relieved by the presence of Sir Francis Shadon, who, to show that his skill in the manage was not inferior to his other accomplishments, kept alternately prancing and checking his gay courser, forcing him to gallop, to canter, to passade, and to do all the other feats of the school, to the great annoyance of the Lord Abbot, the worried severity of whose pilgry became at length discomposed by the thought of the companion, while the dignitary kept crying out in hoarse alarm, "I do pray you, sir—Sir Knight—good now, Sir Francis—Be quiet, knave! there is a good stead—oh, poor fellow!" and uttering all the other precocious and wailing exclamations by which a child however usually betrays the fever of a frisky companion, or of his own ungoverned rage, and concluding the business with a snore far graver in tone as he alighted in the courtyard of the Tower of Glendree.

The inhabitants unanimously bent down to kiss the hand of the Lord Abbot, a ceremony which even the monks were often condemned to. Good Abbot Basilian was too much flattered by the incidents of the latter part of his journey, to go through this ceremony with much solemnity, or indeed with much patience. He kept wiping his brow with a snow-white handkerchief with one hand, while another was extended to the homage of his vassals; and then signing the cross with his outstretched arm, and exclaiming, "Hew ye—hew ye, my children!" he hastened into the house, and murmured not a word of the darkness and steepness of the rugged winding stair, whereby he at length scaled the space destined for his entertainment, and, overcome with fatigue, threw himself, I do not say into an easy chair, but into the easiest the apartment afforded.

CHAPTER SIXTEENTH

A scurrier extraordinary, who by list
Of words and deeds, his temperate service,
Glees, merris, frequent bath, his honey words
Of spirits and witticisms, means to immortalise
Mankind itself, and make the names
Of his whole happen the talk of court.

Blasphemy LAST.

When the Lord Abbot had suddenly and superfluously vanished from the eyes of his expectant vassals, the Sub-Prior made amends for the negligence of his principal, by the kind and affectionate greeting which he gave to all the members of the family, but especially to Dame Elspeth, her foster-daughter, and her son Edward. "Where," he even condescended to inquire, "is that naughty Maird, Halbert?—He hath not yet, I trust, turned, like his great prototype, his hunting-spear against me?"

"O no, an it please your reverence," said Dame Glendinning, "Halbert is up at the glen to get some venison, or surely he would not have been absent when such a day of honour dawned upon me and mine."

"Oh, to get venison meat, such as our soul loveth," muttered the Sub-Prior; "it has been at times an acceptable gift.—I bid you good mornin, my good dame, as I must attend upon his lordship the Father Abbot."

"And oh, reverend sir," said the good widow, detaining him, "if it might be your pleasure to take part with us if there is anything wrong; and if there is anything wanted, to say that it is just coming, or to make some answer your hearing best knows how. Every bit of vessel and silver ware here we have spoiled of since Falkenstein, when I lost poor Simon Glendinning, that was the worst of it."

"Never mind—never fear," said the Sub-Prior, gently extricating his garment from the anxious grasp of Dame Elspeth; "the Refectance has with him the Abbot's plate and drinking-cups; and I pray you to believe that whatever is short in your entertainment will be decently made up in your goodwill."

So saying, he escaped from her and went into the apse,

where such propositions as haste permitted were making for the great collection of the Abbot and the English knight. Here he found the Lord Abbot, for whom a mansion, composed of all the planks in the house, had been unable to render Simon's huge shoulders a soft or comfortable place of rest.

"Beauchamp!" said Abbot Beuchamp, "are merry lie upon these hard benches with all my bones—they are as uneasy as the anubis of our monks. Saint Jude be with us, Sir Knight, how have you contrived to pass over the night in that dungeon! An your bed was as softer than your seat, you might as well have slept on the stone roads of Saint Fiacre's. After trotting a full ten miles, a man needs a softer seat than has fallen to my hard lot."

With sympathizing faces, the Sacristan and the Refectory ran to ease the Lord Abbot, and to adjust his seat to his mind, which was at length accomplished in some sort, although he confessed silently to himself his fatigue, and to credit in the monastic sense of having discharged an arduous duty. "You must cavalcade," said he, addressing the knight, "may now perceive that others have their travels and their toils to undergo as well as your honored dignity. And thus I will say for myself and the soldiers of Saint Mary, among whom I may be termed captain, that it is not our wont to shrink from the heat of the service, or to withdraw from the good fight. Ha, by Saint Mary!—as soon as I learn that you were here, and dared not for certain reasons come to the Monastery, where, with as good will, and with more convenience, we might have given you a better reception, than, striking the table with my hammer, I called a brother—Thierry, and I, let them saddle Bonaparte—let them saddle my black palfrey, and bid the Sub-Prior and some halfpence of attendance be in readiness to remove after sunrise—we would ride to Glendurg.—Brother Thierry started, thinking, I imagine, that his ears had been done him justice—but I repeated my commands, and said, Let the Kitchen and Refectory go before to aid the poor monks in whom the place belongs in making a suitable collection. So that you will consider, good Sir Pierre, my original incognito, and forgive whatever you may find amiss."

"By my faith," said Sir Pierre Shafan, "there is nothing to forgive.—If you spiritual warriors have to submit to the grievous inconveniences which your lordship narrates, it would

It became not, a staid and slender man, in comparison of a bed as hard as a board, of breadth which relaxed as if made of loose wool, of flesh, which, in the middle and angled shape, seemed to put on, a level with Richard Cour-de-Lion, when he ate up the head of a Moor carbonaded, and of other wounds swearing rather of the rusticity of this northern region."

"By the good Saints, sir," said the Abbot, somewhat troubled in point of his character for hospitality, of which he was in truth a most faithful and zealous professor, "it grieves me to the heart that you have found our manors so badly provided for your reception.—Yet I cannot leave to chance, that if Sir Moses Shafton's affairs had permitted him to banquet with his company at your house of Saint Mary's, he might have had less to complain of in respect of sustenance."

"To give your lordship the reason," said Sir Fiacre Shafton, "why I could not at this present time approach your dwelling, or send myself of its well-known and undoubted hospitality, excuse either some delay, or," looking around him, "a limited audience."

The Lord Abbot immediately bowed his mandate to the Refectory: "Hie thee to the Kitchen, Brother Hilarius, and there make inquiry of our brother the Kitchener, within what time he opines that our collation may be prepared, since six and seven it were, considering the backlogs of this noble and gifted knight, as well maintaining as weighing there are ourselves have ordered, if we were now either to advance or retard the hour of refectory beyond the time when the vessels are fit to be set before us."

Brother Hilarius bowed with an eager eagerness to execute the will of his Superior, and returned with the assurance, that punctually at one afternoon would the collation be ready.

"Before that time," said the courteous Refectory, "the robes, furniture, and paraphernalia, will scarce have had the just degree of fire which hallowed pyrotechnics prescribe us for the help; and if it should be past one o'clock, were it but ten minutes, our brother the Kitchener opines, that the banquet of venison would suffer in spite of the skill of the little turn-brooks whom he has recommended to your holiness by his prayer."

"How?" said the Abbot, "a banquet of venison!—from whence comes that delay? I remember not that delay intrude its presence in thy banquet of venison."

"So please your holiness and lordship," said the Rebeckson, "he is a son of the women of the house who hath shot it and sent it us—killed but raw, yet, as the animal heart hath not left the body, the Kitcheners undertaker it shall eat as tender as a young chicken—and this youth hath a special gift in shooting deer, and never misses the heart or the brain; so that the blood is not driven through the flesh, as happens too often with us. It is a lack of grace—your holiness has seldom seen such a luscious."

"Blessed, Brother Hilarius," said the Abbot, wiping his mouth, "it is not becoming our order to talk of food so earnestly, especially as we must oft have our animal powers exhausted by fasting, and be sensible (as being ever more mortals) to these signs of longing" (he again wiped his mouth) "which arise on the mention of victuals to us hungry men.—Mind's sake, however, the name of that youth—it is fitting meat should be rewarded, and he shall hereafter be a *frater ad observandum* in the kitchen and larder."

"Alas! reverend Father, and my good lord," replied the Rebeckson, "I did inquire after the youth, and I learn he is one who prefers the dagger to the sword, and the sword of the flesh to the weapons of the spirit."

"And if it be so," said the Abbot, "see that thou return him as a deputy-knave and non-stirrer, and not as a lay brother of the Monastery—the old Talfboy, our forster, wears dim-sped, and hath twice spoiled a noble buck, by hitting him unwarily on the luscious. Ah! 'tis a foul fault, the showing by evil-doing, evil-doing, evil-doing, or otherwise, the good creature indulged to be for our use. Wherefore, secure us the service of this youth, Brother Hilarius, in the way that may best suit him.—And now, Sir Pierre Shafon, since the fates have assigned us a space of well-nigh an hour, are we then here to enjoy more than the vapour or shadow of our request, say I pray you, of your coming, to tell us the cause of this wait; and, above all, to inform us, why you will not approach our more pleasant and better furnished lodgings."

"Reverend Father, and my very good lord," said Sir Pierre Shafon, "it is well known to your wisdom, that there are stone walls which have ears, and that secrecy is to be looked to in matters which concern a man's head."

The Abbot signed to his attendants, accepting the Sub-Prior,

to leave the room, and then said, "Your value, Sir Francis, may freely ascribe yourself before our faithful friend and counsellor Father Easton, the benefits of whose advice we may too soon lose, inasmuch as his merits will speedily recommend him to a higher station, in which, we trust, he may find the blessing of a friend and adviser as valuable as himself, since I may say of him, as our devoted friend goeth,"

'Grant alike all prizes,
To us none but merit,
Only conquer contests,
With the conqueror.'

Indeed," he added, "the office of Sub-Prior is altogether beneath our dear brother; nor can we elevate him into that of Prior, which, for certain reasons, is at present kept vacant amongst us. However, Father Easton is fully possessed of my confidence, and worthy of yours, and will may it be said of him, *Subsidiis in nostra curat*."

Sir Francis then bowed to the reverend brethren, and, having a sigh, as if he would have burst his steel cuirass, he thus commenced his speech:—

"Curses, reverend sirs, I may well leave such a respiration, who have, as it were, exchanged heaven for purgatory, leaving the lightsome sphere of the royal court of England, for a remote nook in this inaccessible desert—quitting the city-yard, where I was ever ready among my companions to splinter a lance, either for the love of honour, or for the honour of love, in order to couch my knightly spear against base and pitting beggars and murderers—exchanging the lighted halls, wherein I used usually to pace the swift courser, or to move with a halberd guard in the stately pillared, for the ragged and damped dungeons of rusty-coloured stone—quitting the gay theatre, for the solitary chimney-stack of a Scottish doo-house—bartering the sounds of the soul-enlivening lute, and the love-enriching viol-do-garbis, for the discordant squeak of a northern bagpipe—above all, exchanging the smiles of those beauties, who form a galaxy around the thrones of England, for the cold courtesy of an untalented dame, and the bewildered stare of a miller's maiden. More might I say, of the exchange of the conversation of gallant knights and gay couriers of mine own order and

* The end of this doggerel verse may be found in *Puck's* famous work on *British Mathematics*.

equality, whose counsels are bright and vivid as the lightning, for that of monks and churchmen—but it were discourteous to urge that topic.”

The Abbot listened to this list of complaints with great round eyes, which evinced an acute intelligence of the donor's meaning; and when the knight passed to take breath, he looked with a doubtful and inquiring eye at the Sub-Prior, not well knowing in what tone he should reply to an audience so extraordinary. The Sub-Prior accordingly stopped as to the relief of his principal.

“We deeply sympathize with you, Sir Knight, in the several mortifications and hardships to which fate has subjected you, particularly in that which has thrown you into the society of those, who, as they were conscious they deserved not such an honour, so neither did they at all desire it. But all this goes little way to expound the cause of this train of disasters, or, in plainer words, the reason which has impelled you into a situation having so few charms for you.”

“Gentle and reverend sir,” replied the knight, “forgive an unhappy person, who, in giving a history of his miseries, dilateeth upon them extremely, even as he win, having fallen from a precipice, looketh upward to measure the height from which he hath been precipitated.”

“Yes, but,” said Father Eustace, “methinks it were wiser in him to tell those who come to lift him up, which of his bones have been broken.”

“You, reverend sir,” said the knight, “have, in the encounter of our wife, made a fair attack; whereas I may be in some sort said to have broken my staff across.” Pardon me, grave sir, that I speak the language of the Sitt-yard, which is doubtless strange to your reverend ears.—Ah! have resort of the noble, the fair, and the gay!—Ah! throne of love, and altar of honour!—Ah! celestial beauties, by whose bright eyes it is graced! Never more shall Parole Shofon advance, as the centre of your radiant glances, reach his haire, and spur his horse at the sound of the spirit-stirring trampole, nobly called

“dissual,” a term of tilting used to express the champion's having advanced his stock, or in other words, struck his lance straight and fell against the balise or breast of his adversary. Whence to break the lance across, signified a total failure in drawing the point of the weapon on the object of his aim.

the voice of war—never more shall he baffle his adversary's encounter boldly, break his spear dexterously, and smiling around the lovely circle, receive the rewards with which beauty honours chivalry!"

Here he paused, wrung his hands, looked upwards, and seemed lost in contemplation of his own fallen fortunes.

"Mad, very mad," whispered the Abbot to the Sub-Prior, "I would we were fairly rid of him; for, of a truth, I expect he will proceed from raving to mischief—Were it not better to call up the rest of the brethren?"

But the Sub-Prior knew better than his Superior how to distinguish the signs of affection from the ravings of insanity, and although the extremity of the knight's passion seemed altogether fantastic, yet he was not ignorant in what extreme degrees the fashion of the day can conduct its votaries.

Allowing, therefore, two months' space to permit the knight's enthusiastic feelings to exhaust themselves, he again gravely reminded him that the Lord Abbot had taken a journey, unavailing to his age and habits, solely to learn in what he could serve Sir Pierrot Chaston—that it was altogether impossible he could do so without his receiving distinct information of the situation in which he had now sought refuge in Scotland.—"The day were on," he observed, looking at the window; "and if the Abbot should be obliged to return to the Monastery without obtaining the necessary intelligence, the regret might be mutual, but the inconvenience was like to be all on Sir Pierrot's own side."

The hint was not thrown away.

"O goddess of courtesy!" said the knight, "can I have so far forgotten thy behests as to make this good priest's own and time a sacrifice to my vain complaints! Know, then, most worthy, and not less wonderful, that I, your poor visitor and guest, am by birth nearly bound to the Pierrot of Northumberland, whose name is so widely blown through all parts of the world, whose English worth hath been known. Now, this present Earl of Northumberland, of whom I propose to give you the brief history"—

"It is altogether unnecessary," said the Abbot; "we know him to be a good and true soldier, and a sworn upholder of our Catholic faith, in the spite of the heretical women who now sit upon the throne of England. And it is specially so his

known, and we knowing that ye partake with him in such devoted and faithful belief and adherence to our holy Mother Church, that we say to you, Sir Francis Blincoe, that ye be heartily welcome to us, and that, as we were here, we would labour to do you good service in your extremity."

"For such kind offer I owe your most humble thanks," said Sir Francis; "nor need I at this moment say more than that my Right Honourable Cousin of Northumberland, having dined with me and some others, the choice and picked spirits of the age, how and by what means the winking of God, according to the Catholic Church, might be again introduced into this distracted kingdom of England (even as our darkness, by the assistance of his friend, to catch and to handle a runaway steed), it pleased him so deeply to interest me in those communications, that my personal safety becomes, as it were, entrained or compassed therewith. Notwithstanding, as we have had sufficient reason to believe, that Princess Elizabeth, who maintains an armed heresey of conscience stiffled in tracking whatever sciences may be pursued by bringing her tale into challenge, or for setting upon the discipline of the Catholic Church, has obtained certain knowledge of the treason which we had told before we could give her taste them. Wherefore, my Right Honourable Cousin of Northumberland, thinking it best better that one man should take both blame and shame for the whole, did lay the burden of all this inflicting upon my back; which had I not the rather content to bear, in that he hath always shown himself my friend and honourable kinsman, as well as that my estate, I wot not how, hath of late been somewhat insufficient to maintain the expense of those braveries, wherewith it is incumbent on us, viz. are chosen and selected spirits, to distinguish ourselves from the vulgar."

"So that possibly," said the Sub-Prior, "your private affairs rendered a foreign journey less becoming than to you that it might have been to the noble earl, your right worthy cousin?"

"You are right, reverend sir," answered the courtier; "and so—you have touched the point with a needle.—My coat and expenses had been indeed somewhat lavish at the late triumphs and tournaments, and the Sub-prior's citizens had shown themselves unwilling to furnish my pockets for new gallantries for the honour of the nation, as well as for mine own peculiar glory—and, to speak truth, it was in some part the hope of seeing

these matters preceded that led me to desire a new world in England."

"Be that the misfortune of your public enterprise, with the derangement of your own private affairs," said the Sub-Prior, "have induced you to seek Scotland as a place of refuge?"

"Yes, sir, once again," said Sir Piercie; "and not without good cause, since my neck, if I remained, might have been brought within the circumstances of a halter—and so speedy was my journey northward, that I had but time to exchange my peach-coloured doublet of Genoa velvet, thickly lined over with goldsmith's work, for this coarse, which was made by Bonasus of Milan, and travelled northward with all speed, judging that I might do well to visit my Right Honourable Cousin of Northumberland, at one of his numerous castles. But as I posted towards Alnwick, even with the speed of a star, which, darting from its native sphere, shoots wildly downwards, I was met at Northallerton by one Henry Vaughan, a servant of my right honourable kinsman, who showed me, that, as then I might not with safety come to his presence, seeing that, in obedience to orders from his court, he was obliged to leave out letters for my incarceration."

"This," said the Abbot, "seems but hard measure on the part of your honourable kinsman."

"It might be so judged, my lord," replied Sir Piercie; "nevertheless, I will stand to the death for the honour of my Right Honourable Cousin of Northumberland. Also Henry Vaughan gave me, from my said cousin, a good horse, and a purse of gold, with two Border-prividers, as they are called, for my gallas, who conducted me, by such roads and by-paths as have never been seen since the days of Sir Lancelot and Sir Tristram, into this Kingdom of Scotland, and to the house of a certain Baron, or one who holds the style of such, called Julian Arundel, with whom I found such reception as the place and party could afford."

"And that," said the Abbot, "must have been right wretched; for, to judge from the appetite which Julian showed when dined, he hath not, I judge, over-abundant provision at home."

"You are right, sir—your reverence is in the right," continued Sir Piercie; "we had but mutton here, and, what was worse, a score or two at the departure; for though this Julian

Armed called us to no reckoning, yet he did us extravagantly where the fashion of my present—the present being of silver completely hatched, and indeed the weapon being altogether a piece of exceeding rare device and beauty—that in faith I could not for very shame's sake but pay his acceptance of it; words which he gave me not the trouble of repeating twice, before he had struck it into his gray half-hilt, where, wadit me, reversed air, it showed more like a butcher's knife than a gentleman's dagger."

"So goodly a gift might at least have purchased you a few days' hospitality," said Father Bontoon.

"Reverend sir," said Sir Percie, "had I abided with him, I should have been complimented out of every remnant of my wardrobe—nearly stayed, by the hospitable gale I swear it! Sir, he covered my spare doublet, and had a pluck at my gull-girdles—I was enforced to best a retreat before I was altogether straggled. That Border knave, his serving-man, had a pluck at me too, and swayed a scarlet cassock and steel corses belonging to the page of my lady, whom I was fain to have behind me. In good time I received a letter from my right Honourable Cousin, showing me that he had written to you in my behalf, and sent to your charge two male fillet with wearing apparel—namely, my rich crimson silk doublet, slashed out and lined with cloth of gold, which I wore at the last revels, with belaise and trimmings to correspond—also two pair black silk slaps, with hanging garters of crimson silk—also the flesh-colored effron doublet, with the trimmings of fur, in which I danced the salvage man at the Gray's Inn mummery—also."

"Sir Knight," said the Sub-Prior, "I pray you to spare the further inventory of your wardrobe. The monks of Saint Mary's are no freeloading barons, and whatever part of your wardrobe arrived at our house, have been this day faithfully brought hither, with the male which contained them. I may perceive from what has been said, as we have indeed been given to understand by the Earl of Northumberland, that your desire is to remain for the present as unknown and as unnoted, as may be consistent with your high worth and distinction."

"Also, reverend father?" replied the knight, "a blade when it is in the scabbard cannot give light, a diamond when it is in the market cannot give light, and worth, when it is concealed by

circumstances to clothe itself, cannot draw themselves—my interest was only aimed at the admission of those few to whom circumstances permit its displaying itself."

"I conceive now, my venerable father and lord," said the Sub-Prior, "that your wisdom will assign such a course of conduct to this noble knight, as may be alike consistent with his safety, and with the good of the community. For you wot well, that parting strokes have been made in these calamitous days, to the destruction of all ecclesiastical foundations, and that our holy community has been repeatedly menaced. Eliberto they have found no flaw in our reliance; but a party, friendly as well to the Queen of England, as to the heretical doctrines of the schismatical church, or even to worse and wilder forms of heresy, prevails now at the court of our sovereign, who does not yield to her suffering clergy the protection she would gladly extend to them."

"My lord, and reverend sir," said the knight, "I will gladly relieve you of my presence, while ye discuss this matter at your freedom; and to speak truly, I am desirous to see in what case the chamberlains of my noble kinsman hath found my wardrobe, and how he hath packed the same, and whether it has suffered from the journey—there are four suits of as pure and elegant diction as ever the fancy of a fair lady doted upon, every one having a tunic, and appropriate change of ribbons, trappings, and fringe, which, in case of need, may as it were rescue each of them, and multiply the four into twelve.—There is also my red-coloured rousquart, and three out-work shirts with falling bands—I pray you, pardon me—I must needs see how matters stand with them without further dillying."

Thus speaking, he left the room; and the Sub-Prior, looking after him significantly, added, "Where the treasure is will the heart be also."

"Saint Mary preserve our wife!" said the Abbot, started with the knight's abundance of words; "were man's brain ever so stuffed with salt and breadstitch, out-work, and I wot not what besides! And what could move the Earl of Northumberland to assume for his bonnet counsellor, in matters of death and danger, such a feather-brained oxcomb as this!"

"Had he been other than what he is, venerable father," said the Sub-Prior, "he had been less fitted for the part of messenger to which his Right Honourable Council had probably

destined him from the commencement, in case of their plot failing. I know something of the *Florus* shadow. The legitimacy of his mother's descent from the *Piccone* family, the point on which he is most jealous, hath been called in question. If hardhearted courage, and an outrageous spirit of gallantry, can make good his pretensions to the high lineage he claims, these qualities have never been denied him. For the rest, he is one of the roffing gallants of the time, like *Roseland*, *York*, *Stately*,* and others, who wear out their fortunes, and endanger their lives, in life brevities, in order that they may be obtained the only choice gallants of the time; and afterwards endeavour to repair these estates, by engaging in the desperate plots and conspiracies which wear heads have devised. To me one of his own concealed stratagems, such outrageous deeds resemble hawks, which the wiser conspirator keeps hooded and blinded on his wrist until the quarry is on the wing, and who are then flown at them."

"*Saint Mary*," said the Abbot, "he were an evil guest to introduce into our quiet household. Our young monks make heads enough, and more than is becoming *God's* servants, about their outward attire already—this might were enough to turn their brains, from the *Piccone* down to the very scullion boy."

"A worse evil might follow," said the Sub-Prior: "in these bad days, the patrimony of the church is bought and sold, divided and distressed, as if it were the unhallowed soil appertaining to a secular baron. Think what penalty awaits us, were we convicted of inducing a rebel to let when they call the *Queen of England*! There would neither be wanting Scottish parasites to beg the lands of the *Foundation*, nor an army from *England* to burn and carry the *Habitants*. The men of Scotland were once Scotsmen, firm and united in their love of their country, and throwing every other consideration aside when the frontier was menaced—now they are—what shall I call them—the one part French, the other part English, considering their dear native country merely as a prize-fighting stage, upon which foreigners are welcome to decide their quarrels."

"*Beneficence*!" replied the Abbot, "they are indeed slippery and evil times."

"And therefore," said Father *Stately*, "we must walk warily

* Note G. *Roseland*, *York*, and *Stately*.

—we must not, for example, bring this man—that Sir Pierre Shafton, to our house of Saint Mary's."

"But how then shall we dispose of him?" replied the Abbot; "believe thou that he is a sufferer for holy Church's sake—that his father, the Earl of Northumberland, hath been our friend, and that, being so near us, he may work us good or evil according as we deal with his kinsmen."

"And, accordingly," said the Sub-Prior, "for these reasons, as well as for discharge of the great duty of Christian charity, I would protect and relieve this man. Let him not go back to Julian Avenue—that unchristianous house would not stick to plunder the wretched stranger—Let him remain here—the spot is secluded, and if the accommodation be beneath his quality, discovery will become the less likely. We will make such means for his convenience as we can devise."

"Will he be persuaded, thinkst thou?" said the Abbot; "I will have my own travelling bed for his repose, and send up a suitable easy-chair."

"With such assurances," said the Sub-Prior, "he must not complain; and then, if threatened by any sudden danger, he can soon come down to the sanctuary, where we will harbour him in secret until means can be devised of dismissing him in safety."

"Were we not better," said the Abbot, "send him on to the court, and get rid of him at once?"

"Ay, but at the expense of our friends—this butterfly may fold his wings and be under cover in the cold air of Glendunary; but were he at Holyrood, he would, did his life depend on it, expose his speckled drapery in the eyes of the queen and court—Rather than did of distraction, he would sue for love to our gracious sovereign—the eyes of all men would be upon him in the course of those short days, and the international peace of the two ends of the island endangered for a creature, who, like a silly moth, cannot elude from fluttering round a light."

"Thou hast persuaded with me, Father Richard," said the Abbot, "and it will go hard but I improve on thy plan—I will send up in secret, not only household stuff, but wine and vessel-board. There is a young swineherd here who shoots venison well. I will give him directions to see that the knight lacks none."

"Whatever accommodation he can have, which infers not a

risk of discovery," said the Sub-Prior, "it is our duty to assist him."

"Nay," said the Abbot, "we will do more, and will instantly dispatch a secret express to the keeper of our treasury to send us such things as he may want, even this night. So it done, good father."

"I will," answered Father Eustace; "but I hear the gail chambers for some one to trace his points." He will be fortunate if he lights on any one here who can do him the office of groom of the chamber."

"I would he would appear," said the Abbot, "for here comes the Reflectioner with the collection—By my faith, the rhin hath given me a sharp appetite!"

* The points were the strings of wood or silver he called, because shaped with metal like the horns of women's stools, which attached the blanket to the loom. They were very numerous, and required assistance to be drawn properly, which was called *treating*.

CHAPTER SEVENTEENTH.

I'll seek for other ail—Spirits, they say,
Flit round invisibly, as thick as rain;
There is the mischief. If that will
On treacherous's eyes you compel them,
They shall hold council with me.

JAMES IRVING.

THE reader's attention must be recalled to Halbert Glendinning, who had left the Tower of Glendoune immediately after his quarrel with its new guest, Sir Pierce Shafton. As he walked with a rapid pace up the glen, Old Martin followed him, beseeching him to be less hasty.

"Halbert," said the old man, "you will never live to have white hair, if you take fire thus at every spark of provocation."

"And why should I wish it, old man," said Halbert, "if I am to be the butt that every fool may aim a shaft of scorn against?—What avails it, old man, that you yourself move, sleep, and walk, eat thy sipped meat, and repose on thy hard pallet?—Why art thou so well pleased that the morning should call thee up to duty toil, and the evening again lay thee down a

wearied-out world! Were it not better sleep and wake no more, than to undergo the dull exchange of labour for sustenance, and of necessity for labour?"

"Ood help me," answered Martin, "there may be truth in what thou sayest—but walk slower, for my old limbs cannot keep pace with your young legs—walk slower and I will tell you why ere, though unlady, is yet admissible."

"Speak on then," said Halbert, slackening his pace, "but remember we must seek repose to refresh the fatigues of these lady men, who will this morning have achieved a journey of ten miles; and if we reach not the Brocksborns' head we are scarce like to see an acider."

"Then know, my good Halbert," said Martin, "when I lose as my own son, that I am entitled to live till death calls me, because my Maker wills it. Ay, and although I spend what men call a hard life, plucked with cold in winter, and burnt with heat in summer, though I feel hard and sleep hard, and am held mean and degraded, yet I bethink me, that were I of no use on the face of this fair creation, God would withdraw me from it."

"Then poor old man," said Halbert, "and can such a vain notion as this of thy decaying age, reconcile thee to a world where thou playest so poor a part?"

"My part was ready as yours," said Martin, "my person nearly as much decayed, the day that I saved my mistress and her child from perishing in the wilderness."

"Right, Martin," answered Halbert; "these, indeed, thou dost what might be a sufficient apology for a whole life of lengthenedness."

"And do you account it for nothing, Halbert, that I should have the power of giving you a lesson of patience, and submission to the decrees of Providence! Methinks there is use for the grey hairs on the old scalp, were it but to instruct the green head by precept and by example."

Halbert held down his face, and remained silent for a minute or two, and then resumed his discourse: "Martin, what thou sayest changed in me of late?"

"Surely," said Martin. "I have always known you heady, wild, and inconsiderate, rude, and prompt to speak at the valley and without reflection; but now, methinks, your bearing, without losing the natural fire, has something in it of force and

dignity which it had not before. It seems as if you had fallen asleep a curle, and awakened a gentleman."

"Then cease judge, then, of noble bearing!" said Halbert.

"Surely," answered Martin, "in some sort I can; for I have travelled through coast, and camp, and city, with my master Walter Arden, although he could do nothing for me in the long run, but give me room for two score of sheep on the hill—and surely even now, while I speak with you, I feel conscious that my language is more refined than it is my wont to use, and that—though I know not the reason—the rude northern dialect, so familiar to my tongue, has given place to a more cultivated speech."

"And the change is thyself and no, thou comest by no means account for!" said young Glanville.

"Change!" replied Martin, "by our Lady it is not so much a change which I feel, as a swelling and renewing sentiments and expressions which I had some thirty years since, ere Tibb and I set up our humble household. It is singular, that your society should have this sort of influence over me, Halbert, and that I should never have experienced it ere now."

"Thankst thou," said Halbert, "thou wert in no sight that can raise me from this base, low, dejected state, into one where I may rank with those proud men, who now despise my deplorable poverty!"

Martin paused an instant, and then answered, "Doubtless you may, Halbert; as becometh a ship has come to land. Heard ye never of Hughie Dun, who left this Halidome some thirty-five years gone by? A delversly fellow was Hughie—could read and write like a priest, and could wield broad and buckler with the best of the robbers. I mist him—the like of him was never seen in the Halidome of Saint Mary's, and so was soon of the preference that God sent him."

"And what was that?" said Halbert, his eyes sparkling with eagerness.

"Nothing less," answered Martin, "than body-servant to the Archbishop of Saint Andrews!"

Halbert's countenance fell.—"A servant—and to a priest! Was this all that knowledge and sobriety could raise him to?"

Martin, in his turn, looked with wistful surprise in the face of his young friend. "And to what could fortune lead him further?" answered he. "The son of a fish-farmer is not the

stuff that lords and knights are made of. George and school-maſt cannot change chaff's blood into gentle blood, I trow. I have heard, forly, that Hughie Don left a good five hundred pounds of Scots money to his only daughter, and that she married the Duke of Richmond."

At this moment and while Halbert was embarrassed with deriving a suitable answer, a deer bounded across their path. In an instant the cross-bow was at the youth's shoulder, the bolt whistled, and the deer, after giving one bound upright, dropped dead on the grassward.

"There lies the venison our dame wanted," said Martin; "who would have thought of an out-lying stag being so low down the glen at this season!—and it is a hart of good size too, in full season, and three inches of fat on the breast. Now this is all your luck, Halbert, that follows you, go where you like. Were you to get in for it, I would warrant you were made one of the Abbot's poorman-priests, and ride about in a purple doublet as bold as the best."

"Tush, man," answered Halbert, "I will serve the Queen or no too. Take thou care to have down the venison to the Tower, since they expect it. I will on to the moon. I have two or three black-balls at my girdle, and it may be I shall find wild-fire."

He hastened his pace and was soon out of sight. Martin paused for a moment, and looked after him. "There goes the making of a right gallant stripling, an ambition have not the speaking of him—Serve the Queen! said he. By my faith, and the hairs were straws, from all that I am heard of him. And whither should he not keep a high head? They that stide to the top of the ladder will at least get up some rounds. They that mint* at a gown of gold will always get a sleeve of it. But come, sir (addressing the stag), you shall go to Glenclough on my two legs somewhat more slowly than you were frisking it even now on your own four nimble shanks. Nig, by my faith, if you be as heavy, I will content me with the best of you, and that's the hunch and the umble, and s/he leave up the rest on the old oak-tree yonder, and come back for it with one of the yowls."†

While Martin returned to Glenclough with the venison, Hal-

* Mint—minted.

† Yowls—howls, more particularly howls of labour.

best presented his walk, breathing more easily since he was free of his associates. "The domestic of a proud and lazy priest—holy-appeal to the Archbishop of Saint Andrews," he repeated to himself; "and this, with the privilege of allying his blood with the House of Pittenweem, is thought a preferment worth a brave man struggling for;—my more, a preferment which, if allowed, should crown the hopes past, present, and to come, of the son of a kirk-vaunt! By Heaven, but that I find in me a reluctance to practice their acts of nocturnal rapine, I would rather take the jack and lance, and join with the Borderers.—Something I will do. Here, degraded and dishonoured, I will not live the scene of such whiffling stranger from the South, because, smooth, he wears talking upon as a tavern host. This thing—the phantom, be it what it will, I will see it once more. Since I spoke with her, and touched her hand, thoughts and feelings have dawned on me, of which my former life had not even dreamed; but shall I, who feel my father's glen too narrow for my expanding spirit, brook to be barred in it by this vain gossip of a nunster, and in the sight too of Mary Arwell? I will not stoop to it, by Heaven!"

As he spoke thus, he arrived in the sequestered glen of Christy-croft, as it was called upon the hour of noon. A few moments he remained looking upon the fountain, and doubting in his own mind with what countenance the White Lady might receive him. She had not indeed expressly forbidden his again evading her; but yet there was something like such a prohibition implied in the farewell, which recommended him to wait for another guide.

Half-an-hour did not long, however, allow himself to pause. Hardhood was the natural characteristic of his mind; and under the experience and modification which his feelings had lately undergone, it had been augmented rather than diminished. He drew his sword, and the broken from his scabbard, bowed three times with deliberation towards the fountain, and as often towards the tree, and repeated the same rhyme as formerly,—

"Thrice to the holly bush—
Thrice to the well!—
I bid thee wait,
White Maid of Arwell!"

Three glances on the Lake—
Three glances on the Fell—
Wake thee, O wake,
White Maid of Arwell!"

His eye was on the holly bush as he spoke the last line; and

it was not without an involuntary shuddering that he saw the air between his eyes and that object become more dense, and condensed, as it were, into the faint appearance of a form, through which, however, as thin and transparent was the first appearance of the phantom, he could discern the outline of the back, as through a veil of fine crepe. But, gradually, it darkened into a more substantial appearance, and the White Lady stood before him with displeasure on her brow. She spoke, and her speech was still song, or rather measured chant; but, as if now more familiar, it flowed occasionally in modulated blank-verse, and at other times in the lyrical measure which she had used at their former meeting.

"This is the day when the fairy kind
 Its wrappings slough for their hapless lot,
 And the west-wind's sighs to the sighing wind,
 And the mermaid's weeps to her crystal grot:
 For this is the day that a deed was wrought,
 In which we have neither part nor share,
 For the children of day was salvation brought,
 But not for the forms of sea or air!
 And over the mortal musters forth,
 Who mocketh our race on the Friday morn."

"Spirit," said Halbert Glendinning, boldly, "it is needless to threaten one who holds his life at no rate. Thine anger can but slay; nor do I think thy power extendeth, or thy will stretcheth, so far. The terrors which your race produce upon others, are vain against me. My heart is hardened against fear, as by a sense of despair. If I am, as thy words infer, of a race more piously the care of heaven than thine, it is mine to call, it must be thine to answer. I am the nobler being."

As he spoke, the figure looked upon him with a fierce and brief countenance, which, without losing the similitude of that which it usually exhibited, had a wilder and more exaggerated cast of features. The eyes seemed to contract and become more fiery, and slight convulsions passed over the face, as if it was about to be transformed into something hideous. The whole appearance resembled those faces which the imagination conceives by when it is disturbed by madness, but which do not remain under the visionary's command, and, beautiful in their first appearance, become wild and grotesque as we can arrest them.

But when Halbert had concluded his bold speech, the White Lady stood before him with the same pale, fixed, and melan-

choy aspect which she usually bore. He had expected the agitation which she exhibited would conclude in some frightful metamorphosis. Folding her arms on her bosom, the phantom replied,—

"During youth I for thee it is well,
Here telling me in hushed dull,
That thy heart has not quell'd,
But thy courage hath,
And that thou couldst meet
The angry look
Of Mar of Arden.
Did we thus strive,
Or we could strive,
Then work lost for ever
Though I am torn'd from thee often time,
and my blood is of the wildest dye,
And thou art torn'd of soul and flesh,
Thou wilt to speak, reply I must."

"I demand of thee, then," said the youth, "by what charm it is that I am thus altered in mind and in wisdom—that I think no longer of deer or dog, of love or hate—that my soul spurns the bounds of this cloister glen—that my blood boils at an insult from one by whose slap I would some days since have run for a whole summer's morn', contented and honoured by the notice of a single word! Why do I now seek to mate me with princes, and knights, and nobles?—Am I the same, who but yesterday, as it were, slumbered in contented obscurity, but who am to-day awakened to glory and ambition?—Speak—tell me, if thou canst, the meaning of this change!—Am I spell-bound?—or have I till now been under the influence of a spell, that I feel as another being, yet am conscious of retaining the same? Speak and tell me, is it to thy influence that the change is owing?"

The White Lady replied,—

"A whisper whist for thee I
While e'er the welcome his power;
How sweet the night is the day,
The truth is the know,
Change'd in shape, yet mightiest still,
He while the heart of man is well,
From ill to good, from good to ill,
Is not and under-true."

"Speak not thus darkly," said the youth, colouring so deeply,

that face, neck, and hands were in a singular glow; "make me sensible of thy purpose."

The spirits answered,—

"Ask thy heart, when sweet cell
Is fill'd with Mary Arnold!
Ask thy pulse, why sweetly beat
In Mary's view it will not break!
Ask it, why thou wiltst be true
Among the gayety and the wine!—
Why thou speakest thy lovely tale?
Why thy passions are forgot?
Why thou wouldst be bloody strife,
Should thy look or lose thy life!
Ask thy heart, and it shall tell,
Fighting from its sweet cell,
'Tis for Mary Arnold."

"Tell me, then," said Halbert, his cheek still deeply crimsoned, "then who hast said to me that which I dared not say to myself, by what means shall I save my passion—by what means make it known?"

The White Lady replied,—

"Do not ask me;
On death's like those that wait and look on
The only one the passing show
Of human passion's rise and fall;
And view the papered life gleam
As mortal eye the eastern dawn,
When thousand streamers, flaring bright,
Career is o'er the tower of night,
And passers mark their changeful gleaming,
But feel no influence from their beams."

"Yet thou own'st," replied Halbert, "unless man greatly err, is linked with that of nature?"

The phantom answered,—

"By the mysterious link'd, our kind race
Hath strange connection with the soul of man.
The star that rose upon the House of Arnold,
When Norman Troy first crown'd the tower,
That star, when radiating in its orb,
Shed from its sphere a drop of diamond dew,
And the bright foot retired to—and a light
Shone from the fountain, and her days of life
Each co-existence with the House of Arnold,
And with the star that rules it."

"Speak yet more plainly," answered young Glendinning;
 "of this I can understand nothing. Say, what hath forged
 thy wretched¹ link of destiny with the House of Arundel? Say
 especially, what fate now overhangs that house?"

The White Lady replied,—

"Look on my glories—on this thread of gold—
 'Tis thus as with of lightest gauziness,
 And, but there is a spell on't, would not break,
 Light as they are, the folds of my life's robe;
 But when 'Twas doom'd, it was a massive chain,
 Such as might bind the champion of the Jews,
 Even when his limbs were loosed—it took it whelmed,
 Heav'n mislaid it in the substance and its strength,
 As with the greatness of the House of Arundel.
 When this fold thread grew rag, I to the elements
 Forgive the principles of life they laid me.
 And see no more of this!—the stars forbid it."

"Then count them read the stars," answered the youth;
 "and never tell me the fate of my passion, if thou count not
 aid it?"

The White Lady again replied,—

"She burns the most bright star of Arundel,
 Dim as the beams when the moon is shy,
 And the star-worshipper woe the light-house;
 There is an influence powerful and fearful,
 That dips its downward course, the eastern position,
 From hate and destiny, as in the aspect
 That burns upon its banner."

"And rivalry?" repeated Glendinning; "it is, then, as I
 feared!—But shall that English difference presume to bind me
 in my father's house, and in the presence of Mary Arundel?—
 Give me to meet her, speak—give me to do away the vain
 distinction of rank on which he refuses me the union. Place
 us on equal terms, and glaze the stars with what report they
 will, the word of my father shall control their influence."

She answered as promptly as before,—

"Complain not of me, child of step,
 It is thy love I yield the way.
 We, who were thy sphere above,
 Know not right of hate or love;
 As well as wisdom rules thy soul,
 My gifts to will turn, or good."

¹ I fancied—glad.

"Give me to redeem my honour," said Halbert Glendinning—"give me to return on my proud rival the insults he has thrown on me, and let the rest fare as it will. If I cannot revenge my wrong, I shall sleep quiet, and know naught of my disgrace."

The phantom failed not to reply,—

"When Florie Shotton looked up,
 Let this token meet his eye.
 The sun is winking from the dell,
 Thy wish is granted—fare thee well !"

As the White Lady spoke or chanted these last words, she smiled from her looks a silver hoeline, around which they were twisted, and gave it to Halbert Glendinning ; then shaking her dishevelled hair till it fell like a veil around her, the outlines of her form gradually became as diffuse as her flowing tresses, her countenance grew pale as the moon in her first quarter, her features became indistinguishable, and she melted into the air.

Edgar leaves us to wonder ; but the youth did not find himself alone by the fountain without experiencing, though in a much less degree, the revelation of spirits which he had felt upon the phantom's former disappearance. A doubt strongly pressed upon his mind, whether it were safe to avail himself of the gifts of a spirit which did not even pretend to belong to the class of angels, and might, for aught he knew, have a much worse lineage than that which she was pleased to avow. "I will speak of it," he said, "to Edward, who is closely learned, and will tell me what I should do. And yet, no—Edward is scrupulous and wary.—I will prove the effect of her gift on Sir Florie Shotton if he again braves me, and by the same, I will be myself a sufficient judge whether there is danger in resorting to her counsel. Hence, then, home—and we shall soon learn whether that home shall longer hold me ; for not again will I brook insult, with my father's sword by my side, and Mary for the spectator of my disgrace."

CHAPTER EIGHTEENTH.

I give thee eight hundred a-day,
 And my love shall thee love,
 And over all the north country,
 I make thee the chief squire.
 And I thee twenty a-day, quoth the queen,
 By God and by my life,
 Doste think thy payment when thou wilt,
 No man shall say thee nay.

WILLIAM OF CANTUAR.

THE manners of the age did not permit the inhabitants of Glendowry to partake of the collation which was placed in the apse of that ancient tower, before the Lord Abbot and his attendants, and Sir Pierre Clutton. Deane Glendowry was excluded both by inferiority of rank and by sex, for (though it was a rule often neglected) the Superior of Saint Mary's was observed from taking his meals in female society. To Mary Arund the latter, and to Edward Glendowry the former, respectfully attached, but it pleased his lordship to require their presence in the apartment, and to pay ready hand words to them upon the ready and hospitable reception which they had afforded him.

The smoking bench now stood upon the table; a napkin, white as snow, was, with due reverence, tucked under the chin of the Abbot by the Refectory; and whilst was waiting to commence the repast, were the presence of Sir Pierre Clutton, who at length appeared, glittering like the sun, in a costume-valued, doublet, skirted and puffed out with cloth of silver, his hat of the newest black, surrounded by a husband of goldsmith's work, while around his neck he wore a collar of gold, set with rubies and topazes so rich, that it rivalled his anxiety for the safety of his luggage from being founded upon his love of money. This gorgeous collar or chain, resembling those worn by the knights of the highest orders of chivalry, fell down on his breast, and terminated in a medallion.

"We waited for Sir Pierre Clutton," said the Abbot, hastily assuming his place in the great chair which the Kitchenier advanced to the table with ready hand.

"I pray your pardon, reverend father, and my good lord,"

VOL. II.

F

replied that pink of courtesy, "I did but wait to cast my falling slough, and to transmute myself into some useful form worthy for this worshipful company."

"I cannot but praise your gallantry, Sir Knight," said the Abbot, "and your prudence, also, for choosing the fitting time to appear thus adorned. Certain, had that goodly chain been visible in some part of your late progress, there was risk that the lurid owner might have parted company therewith."

"This chain, and your reverence!" answered Sir Piercie; "surely it is but a toy, a trifle, a slight thing which shews but poorly with this doublet—surely, when I wear that of the marry-coloured double-gilded Guesse velvet, pulled out with capes, the game, being relieved and set off by the dagger and more grave ground of the stuff, shew like stars giving a lustre through dark clouds."

"I nothing doubt it," said the Abbot, "but I pray you to sit down at the board."

But Sir Piercie had now got into his element, and was not easily interrupted—"I own," he continued, "that slight as the toy is, it might perchance have had some captivation for Julian—Santo Mado!" and he, interrupting himself; "what was I about to say, and my fair and beauteous Protection, or shall I rather term her my Discretion, here in presence!—Indiscreet hath it been in your Affability, O most lovely Discretion, to suffer a stray word to have broke out of the perfid of his mouth, that might overlap the face of civility, and trespass on the manner of decorum."

"Marry!" said the Abbot, somewhat impatiently, "the greatest discretion that I can see in the matter is, to eat our victuals, being hot—Father Esauce, say the Benedictine, and eat up the branch."

The Sub-Prior readily obeyed the first part of the Abbot's injunction, but paused upon the second—"It is Friday, most reverend," he said in Latin, desiring that the host should excuse, if possible, the sins of the stranger.

"We are travellers," said the Abbot in reply, "and water-line fishes at—You know the custom—a traveller must eat what find his hand sets out before him. I grant you all a dispensation to eat flesh this day, conditionally that you, brothers, say the Confiteor at Carfew time, that the knight give thanks to his ability, and that all and each of you fast from flesh on each

day within the next month that shall seem most convenient; whosoever fail to eat out your food with cheerful countenance, and you, Father Refectoryer, *de misericordia*."

While the Abbot was thus stating the conditions on which his indulgence was granted, he had already half finished a slice of the noble haunch, and now washed it down with a flagon of Rhineish, modestly tempered with water.

"Well is it said," he observed, as he requested from the Refectoryer another slice, "that virtue is its own reward; for though this is but humble fare, and hastily prepared, and eaten in a poor chamber, I do not remember me of having had such an appetite since I was a simple brother in the Abbey of Dundermann, and was wont to labour in the garden from morning until noon, when our Abbot struck the *Opusculum*. Then would I enter knee with hunger, parched with thirst (*de sede cibum parat, et curam sitis*), and partake with appetite of whatever was set before us, according to our rule; fast or fast-day, *civitas* or *postivitas*, was the same to me. I had no stomach complaints then, which now craves both the aid of wine and choice cookery, to render my food acceptable to my palate, and easy of digestion."

"It may be, holy father," said the Sub-Prior, "as occasioned ride to the extremity of Saint Mary's patronage, may have the same happy effect on your health as the air of the garden at Dundermann."

"Perhaps, with our patroness's blessing, such progress may advantage us," said the Abbot; "having an especial eye that our venison is carefully killed by some workman that is master of his craft."

"If the Lord Abbot will permit us," said the Kitchener, "I think the best way to secure his lordship on that important point, would be to retain as a game-keeper, or deputy-vener, the eldest son of this good woman, Dame Glendinning, who is here to wait upon us. I should know by mine office what belongs to killing of game, and I can safely pronounce, that never saw I, or any other sportsman, a bolt so judicious shot. It has done the very heart of the buck."

"What speak you to us of one good shot, father?" said Sir Pierre; "I would advise you that such no more upbraid a shooter, than doth one swallow make a summer—I have seen this springfield of whom you speak, and if his hand can stand forth his shafts as boldly as his tongue doth utter pro-

scriptures speeches, I will own him as good as slain as Balin Hood."

"Marry," said the Abbot, "and it is fitting we know the truth of this matter from the dame herself; for ill advised were we to give way to any rashness in this matter, whereby the liberties which heaven and our patroness provide might be uselessly mangled, and rendered unfit for worthy men's use.—Stand forth, therefore, Dame Glendinning, and tell to us, as thy lige lord and spiritual superior, using plainness and truth, without either fear or favour, as being a matter wherein we are deeply interested, Dost this son of thine not live as well as the Father Kitchener serves to us?"

"So please your noble fatherhood," answered Dame Glendinning, with a deep courtesy, "I should know somewhat of woe-bury to my cost, seeing my husband—God send! his!—was slain in the field of Pinkie with an arrow-shot, while he was fighting under the King's banner, as became a loyal vassal of the Halldons. He was a valiant man, please your reverence, and an honest, and saying that he loved a bit of venison, and shifted for his living at a time as Border-men will sometimes do, I was not of sin that he did. And yet, though I have paid for more after mass to the matter of a forty shilling, besides a quarter of wheat and four firchs of rye, I can have no assurance yet that he has been delivered from purgatory."

"Dame," said the Lord Abbot, "this shall be looked into heedfully; and since thy husband fell, as thou sayest, in the King's quarrel, and under her banner, rely upon it, that we will have him out of purgatory forthwith—that is, always provided he be there—but it is not of thy husband whom we now desire to speak, but of thy son; not of a stout heartman but of a stout deer.—Wherefore, I say, answer me to the point, is thy son a practised archer, yea or no?"

"Alack! my reverend lord," replied the widow, "and my craft would be better tilled, if I could answer your reverence that he is not.—Practised archer!—marry, holy sir, I would he would practise something else—cross-bow and long-bow, hand-gun and halibut, falconet and saker, he can shoot with them all. And if it would please this right honourable gentleman, our guest, to hold out his hat at the distance of a hundred yards, our Halbert shall send shot, bolt, or bullet through it (so that right honourable gentlemen receive not, but hold

get steady; and I will drink a quarter of looking if he touch but a knot of his shanks. I have seen our old Martin do as much, and so has our right reverend the Sub-Prior, if he be pleased to remember it."

"I am not like to forget it, dame," said Father Burtos; "for I know not which went to admire, the composure of the young madwoman, or the steadiness of the old monk. Yet I promise not to advise Sir Pierre Shafton to subject his valuable beaver, and yet more valuable person, to such a risk, unless it should be his own special pleasure."

"Be contented it is not," said Sir Pierre Shafton, something hastily; "be well contented, holy father, that it is not. I dispute not the life's qualities, for which your reverence vaunts. But here we hat wood, strings are hat fax, or the ill-worn cumbered at back; arched are hat men, fingers may slip, eyes may dimble, the blindest may hit the butt, the best member may shoot a bow's length beside. Therefore will we try no perious experiments."

"Be that as you will, Sir Pierre," said the Abbot, "were-time we will want this youth bow-bearer as the forest granted to us by good King David, that the chase might recreate our wearied spirits, the flock of the deer improve our poor commons, and the hinds cover the backs of our Henry; thus treading at once in the weakness of body and soul."

"Kneel down, women, kneel down," said the Richelieu and the Kitchenier, with one voice, to Denis Glendinning, "and kiss his lordship's hand, for the grace which he has granted to thy son."

They then, as if they had been chanting the service and the responses, set off in a sort of dance, commemorating the advantages of the situation.

"A green gown and a pair of leathern gaiters every Protestant," said the Kitchenier.

"Four marks by the poor of Conscience," answered the Richelieu.

"An hoghead of ale at Marlman, of the double stoke, and drink ale at pleasure, as he shall agree with the collarer"—

"Who is a reasonable man," said the Abbot, "and will accept of an active servant of the convent."

"A man of look and a hole of station or beef at the Kitchenier's, on each high holiday," resumed the Kitchenier.

"The gang of two cows and a palfrey on our lady's meadow," answered his brother officer.

"An exchequer to make bankers of yesty, because of the leeches," added the Kitchener.

"And various other propensities, *que sunt prescribere legem*," said the Abbot, assuming, with his own lordly voice, the advantage attached to the office of converted heretic.

During Glendinning was all this while on her knees, her head mechanically turning from the one church officer to the other, which, as they stood one on each side of her, had much the appearance of a figure moved by clock-work, and as soon as they were silent, most devoutly did she kiss the magnificent hand of the Abbot. Occasionally, however, of Halbert's intractability on some points, she could not help qualifying her grateful and reverent thanks for the Abbot's beautiful profile, with a hope that Halbert would see his wisdom, and accept of it.

"Hav," said the Abbot, bending his brow, "accept of it!—Woman, is thy son in his right wits?"

Elspeth, stunned by the tone in which this question was asked, was altogether unable to reply to it. Indeed, any answer she might have made could hardly have been heard, as it placed the two officers before of the Abbot's table again to recommence their alternate dialogues.

"Refuse!" said the Kitchener.

"Refuse!" answered the Reformer, adding the other's word in a tone of still louder astonishment.

"Refuse four marks by the year!" said the one.

"Ale and beer—broth and mutton—coar's grass and palfrey's!" shouted the Kitchener.

"Gowd and gulligullies!" responded the Reformer.

"A woman's palace, my brother," answered the Sub-Prior, "and let us not be thus astonished before cause is afforded of our amazement. This good dame best knoweth the temper and spirit of her son—this much I can say, that it hath not towards letters or learning, of which I have in vain endeavoured to instil into him some tincture. Nevertheless, he is a youth of no common spirit, but much like those (in my weak judgment) whom God raises up among a people when he meaneth that their deliverance shall be wrought out with strength of hand and valour of heart. Such men we have seen marked by a waywardness, and even an obstinacy of character,

which both appeared intractably and stolidly to those among whom they walked and were conversant, until the very opportunity had arrived in which it was the will of Providence that they should be the fitting instrument of great things."

"Now, in good time hast thou spoken, Father Rector," said the Abbot; "and we will see this evening before we decide upon the means of employing him. — How say you, Sir Farel Studon, is it not the court fashion to suit the man to the office, and not the office to the man?"

"So please your reverence and lordship," answered the Northumbrian knight, "I do partly, that is, in some sort, subscribe to what your wisdom hath delivered. — Nevertheless, under reverence of the Sub-Prior, we do not look for glibest leaders and rational deliverances in the herds of the mean common people. Credit me, that if there be some flashes of martial spirit about this young person, which I am not called upon to dispute (though I have witness seen that presumption and arrogance were made good upon the spurs by deed and action), yet still these will prove insufficient to distinguish him, save in his own limited and lowly sphere — even as the glow-worm, which makes a goodly show among the grass of the field, would be of little avail if deposited in a beacon-grate."

"Now in good time," said the Sub-Prior, "and here comes" the young knightman to speak for himself; for, being placed opposite to the window, he could observe Halbert as he ascended the little mound on which the tower was situated.

"Summon him to our presence," said the Lord Abbot; and with an electric start the two attendant monks went off with anxious alacrity. Even Glendinning sprang away at the same moment, partly to gain an instant to recover his composure to her son, partly to permit him to change his apparel before coming in presence of the Abbot. But the Eltham and Bekeforders, both speaking at once, had already armed each an arm, and were leading Halbert in triumph into the apartment, so that she could only ejaculate, "He will be done; but oh he had but had on him his Sunday's hose!"

Limited and humble as this desire was, the facts did not grant it, for Halbert Glendinning was hurried into the presence of the Lord Abbot and his party without a word of explanation, and without a moment's time being allowed to assume his

bellying hose, which in the language of the time, implied both breeches and stockings.

Yet, though thus suddenly presented amid the notice of all eyes, there was something in Halkert's appearance which commanded a certain degree of respect from the company into which he was so unceremoniously intruded, and the greater part of whom were disposed to consider him with leniency if not with absolute contempt. But his appearance and reception we must devote to another chapter.

CHAPTER NINETEENTH.

Now comes the, golden, lateral wealth and honour,
 There lies the path, to run to hear thee through
 The lanes of youth, and the forest of mankind,
 Yet leave enough for age's dimmy-sinner;
 But as thou goest to it, forest allusion,
 Forest man hope of bettering thy condition,
 And raising thy low rank above the clouds
 That till the north be blown.

ONE FOOT.

It is necessary to dwell for some brief space on the appearance and demeanour of young Glendinning, as we proceed to describe his interview with the Abbot of Saint Mary's at this momentous crisis of his life.

Halkert was now about sixteen years old, tall and active rather than strong, yet of that hardy conformation of limb and sinew, which promises great strength when the growth shall be complete, and the system confirmed. He was perfectly well made, and, like most men who have that advantage, possessed a grace and natural ease of manner and carriage, which prevented his height from being the distinguished part of his external appearance. It was not until you had compared his stature with that of those amongst or near to whom he stood, that you became sensible that the young Glendinning was upwards of six feet high. In the combination of unusual height with perfect symmetry, ease, and grace of carriage, the young heir of Glendinning, notwithstanding his rustic birth and education, had greatly the advantage even of the Purple Stalder

himself, whose stature was lower, and his limbs, though there was no particular point to object to, were on the whole less exactly proportioned. On the other hand, Sir Parnes's very handsome countenance afforded him an decided advantage over the Scotsman, as regularity of features and brilliancy of complexion would give over traits which were rather strongly marked than beautiful, and upon whose complexion the "scurvy influence," to which he was constantly exposed, had blotted the red and white into the purely sun-brown hue, which coloured off the cheeks, neck, and forehead, and blushed only as a darker glow upon the former.—Halbert's eyes supplied a marked and distinguished part of his physiognomy. They were large and of a hazel colour, and sparkled in moments of animation with such uncommon brilliancy, that it seemed as if they actually emitted light. Nature had closely curled the locks of dark brown hair, which relieved and set off the features, such as we have described them, displaying a bold and untried disposition, much more than might have been expected from his situation, or from his previous manners, which hitherto had seemed haughty, haughty, and awkward.

Halbert's dress was certainly not of that description which sets off to the best advantage a person of 'tiself prepossessing. His jerkin and hose were of coarse rustic cloth, and his cap of the same. A belt round his waist served at once to sustain the broadsword which we have already mentioned, and to hold five or six knives and bird-bolts, which were stuck into it on the right side, along with a large knife fitted with buck-horn, or, as it was then called, a *badger-dagger*. To complete his dress, we must notice his loose buckskin of deer-skin, formed as as to draw up on the leg as high as the knee, or at pleasure to be thrust down lower than the calves. These were generally used at the period by such as either had their principal occupation, or their chief pleasure, in stiver sports, as they served to protect the legs against the rough and tangled thickets into which the pursuit of game frequently led them.—And these trifling particulars complete his external appearance.

It is not so easy to do justice to the manner in which young Glendinning's soul spoke through his eyes when entered so suddenly into the company of those whom his earliest education had taught him to treat with awe and reverence. The degree of embarrassment, which his dangerous wound, had nothing

in it either manly service, or utterly disinterested. It was no more than became a generous and ingenuous youth of a bold spirit, but totally inexperienced, who should for the first time be called upon to think and act for himself in such society and under such disadvantageous circumstances. There was not in his carriage a grain either of forwardness or of timidity, which a friend could have wished away.

He knelt and kissed the Abbot's hand, then rose, and returning two paces, bowed respectfully to the circle around, smiling gently as he received an encouraging nod from the Sub-Prior, to whom alone he was personally known, and blushing as he encountered the anxious look of Mary Arden, who beheld with painful interest the sort of ordeal to which her flame-brother was about to be subjected. Recovering from the transient flurry of spirits into which the encounter of her glance had thrown him, he stood composedly awaiting till the Abbot should express his pleasure.

The ingenuous expression of countenance, noble form, and graceful attitude of the young man, failed not to prepossess in his favour the divines in whose presence he stood. The Abbot looked round, and exchanged a gracious and approving glance with his counsellor Father Easton, although probably the appointment of a squire, or fore-bearer, was one in which he might have been disposed to proceed without the Sub-Prior's advice, were it but to show his own free agency. But the good wits of the young man were in combination was such, that he rather hastened to exchange congratulations on meeting with so proper a subject of promotion, than to indulge any other feeling. Father Easton enjoyed the pleasure which a well-constituted mind derives from seeing a bright light on a deserving object; for as he had not seen Robert since circumstances had made so material a change in his manner and feelings, he scarce doubted that the proffered appointment would, notwithstanding his mother's uncertainty, suit the disposition of a youth who had appeared devoted to woodland sports, and a life idle to sedentary or settled occupation of any kind. The Rector and Kitchener were so well pleased with Robert's prepossessing appearance that they seemed to think that the salary, emoluments, and perquisites, the debt, the grange, the gown, and the galleons, could scarce be better bestowed than on the active and graceful figure before them.

Sir Pierre Shafon, whether from being more deeply engaged in his own cogitations, or that the subject was unworthy of his notice, did not seem to partake of the general feeling of approbation excited by the young man's presence. He sat with his eyes half shut, and his arms folded, appearing to be wrapped in contemplations of a nature deeper than those arising out of the scene before him. Yet, notwithstanding his seeming abstraction and absence of mind, there was a flash of vanity in Sir Pierre's very handsome countenance, an occasional change of posture from one stinking attitude (or what he considered to be such) to another, and an occasional sidling glance at the female part of the company, to spy how far he succeeded in riveting their attention, which gave a marked advantage, in comparison, to the less regular and more harsh features of Halbert Glendinning, with their composed, manly, and deliberate expression of mental fortitude.

Of the females belonging to the family of Glendinning, the Miller's daughter alone had her mind sufficiently at home to admire, from time to time, the graceful attitudes of Sir Pierre Shafon; for both Mary Arrol and Dame Glendinning were waiting in anxiety and apprehension the answer which Halbert was to return to the Abbot's proposal, and fleetly contemplating the consequences of his probable refusal. The conduct of his brother Edward, for a hot constitutionally shy, respectful, and even timid, was at once affectionate and noble. This younger son of Dame Elspeth had stood unnoted in a corner, after the Abbot, at the request of the Sub-Prior, had honoured him with some passing notice, and asked him a few commonplace questions about his progress in Doutra, and in the Presbyterian Parvulorum, without waiting for the answer. From his corner he now glided round to his brother's side, and, keeping a little behind him, did his right hand into the knight's left, and by a gentle pressure, which Halbert instantly and ardently returned, expressed at once his interest in his situation, and his readiness to share his fate.

The group was thus arranged, when, after the pause of two or three minutes, which he employed in slowly sipping his cup of wine, in order that he might enter on his proposal with due and deliberate dignity, the Abbot at length expressed himself thus:—

"My son—we, your lawful Superior, and the Abbot, under

Otto's friends, of the community of Saint Mary's, have heard of your manifold good gifts—a-hem—especially touching wood-work—and the lantern-like fashion in which you strike your gaze, truly and as a parent should, not showing Heaven's good benefits by spilling the flesh, as is too often seen in careless rangers—a-hem." He made love a pause, but observing that Glendinning only replied to his compliment by a bow, he proceeded.—"My son, we command your modesty; nevertheless, we will that thou shouldst speak freely to us touching that which we have premeditated for thine advancement, meaning to confer on thee the office of bow-bearer and ranger, as well over the chase and forests wherein our house hath privilege by the gifts of pious kings and nobles, whose souls now enjoy the fruits of their bounty to the Church, as to those which belong to us in exclusive right of property and perpetuity. Thy base, my son—that we may, with our own hand, and without loss of time, induct thee into office."

"Kneel down," said the Chancellor on the one side; and

"Kneel down," said the Rector on the other.

But Halbert Glendinning remained standing.

"Was it to show gratitude and goodwill for your several lordships' noble offer, I would not," he said, "kneel low enough, as remains long enough kneeling. But I may not kneel to take inureture of your noble gift, my Lord Abbot, being a man determined to seek my fortune elsewhere."

"How is that, sir?" said the Abbot, knitting his brows; "do I hear you speak weight! and do you, a born vassal of the Halliames, at the moment when I am desirous to you seek a noble expenditure of my good-will, propose exchanging my service for that of any other?"

"My lord," said Halbert Glendinning, "it grieve me to think you hold me capable of undertrading your gracious offer, or of exchanging your service for another. But your noble offer doth but hasten the execution of a determination which I have long since formed."

"Ay, my son," said the Abbot, "it is indeed so!—right early have you learned to form resolutions without consulting those on whom you naturally depend. But what may it be, this sagacious resolution, if I may so far pray you?"

"To yield up to my brother and mother," answered Halbert,

"mine interest in the fel of Glendoring, lately possessed by my

father, Simon Glendinning, and having passed your lordship to be the same kind and generous master to them, that your predecessors, the venerable Abbots of Saint Mary's, have been to my fathers in time past, for myself, I am determined to seek my fortune where I may best find it."

Dame Glendinning here ventured, emboldened by maternal anxiety, to break silence with an exclamation of "O my son!" Edward, clinging to his brother's side, half spoke, half whispered, a similar ejaculation, of "Brother! brother!"

The Sub-Prior took up the matter in a tone of grave reprobation, which, as he conceived, the interest he had always taken in the family of Glendinning required at his hand.

"Wife! young man," he said, "what folly can urge thee to push back the hand that is stretched out to aid thee! What remedy can hasten thee before thee, that can compensate for the dearest and wildest independence which thou art now rejecting with scorn?"

"True words by the year, duly and truly," said the Kitchen-er.

"Good grace, doublet, and golligollies," responded the Re-fectioner.

"Peace, my brethren," said the Sub-Prior; "and may it please your lordship, venerable father, upon my petition, to allow this beheading youth a day for consideration, and it shall be my part so to indoctrinate him, as to convince him what is due on this occasion to your lordship, and to his family, and to himself."

"Your wisdom, reverend father," said the youth, "moves my dearest thanks—it is the continuance of a long train of benevolence towards me, for which I give you my gratitude, for I have nothing else to offer. It is my misfortune, not your fault, that your intentions have been frustrated. But my present resolution is fixed and unshakable. I cannot accept the generous offer of the Lord Abbot; my fire will run elsewhere, to some where I shall end it or mend it."

"By our Lady," said the Abbot, "I think the youth be mad indeed—or that you, Sir Pierre, judged of him worst truly, when you prophesied that he would prove unfit for the profession we designed him—it may be you knew something of this wayward humor before?"

"By the mass, not I," answered Sir Pierre Shafton, with his usual indifference. "I had judged of him by his birth and

breeding; for addition hath a good hawk come out of a kite's nest."

"Thou art thyself a kite, and hastest to boot," replied Herbert Glendinning, without a moment's hesitation.

"This is our presence, and to a man of worldly!" said the Abbot, the blood rushing to his face.

"Yes, my Lord," answered the youth; "even in your presence I return to this gay man's face, the seamless dishonor which he has done on my name. My brave father, who fell in the cause of his country, demands that justice at the hands of his son!"

"Unmansured boy!" said the Abbot.

"Nay, my good lord," said the knight, "praying pardon for the coarse interruption, let me entreat you not to be wroth with this rascal—Credit me, the north wind shall as soon puff one of your rods from its base, as ought which I hold as slight and inconsiderate as the shrillish speech of an untaught child, shall move the spleen of Pierre Shafton."

"Proud as you see, Sir Knight," said Herbert, "in your imagined superiority, be not too confident that you cannot be moved."

"Forth, by nothing that thou canst urge," said Sir Pierre.

"Knowest thou, then, this token?" said young Glendinning, offering to him the silver ballin which he had received from the White Lady.

Never was such an instant change, from the most contemptuous severity, to the most furious state of passion, as that which Sir Pierre Shafton exhibited. It was the difference between a cannon lying quiet in its embrasure, and the same gun when touched by the flintlock. He started up, every limb quivering with rage, and his features so inflamed and agitated by passion, that he more resembled a demoniac, than a man under the regulation of reason. He dashed both his fists, and thrusting them forward, offered them furiously at the face of Glendinning, who was even himself startled at the furious state of excitation which his action had occasioned. The next moment he withdrew them, struck his open palm against his own forehead, and rushed out of the room in a state of insupportable agitation. The whole matter had been so sudden, that no person present had time to interfere.

When Sir Pierre Shafton had left the apartment, there was

a moment's pause of astonishment; and then a general demand that Halbert Glendinning should instantly explain by what means he had produced such a violent change in the deportment of the English cavalier.

"I did nothing to him," answered Halbert Glendinning, "but what you all saw—was I to answer for his fantastic freaks of humor?"

"Boy," said the Abbot, in his most authoritative manner, "these subterfuges shall not avail thee. This is not a man to be driven from his temperament without some sufficient cause. That cause was given by thee, and must have been known to thee. I command thee, as thou wilt save thyself from worse measures, to explain to me by what means thou hast moved our friend there—We choose not that our vessels shall drive our guests mad in our very presence, and we remain ignorant of the means whereby that purpose is effected."

"So may it please your reverence, I did but show him this token," said Halbert Glendinning, delivering it at the same time to the Abbot, who looked at it with much attention, and then, shaking his head, gravely delivered it to the Sub-Prior, without speaking a word.

Father Eustace looked at the mysterious token with some attention; and then, addressing Halbert in a stern and severe voice, said, "Young man, if thou wouldst not have us suspect thee of some strange double-dealing in this matter, let us instantly know whence thou hast this token, and how it possesses an influence on Sir Francis Sholto!"—It would have been extremely difficult for Halbert, thus hard pressed, to have either evaded or answered so pressing a question. To have avowed the truth might, in those times, have amounted to his being burnt at a stake, although, in case, his confession would have only proved for him the credit of a liar beyond all rational credibility. He was fortunately relieved by the return of Sir Francis Sholto himself, whose ear caught, as he entered, the sound of the Sub-Prior's question.

Without waiting said Halbert Glendinning replied, he came forward, whispering to him as he passed, "Be secret—thou shalt have the satisfaction thou hast dared to seek for."

When he returned to his place, there were still marks of discomposure on his brow; but, becoming apparently collected and calm, he looked around him, and apologized for the inde-

corset of which he had been guilty, which he sacrificed to justice and severe self-punishment. All were silent, and looked on each other with some surprise.

The Lord Abbot gave orders for all to retire from the apartment, save himself, Sir Pierre Shafton, and the Sub-Prior. "And here an eye," he added, "on that bold youth, that he escape not; for if he hath practised by charms or otherwise, on the health of our worshipful guest, I swear by the life and virtue which I wear, that his punishment shall be most exemplary."

"My lord and venerable father," said Halbert, bowing respectfully, "fear not but that I will abide my doom. I think you will have learnt from the worshipful knight himself what is the cause of his indisposition, and how slight my share in it has been."

"Be assured," said the knight, without looking up, however, while he spoke, "I will satisfy the Lord Abbot."

With these words the company retired, and with them young Glendoring.

When the Abbot, the Sub-Prior, and the English knight were left alone, Father Eastock, contrary to his custom, could not help speaking the first. "Exposed unto us, noble sir," he said, "by what mysterious means the production of this simple toy would so far move your spirit, and overcome your patience, after you had shown yourself proof to all the provocations offered by this self-sufficient and singular youth?"

The knight took the silver bottle from the good father's hand, looked at it with great composure, and, having examined it all over, returned it to the Sub-Prior, saying at the same time, "In truth, venerable father, I cannot but marvel, that the wisdom implied abides in your silver hairs, and in your antique rock, should, like a babbling brook (excuse the similitude), open thus readily on a false secret. I was, indeed, more slight to be moved than the leaves of the aspen-tree, which wag at the least breath of heaven, could I be touched by such a trifling as this, which in no way concerns me more than if the same quantity of silver were stretched into so many grains. Truth is, that from my youth upwards, I have been subjected to such a malady as you ever are visited with even now—a cruel and smothering pain, which grows through nerves and bones, even as a good brand in the hands of a brave soldier shows through

him and show—but it passes away speedily, as you yourselves may judge."

"Still," said the Sub-Prior, "this will not account for the youth offering to you that piece of silver, as a token by which you were to understand something, and, as we must needs conjecture, something disagreeable."

"Your reverence is to conjecture what you will," said Sir Purse; "but I cannot pretend to lay your judgment on the right scent when I see it at fault. I hope I am not liable to be called upon to account for the foolish actions of a suspicious boy!"

"Assuredly," said the Sub-Prior, "we shall prosecute an inquiry which is disagreeable to our guest. Nevertheless," said he, looking to his Superior, "this chance may, in some sort, alter the plan your lordship had formed for your worshipful guest's residence for a brief term in this tower, as a place alike of secrecy and of security; both of which, in the terms which we now stand on with England, are circumstances to be desired."

"Is such," said the Abbot, "and the doubt is well thought on, were it as well reserved; for I cannot leave in the Halliars so fitting a place of refuge, yet am I not how to recommend it to our worshipful guest, considering the unrestrained petulance of this headstrong youth."

"Took! reverend sire—what would you make of me?" said Sir Pierce Shuffen. "I protest, by mine honour, I would abide in this house were I to choose. What! I take no exception at the youth for showing a flash of spirit, though the spark may light on mine own head. I honour the lad for it, I protest I will abide here, and he shall aid me in striking down a nail. I must needs be friends with him, so he be such a shot: and we will speedily send down to my lord Abbot a back of the first head, killed as artificially as shall satisfy even the reverend Kitchenier."

This was said with such apparent ease and good-humour, that the Abbot made no further observation on what had passed, but proceeded to acquaint his guest with the details of furniture, hangings, provisions, and so forth, which he proposed to send up to the Tower of Glendoung for his accommodation. This discourse, seasoned with a cup or two of wine, served to prolong the time until the reverend Abbot ordered his cardinals to prepare for their return to the Monastery.

"As we have," he said, "in the course of this our talksome

journey, lost our meridian,* indulgence shall be given to those of our attendants who shall, from very weariness, be unable to attend the duty at prime,† and the by way of married or indulgent."‡

Having benevolently intimated a boon to his faithful followers whom he probably judged would be far from unacceptable, the good Abbot, seeing all ready for his journey, bestowed his blessing on the assembled household—gave his hand to be kissed by Dame Glendinning—himself kissed the cheek of Mary Arden, and even of the Miller's maiden, when they approached to render him the same homage—commanded Hubert to rule his temper, and to be sitting and obedient in all things to the English Knight—admonished Edward to be disciplined in proper steps—then took a courteous farewell of Sir Pierre de Sion, advising him to be close, for fear of the English Banders, who might be employed to kidnap him; and having discharged these various offices of courtesy, moved forth to the courtyard, followed by the whole establishment. Here, with a heavy sigh approaching to a groan, the venerable father bowed himself upon his pillow, whose dark purple hangings swept the ground, and, greatly comforted that the disfigurement of the saint's face would be no longer disturbed by the gambolings of Sir Pierre and his prancing war-horse, he set forth at a sober and steady trot upon his return to the Monastery.

When the Sub-Prior had mounted to accompany his principal, his eye sought out Hubert, who, partly hidden by a projection of the outward wall of the court, stood apart from and gazing upon the departing coachload, and the group which assembled around them. Unsatisfied with the explanation he had received concerning the mysterious transaction of the silver bedchamber, yet intervening himself in the youth, of whose character he had formed a favorable idea, the worthy monk resolved to take an early opportunity of investigating that matter. In the meanwhile, he looked upon Hubert with a serious and wary

* The hour of equinox at noon, which, in the middle ages, was employed in shadow, and which the monks called a nocturnal vigil instead of evening.

† Prime was the midnight service of the monks.

‡ *Indulgent*, according to the learned work of Bede on the English Monks, meant not only an indulgence or remission from penitential duties, but also a particular apartment in a convent, where the monks assembled to enjoy such indulgence or dispensation as were granted beyond the rule.

aspect, and held up his finger to him as he signed farewell. He then joined the rest of the churchmen, and followed his Superior down the valley.

CHAPTER TWENTIETH.

I hope you'll give me leave to think you noble,
And do me right with your sword, tho', as I cannot
Owe gentlemen of honour to another;
All this is fair, sir—let us make no days out,
I'll lead your way.

LOVE'S PROLOGUE.

THE look and sign of warning which the Sub-Prior gave to Halbert Glanville as they parted, went to his heart; for although he had profited much less than Edward by the good man's instructions, he had a sincere reverence for his person; and even the short time he had for deliberation tended to show him he was embarked in a perilous adventure. The nature of the provocation which he had given to Sir Pierce Shafton he could not even conjecture; but he saw that it was of a mortal quality, and he was now to decide the consequences.

That he might not force these consequences forward by any premature renewal of their quarrel, he resolved to walk apart for an hour, and consider on what terms he was to meet this haughty foe. The time seemed propitious for his doing so without having the appearance of valdely shunning the stranger, as all the members of the little household were dispersing either to perform such tasks as had been interrupted by the arrival of the dignitaries, or to put in order what had been damaged by their visit.

Leaving the Tower, therefore, and descending, unobserved as he thought, the knoll on which it stood, Halbert gained the little piece of level ground which extended betwixt the descent of the hill, and the first sweep made by the brook after reaching the foot of the eminence on which the Tower was situated, where a few straggling birch and oak trees served to screen him from observation. But scarcely had he reached the spot, when he was surprised to feel a smart tap upon the shoulder,

and, turning around, he perceived he had been closely followed by Sir Francis Shafton.

When, whether from our state of animal spirits, want of confidence in the justice of our cause, or any other motive, our own courage happens to be in a wavering condition, nothing tends so much altogether to disconcert us, as a great appearance of promptitude on the part of our antagonist. Halbert Olschlender, both morally and constitutionally intrepid, was nevertheless somewhat troubled at seeing the stranger, whose movement he had perceived, appear at once before him, and with an aspect which boded hostility. Run through his heart might have somewhat thicker, he was too high-spirited to exhibit any external signs of emotion—"What is your pleasure, Sir Francis?" he said to the English knight, enduring without apparent discomposure all the terrors which his antagonist had summoned into his aspect.

"What is my pleasure?" answered Sir Francis; "a goodly question after the part you have acted towards me!—Young man, I know not what inhibition has led thee to place thyself in direct and violent opposition to one who is a guest of thy landlord, the Abbot, and who, even from the courtesy due to thy mother's roof, had a right to remain there without meeting insult. Neither do I ask, or care, by what means thou hast become possessed of the fatal secret by which thou hast dared to offer me open shame. But I must now tell thee, that the possession of it hath cost thee thy life."

"Not, I trust, if my hand and sword can defend it," replied Halbert, boldly.

"True," said the Englishman, "I mean not to deprive thee of thy fair chance of self-defence. I am only sorry to think, that, young and country-bred as thou art, it can but little avail thee. But thou must be well aware, that in this quarrel I shall use no terms of quarter."

"Holy on is, proud man," screamed the youth, "that I shall ask none; and although thou speakst as if I lay already at thy feet, trust me, that as I am determined never to ask thy mercy, so I am not fearful of needing it."

"Then wilt, then," said the knight, "do nothing to avert the certain fate which thou hast provoked with such wantonness?"

"And how runs that to be pertained?" replied Halbert

Glendinning, more with the wish of obtaining some further insight into the terms on which he stood with this stranger, than to make him the submission which he might require.

"Explain to me instantly," said Sir Pierre, "without equivocation or delay, by what means thou wert enabled to wound my honour so deeply—and shouldst thou point out to me by no doing an enemy more worthy of my resentment, I will permit mine own chaotic indignance to draw a veil over thine innocence."

"This is too high a flight," said Glendinning, severely, "for mine own presumption to soar without being checked. Thou hast come to my father's house, as well as I can guess, a fugitive and an exile, and thy first greeting to its inhabitants has been that of contempt and injury. By what means I have been able to return that contempt, let mine own conscience tell thee. Enough for me that I stand on the privilege of a free Scotsman, and will brook no insult unreturned, and no injury unavenged."

"It is well, then," said Sir Pierre Sholto, "we will dispute this matter to-morrow morning with our swords. Let the time be daybreak, and do thou assign the place. We will go down as if to settle a duel."

"Content," replied Halbert Glendinning: "I will guide thee to a spot where an hundred men might fight and fall without any chance of interruption."

"It is well," answered Sir Pierre Sholto. "Hark then we part—May I will say, that in thus relinquishing the right of a gentleman to the use of a sword-breaking protest, I despoil thee of my sphere, even as the blunderer would despoil should he condescend to compare and match his golden lance with the trifles of a pole, blundering, expiring, green-fet taper. But no consideration of rank shall prevent my avenging the insult thou hast offered me. We have a smooth lake, observe me, Sir Village, before the worshipful houses of yonder cotta, and to-morrow we try conclusions with our rapiers." So saying, he turned away towards the town.

It may not be unworthy of notice, that in the last speech only, had Sir Pierre used some of those flowers of rhetoric which characterized the usual style of his conversation. Apparently, a sense of wounded honour, and the deep desire of vindicating his injured feelings, had proved too strong for the fantastic

affectation of his acquired habits. Indeed, such is usually the influence of energy of mind, when called forth and exerted, that Sir Piercie Shafton had never appeared in the eyes of his youthful antagonists half so much deserving of esteem and respect as in this brief dialogue, by which they exchanged mutual defiance. As he followed him slowly to the tower, he could not help thinking to himself that, had the English knight always displayed this superior tone of bearing and feeling, he would not probably have felt so earnestly disposed to take offence at his hand. Mutual offences, however, had been exchanged, and the matter was to be put to martial arbitrament.

The family met at the evening meal, when Sir Piercie Shafton extended the hospitality of his countenance and the grace of his conversation far more generously over the party than he had hitherto understood to do. The greater part of his attention was, of course, still engrossed by his divine and amiable Diogenes, as he chose to term Mary Arden; but, nevertheless, there were interjunctural decarades to the Maid of the Mill, under the title of Cecily Darnley, and to the Dams, under that of Worship Matron. Nay, lest he should fail to excite their admiration by the grace of his rhetoric, he generously, and without solicitation, added force of his voice; and after regretting bitterly the absence of his *viol-de-gambe*, he regaled them with a song, "which," said he, "the inimitable Anselm, whom mortals call Philip Sidney," composed in the usage of his times, to show the world what they are to expect from his ripe years, and which will one day set the light on that not-to-be-paralleled perfection of human wit, which he has addressed to his sister, the matchless Parthenope, whose men call Constant of Pembroke; a work," he continued, "whereof his friendship hath permitted me, though unworthy, to be an occasional partner, and whereof I may well say, that the deep affluence tale which embosoms our sorrows, is so relieved with brilliant similes, felicit descriptions, pleasant poems, and engaging incidents, that they seem as the stars of the firmament, beautifying the dusky robe of night. And though I wot well how much the lovely and quiet language will suffer by

* [The "*Anselm and Cecily*," originally published at London in 1550, was inserted in the numerous editions of the *Constant of Pembroke's "Ardenne*," by the Philip. It would be in vain to attempt to verify the words yet into the mouth of Sir Piercie Shafton.]

my widowed voice, widowed in that it is no longer united by my beloved *viol-de-gambe*, I will essay to give you a taste of the ravishing sweetness of the poetry of the un-to-be-initiated *Astrophel*."

So saying, he sang without melody or measure about five hundred verses, of which the two first and the four last may suffice for a specimen—

"What brings you here, perfidious tell,
On whose rank past all joys may dwell,
" " " " " " " " " " " " "
Of whose high praise and powerful bliss,
Quotations the pen, Heaven's paper is;
The ink immortal from death dead,
As I begin as I must end."

As Sir Percie Shafton always sang with his eyes half shut, it was not until, agreeably to the promise of poetry, he had fairly made an end, that looking round, he discovered that the greater part of his audience had, in the monotony, yielded to the charms of repose. Mary Arden, indeed, from a natural aversion of politeness, had contrived to keep awake through all the prolixities of the divine *Astrophel*; but Maida was transported in dreams back to the dusty atmosphere of her father's mill. Edward himself, who had given his attention for some time, had at length fallen fast asleep, and the good dame's nose, could its pores have been put under regulation, might have supplied the loss of the invented *viol-de-gambe*. Halbert, however, who had no temptation to give way to the charms of slumber, remained awake with his eyes fixed on the songster; not that he was better entertained with the words, or more amused with the monotony, than the rest of the company, but rather because he admired, or perhaps envied, the composer, which could thus spend the evening in interminable madrigals, when the next morning was to be devoted to deadly snoring. Yet it struck his natural acuteness of observation, that the eye of the gallant cavalier did now and then, furtively as it were, seek a glance of his countenance, as to discover how he was taking the exhibition of his antagonist's composure and steadiness of mind.

He shall read nothing in my countenance, thought Halbert, proudly, that can make him think my indifference less than his own.

And taking from the shelf a bag full of miscellaneous matters collected for the purpose, he began with great industry to dress books, and had finished half-a-dozen of these (we are enabled, for the benefit of those who admire the antiquarian of the gentle art of copying, to state that they were brown buckram) by the time that Sir Florio had arrived at the conclusion of his long-winded struggles of the divine Astrophel. So that he also testified a magnanimous contempt of that which to-morrow should bring forth.

As it now went late, the family of Glendearg separated for the evening, Sir Florio first saying to the dams, that "he was Albert."

"Halbert," said Elspeth, with emphasis, "Halbert, after his godson, Halbert Brydson."

"Well, then, I have judged your son Halbert, that we may strive to-morrow, with the sun's witness, to make a stag from his hair, that I may see whether he be as prompt at that sport as some legends him."

"Alas! no," answered Dame Elspeth, "he is but too prompt, as you talk of penitentials, of any thing that has stood at one end of it, and mischievous at the other. But he is at your honorable disposal, and I trust you will teach him how obedience is due to our venerable father and lord, the Abbot, and prevail with him to take the low-bearer's place in the; for, as the two worthy monks said, it will be a great help to a widow woman."

"Trust me, good dams," replied Sir Florio, "it is my purpose so to indoctrinate him, touching his conduct and bearing towards his betters, that he shall not lightly depart from the reverence due to them.—We must, then, beneath the high-tan in the place," he said, looking to Halbert, "as soon as the age of day hath opened his lids."—Halbert answered with a sign of assent, and the knight proceeded, "And now, having wished to my friend Discretion those pleasant dreams which were their pillows around the couch of sleeping beauty, and to this society dished the bonanzas of Morpheus, and to all others the common good-night, I will leave you leave to depart to any place of rest, though I may say with the poet,

'Ah rest!—no rest but change of place and posture.'

'Ah sleep!—no sleep but wearied Nature's evening.'

'Ah bed!—no bed but cushions filled with sinners.'

'And, sleep, our bed, never not-as an orle.'

With a delicate obeisance he left the room, craving Dame Gladwin, who hastened to assure him he would find his accommodations for repose much more agreeable than they had been the night before, there having been stores of warm coverlets, and a soft feather-bed, sent up from the abbey. But the good knight probably thought that the grace and effect of his exit would be diminished, if he were recalled from his journey to discuss such subsidiary and domestic topics, and therefore hastened away without waiting to hear her out.

"A pleasant gentleman," said Dame Gladwinning; "but I will warrant him an humourous"—And sang a sweet song, though it is somewhat of the longest.—"Well, I shall soon enjoy his a greatly company—I wonder when he will go away."

Having thus expressed her respect for her guest, not without intimation that she was heartily tired of his company, the good dame gave the signal for the family to disperse, and had her injunctions on Herbert to attend Sir Percie Shalton at daybreak, as he required.

When stretched on his pallet by his brother's side, Herbert had no small cause to envy the sound sleep which liberally smiled on the eyes of Edward, but refused him any share of his reflection. He now saw too well what the spirit had darkly indicated, that, in granting the boon which he had asked so unadvisedly, she had contributed more to his harm than his good. He was now sensible, too late, of the various dangers and inconveniences with which his dearest friends were threatened, alike by his dissoluteness or his excess in the approaching day. If he fell, he might say personally, "good night all." But it was not the less certain that he should leave a dreadful legacy of distress and embarrassment to his mother and family,—an anticipation which by no means tended to render the fruit of death, in itself a grisly object, more agreeable to his imagination. The vengeance of the Abbot, his conscience told him, was sure to descend on his mother and brother, or could only be averted by the generosity of the victor.—And Mary Arden!—he should have shown himself, if he succumbed in the present combat, as inefficient in protecting her, as he had been unsuccessfully active in bringing disaster on her, and on the house in which she had been protected from infancy. And to this view of the case

* Humourous—full of whims—thus Shakespeare, "Humourous as a vicar."
—The vulgar word *humourous* seems nearest to the meaning.

were to be added all those indelivered and anxious feelings with which the bravest men, even in a better or less doubtful quarrel, regard the issue of a dubious conflict, the first time when it has been their fate to engage in an affair of that nature.

But however discomfited the prospect seemed in the event of his being conquered, Halbert could expect from victory little more than the safety of his own life, and the gratification of his wounded pride. To his friends, to his mother and brother—especially to Mary Arund—*the consequences of his triumph would be more certain destruction than the contingency of his defeat and death.* If the English knight survived, he might in courtesy extend his protection to them; but if he fell, nothing was likely to screen them from the vindictive measures which the Abbot and council would surely adopt against the violators of the peace of the Habsburgs, and the slaughter of a protected guest by one of their own vassals, within whose house they had lodged him for shelter. These thoughts, in which neither view of the case appeared ought short of ruin to his family, and that ruin entirely brought on by his own rashness, were thrown in Halbert Glendinning's pillow, and depressed his soul of peace and his eyes of slumber.

There appeared no middle course, saving one which was marked by degradation, and which, even if he stooped to it, was by no means free of danger. He might indeed mention to the English knight the strange circumstances which led to his presenting him with that token which the White Lady (in her displeasure as it now seemed) had given him, that he might offer it to Sir Francis Shadon. But to this avowed his pride could not stoop, and Anne, who is wonderfully ready to be of counsel with pride on such occasions, offered many arguments to show it would be useless as well as mean so far to degrade himself. "If I tell a tale so wonderful," thought he, "shall I not either be stigmatised as a liar, or punished as a wizard?—Were Sir Francis Shadon generous, noble, and benevolent, as the champion of whom we hear in romance, I might indeed gain his ear, and, without demanding myself, escape from the situation in which I am placed. But as he is, or at least seems to be, self-conceited, arrogant, vain, and presumptuous—I should but humble myself in vain—and I will not humble myself!" he said, starting out of bed, grasping his broadsword, and brandishing it in the light of the moon, which streamed through the deep niche that served

them as a window, when, to his extreme surprise and terror, an airy form stood in the moonlight, but interrupted not the reflection on the floor. Dimly as it was expressed, the sound of the voice soon made him sensible he saw the White Lady.

As he first had her presence seemed as terrible to him; for when he had looked her, it was with the expectation of the apparition, and the determination to slay the man. But now she had come unveiled, and her presence impressed him with a sense of approaching misfortune, and with the hideous apprehension that he had associated himself with a demon, over whose motions he had no control, and of whose powers and quality he had no certain knowledge. He remained, therefore, in more terror, gazing on the apparition, which floated or walked in silence the following lines:—

"No whom heart for vengeance seek,
Shout not aloud, thou shaldest bleed;
The host that thou hast met with word,
Thou must lose by edge of sword."

"Avenge thou, evil spirit!" said Halbert Glendinning; "I have bought thy advice too dearly already—Baptist, in the name of God!"

The Spirit laughed; and the cold unearthly sound of her laughter had something in it more fearful than the usually melancholy tones of her voice. She then replied:

"Thou hast summon'd me once—yet have summon'd me twice,
And without me a summons I came to you thence;
Thank'd thy, summon'd for, yet came to my glass;
Darest not summon'd I am with you again."

Halbert Glendinning gave way for a moment to terror, and called on his brother, "Edward! wake, wake, for Our Lady's sake!"

Edward awoke accordingly, and asked what he wanted.

"Look out," said Halbert, "look up! stand thou no man in the room!"

"No, upon my good word," said Edward, looking out.

"What! stand thou nothing in the moonlight upon the floor there?"

"No, nothing," answered Edward, "were thyself resting on thy naked sword. I tell thee, Halbert, thou shouldst trust more to thy spiritual arms, and less to those of steel and iron. For this

many a night hath thou started and moaned, and cried out of fighting, and of spectres, and of goblins—thy sleep hath not refreshed thee—thy waking hath been a dream.—Obedt me, dear Halbert, say the *Pater* and *Credo*, resign thyself to the protection of God, and thou wilt sleep sound and wake in comfort."

"It may be," said Halbert slowly, and having his eye still bent on the female form, which to him seemed distinctly visible,—"*it may be*—but tell me, dear Edward, were there no one in the chamber there but me?"

"No one," answered Edward, raising himself on his elbow; "dear brother, lay aside thy weapons, say thy prayers, and lay thee down to rest."

While he thus spoke, the Spirit smiled at Halbert as if in answer; her wax cheek faded in the wax moonlight even before the smile had passed away, and Halbert himself no longer beheld the vision to which he had so anxiously solicited his brother's attention. "May God preserve my wife!" he said, as, laying aside his weapons, he upon himself as his bed.

"Alas! my dearest brother," answered Edward; "but we must not provide that Heaven is our witness, which we invoke in our misery.—Be not angry with me, my dear brother—I know not why you have totally of late estranged yourself from me.—It is true, I am neither so athletic in body, nor so alert in courage, as you have been from your infancy; yet, till lately, you have not absolutely cast off my society.—Believe me, I have wept in secret, though I forbore to intrude myself on your privacy. The time has been when you held me not so cheap; and when, if I would not follow the game so closely, or mark it so truly as you, I could fill up our intervals of pastime with pleasant tales of the olden time, which I had read or heard, and which excited even your attention as we ate and ate our porridge by some pleasant spring.—But now I have, though I know not why, lost thy regard and affection.—Nay, thou art thy arms about thee thus wildly," said the younger brother; "from thy strange dreams, I fear some touch of fever hath affected thy blood—let me draw closer around thee thy mantle."

"Forsake," said Halbert—"your care is needless—your complaints are without reason—your fears on my account are in vain."

"Nay, but hear me, brother," said Edward. "Your speech

in sleep, and now even your waking dreams, are of beings which belong not to this world, or to our race.—Our good Father Eustace says, that howbeit we may not do well to receive all idle tales of goblins and spectres, yet there is warrant from holy Scripture to believe, that the fiends haunt waste and solitary places; and that those who frequent such wildernesses alone, are the prey, or the sport, of these wandering demons. And therefore, I pray thee, brother, let me go with you when you go next up the glen, where, as you well know, there be places of evil reputation.—Thou canst not be my escort; but, Halbert, such dangers are more safely encountered by the wise in judgment, than by the bold in booms; and though I have small cause to boast of my own wisdom, yet I have that which ariseth from the written knowledge of older times.”

There was a moment during this discourse, when Halbert had well-nigh come to the resolution of disturbing his own heart, by intrusting Edward with all that weighed upon it. But when his brother reminded him that this was the morning of a high holiday, and that, setting aside all other business or pleasure, he ought to go to the Monastery and strive himself before Father Eustace, who would that day occupy the confessional, pride stepped in and confirmed his wavering resolution. “I will not cross,” he thought, “a tale so extraordinary, that I may be considered as an impostor or something worse—I will not fly from this Englishman, whose arm and sword may be no better than my own. My fathers have faced his betters, were he as much distinguished in battle as he is by his quaint discourses.”

Faith, which has been said to awe man, and woman too, from falling, has yet a stronger influence on the mind when it embraces the cause of passion, and seldom fails to render it victorious over conscience and reason. Halbert, once determined, though not to the better course, at length slept soundly, and was only awakened by the dawn of day.

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIRST.

Indifferent, but indifferent—perhaps, he feels it not
 Like one who is his craft's master—nor the less
 I have seen a clown under a bloody canopy
 On one who was a master of delusion.

OLD PLAY.

WITH the first gray peep of dawn, Halbert Glendinning arose and hastened to dress himself, girded on his weapon, and took a cross-bow in his hand, as if his usual sport had been his sole object. He groped his way down the dark and winding staircase, and walked, with as little noise as possible, the fastenings of the inner door, and of the exterior iron gate. At length he stood free in the courtyard, and looking up to the tower, saw a signal made with a handkerchief from the window. Nothing doubting that it was his antagonist, he passed, expecting him. But it was Mary Arund, who glided like a spirit from under the low and rugged portal.

Halbert was much surprised, and felt, he knew not why, like one caught in the act of a meditated trespass. The presence of Mary Arund had till that moment never given him pain. She spoke, too, in a tone where sorrow seemed to mingle with reproach, while she asked him with emphasis, "What he was about to do?"

He showed his cross-bow, and was about to express the protest he had meditated, when Mary interrupted him.

"Not so, Halbert—that evasion was unworthy of one whose word has hitherto been truth. You meditate not the destruction of the door—your hand and your heart are aimed at other game—you seek to do battle with the stranger?"

"And wherefore should I quarrel with our guest?" answered Halbert, blushing deeply.

"There are, indeed, many reasons why you should not," replied the maiden, "not is there one of avoid wherefore you should—yet, nevertheless, such a quarrel you are now searching after."

"Why should you suppose so, Mary?" said Halbert, endeavoring to hide his unavowed purpose—"he is my mother's guest—he is protected by the Abbot and the community, who

are our masters—he is of high degree also,—and wherefore should you think that I can, or dare, reveal a hasty word, which he has pertinence thrown out against me more from the wantonness of his wit, than the purpose of his heart?”

“Alas!” answered the maiden, “the very asking that question puts your resolution beyond a doubt. Since your childhood you were ever daring, seeking danger rather than avoiding it—delighting in whatever had the air of adventure and of courage, and it is not from fear that you will now blench from your purpose—Oh, let it then be done *pry*!—from *pry*, Halbert, to your aged mother, whose your death or victory will alike deprive of the comfort and stay of her age.”

“She has my brother Edward,” said Halbert, turning suddenly from her.

“She has indeed,” said Mary Arvend, “the calm, the accomplished, the considerate Edward, who has thy courage, Halbert, without thy fiery rashness,—thy generous spirit, with more of reason to guide it. He would not have heard his mother, would not have heard his adopted sister, beneath him in vain not to rule himself, and tear up their future hopes of happiness and protection.”

Halbert’s heart swelled as he replied to this reproach. “Well—what avails it speaking?—you have seen that is better than not—wiser, more considerate—braver, for aught I know—you are provided with a protector, and need none so more for me.”

Again he turned to depart, but Mary Arvend laid her hand on his arm so gently that he scarce left her hold, yet felt that it was impossible for him to strike it off. There he stood, one foot advanced to leave the courtyard, but so little determined on departure, that he resembled a traveller arrested by the spell of a magician, and unable either to quit the attitude of motion, or to proceed on his course.

Mary Arvend recalled herself of his state of suspense. “Hear me,” she said, “hear me, Halbert!—I am an orphan, and even Heaven knows the orphan—I have been the companion of your infancy, and if you will not hear me for no instant, from whom may Mary Arvend claim as poor a boon?”

“I hear you,” said Halbert (hesitating), “but be brief, dear Mary—you mistake the nature of my business—it is but a morning of summer sport which we propose.”

“Say not thus,” said the maiden, interrupting him, “my not

them to me—others than majesty deceive, but me they cannot delude.—There has been that in me from the earliest youth, which dread does not, and which imposture cannot deceive. For what fate has given me such a power I know not; but bred an ignorant exile, in this sequestered valley, mine eyes can too often see what man would most willingly hide—I can judge of the dark purpose, though it is hid under the smiling brow, and a glance of the eye says more to me than oaths and protestations do to others."

"Then," said Halbert, "if thou dost so read the human heart,—say, dear Mary—what dost thou see in mine?—tell me that—say that what thou seest—what thou readest in this heart, does not offend thee—say but that, and thou shalt be the guide of my actions, and mould me now and henceforward to honour or to dishonour as thy own free will!"

Mary Arundel became first red, and then deeply pale, as Halbert floundering spoke. But when, turning round at the close of his address, he took her hand, she gently withdrew it, and replied, "I cannot read the heart, Halbert, and I would not if my will knew eagle of power, were what becomes to both.—I can only judge of signs, words, and actions of little outward import, more truly than thou seest me, as my eyes, thou knowest, have seen objects not presented to those of others."

"Let them gaze then on me where they shall never see more," said Halbert, once more turning from her, and rushing out of the courtyard without again looking back.

Mary Arundel gave a faint scream, and clasped both her hands tightly on her forehead and eyes. She had been a witness in this attitude, when she was thus greeted by a voice from behind. "Overseerily done, my most dearest Discretion, to hide those brilliant eyes from the far inferior beams which even now begin to gild the eastern horizon.—Come, perch there were that Plutarch, outdone in splendour, might in very shamefacedness turn back his ear, and rather leave the world in darkness, than incur the disgrace of such an encounter.—Goddess be, lovely Discretion!"—

But as Sir Francis Shafton (the reader will readily not derive these flowers of eloquence to the proper owner) attempted to take Mary Arundel's hand, in order to proceed in his speech, she shook him sharply off, and regarded him with an eye

which excited terror and agitation, rushed past him into the tower.

The knight stood looking after her with a countenance in which contempt was strongly mingled with mortification. "By my knighthood!" he ejaculated, "I have thrown away upon this rude rustic Pritchell a speech, which the proudest beauty at the court of Feltin (so let me call the Elspere from which I am banished!) might have tossed the very statue of Cupid. Hard and memorable was the fate that sent thee hither, Pierde Shafton, to waste thy wit upon country wenches, and thy valour upon hob-nailed clowns! But that luck—that affront—but it been offered to me by the lowest plebeian, he must have died for it by my hand, in respect the enormity of the offence hath counterbalanced the baseness of him by whom it is given. I trust I shall find this clownish restorer not less willing to deal in blows than he seems."

While he held this conversation with himself, Sir Pierde Shafton was hastening to the little hall of horchetrees which had been assigned as the place of meeting. He greeted his companions with a courtly salutation, followed by this summary: "I pray you to observe, that I doff my hat to you, though as much my inferior as rank, without derogation on my part, inasmuch as my having so far honoured you in recording and adhering your defence, doth, in the judgment of the best courtiers, in some sort and for the time, raise you to a level with me—an honour which you may and ought to account cheaply purchased, even with the loss of your life, if such should chance to be the issue of this death."

"For which acknowledgments," said Halbert, "I have to thank the ladies which I presented to you."

The knight changed colour, and ground his teeth with rage—

"Draw your weapons!" said he to Olendunawag.

"Not in this spot," answered the youth:—"we should be liable to interception.—Follow me, and I will bring you to a place where we shall encounter no such risk."

He proceeded to walk up the glen, avowing that their place of combat should be in the entrance of the Corvina-shine; both because the spot, lying under the reputation of being haunted, was very little frequented, and also because he regarded it as a place which to him might be termed fatal, and which he therefore resolved should witness his death or victory.

They walked up the glen for some time in silence, like honorable combatants who did not wish to contend with words, and who had nothing friendly to exchange with each other. Silence, however, was always an uneasy state with Sir Percival, and, moreover, his anger was usually a hasty and short-lived passion. As, therefore, he went forth, in his own idea, in all love and honour towards his antagonist, he saw not any cause for submitting longer to the painful reminder of positive silence. He began by complimenting Halbert on the short cutway with which he surmounted the obstacles and impediments of the way.

"Trust me," said he, "worthy master, we have not a lighter or a firmer step in our country's roads, and if duly set forth by a well-bred, and trained vanguard that steadily advances, your leg would make an indifferent good show in a parade or a galliard. And I doubt nothing," he added, "that you have availed yourself of some opportunity to improve yourself in the art of fence, which is more akin than dancing to our present purpose!"

"I know nothing more of fencing," said Halbert, "than hath been taught me by an old shepherd of ours, called Martin, and at whose a lesson from Christus of the Chastel—for the rest, I must trust to good sword, strong arm, and sound heart."

"Nay, and I am glad of it, young Ananias (I will call you my Ananias, and you will call me your Conscience-man, while we are on these terms of unassumed equality), I am glad of your ignorance with all my heart. For we martialists proportion the punishments which we inflict upon our opposites, to the length and hazard of the efforts wherewith they oppose themselves to us. And I am not why you, being but a tyro, may not be held sufficiently punished for your outwandering, and reckless presumption, by the loss of an ear, an eye, or even a finger, accompanied by some flesh-wound of depth and severity suited to your error—whereas, had you been able to stand more effectively on your defence, I see not how less than your life could have atoned sufficiently for your presumption."

"Now, by God and Our Lady," said Halbert, unable any longer to restrain himself, "than set thyself over presumptions, who speakest thus daringly of the loss of a combat which is not yet even begun—Am you a god, that you already dispose of my life and limbs? or are you a judge in the justice-are,

telling at your own and without risk, how the head and quarters of a condemned criminal are to be disposed off?"

"Not so, O thou, whom I have well permitted to call myself my *Andrady*! I, thy Condemner, am neither a god to judge the sense of the combat before it is fought, nor a judge to dispose at my own and in safety of the limbs and head of a condemned criminal; but I am an indifferent good master of fence, being the first pupil of the first master of the first school of fence that our royal England affords, the said master being no other than the truly noble, and all-mercifully skilled *Vincenzo Savio*, from whom I learned the first stop, quick eye, and subtle head—of which qualities thou, O my most trusted *Andrady*, art full like to reap the fruits as soon as we shall find a piece of ground fitting for such experiments."

They had now reached the verge of the ravine, where *Hallert* had at first intended to stop, but when he observed the narrowness of the level ground, he began to consider that it was only by superior agility that he could expect to make up his deficiency in the science, as it was called, of defence. He found no spot which afforded sufficient room to traverse for this purpose, until he gained the well-known fountain, by whose margin, and in front of the large rock from which it sprang, was an assemblage of level turf, of small space indeed, compared with the great height of the cliffs with which it was surrounded on every point save that from which the stream issued forth, yet large enough for their present purpose.

When they had reached this spot of ground, fitted well by its gloom and sequestered situation to be a scene of mortal strife, both were surprised to observe that a grave was dug close by the foot of the rock with great regularity and regularly, the green turf being laid down upon the one side, and the earth thrown out on a heap upon the other. A mistick and shovel lay by the verge of the grave.

Mr *Peric* Elston bent his eye with several seriousness upon *Hallert* Glendinning, as he asked him sternly, "Does that look treason, young man? And have you purpose to set upon me here as in an ambushade or place of vantage?"

"Not on my part, by Heaven!" answered the youth. "I told no one of our purpose, nor would I for the throne of Scotland take odds against a single man."

"I believe thou wouldst not, mine *Andrady*," said the

knight, assuming the affected manner which was become a second nature to him; "nevertheless this stone is certainly well shaped, and might be the masterpiece of Nature's last workman, I would say the action—Wherefore, let us be thankful to chance or some unknown friend, who hath thus provided for one of us the decorum of sepulture, and let us proceed to determine which shall have the advantage of enjoying the place of undisturbed slumber."

In saying, he stripped off his doublet and dirk, which he folded up with great care, and deposited upon a large stone, while Herbert Glendinning, not without some emotion, followed his example. Their vicinity to the favourite haunt of the White Lady led him to form conjectures concerning the incident of the grave—"It must have been her work!" he thought; "the Spirit herself and has provided for the fatal event of the combat—I must return from this place a homicide, or I must remain here for ever!"

The bridge seemed now broken down behind him, and the chance of coming off honourably without killing or being killed (the hope of which hath been cheered the sinking heart of many a duellist), seemed now altogether to be removed. Yet the very desperation of his situation gave him, on an instant's reflection, both firmness and courage, and presented to him one sole alternative—surrender, suicide, or death.

"As we are here," said Sir Pierre Shafton, "unaccompanied by any patrons or seconds, it were well you should pass your hands over my sides, as I shall over yours; not that I suspect you to use any quaint device of pious armour, but in order to comply with the ancient and laudable custom practised on all such occasions."

While, complying with his antagonist's demand, Herbert Glendinning went through this ceremony, Sir Pierre Shafton did not fail to attract his attention to the quality and fashion of his weapon and undivided shirt—"In this very shirt," said he, "O mine Ancestry!—I say in this very garment, in which I am now to combat a Scottish rascal like thyself, it was my evil lot to lead the winning party at that wondrous match at Falken, made between the divine Atropal (our matchless Sidney) and the right honourable my very good lord of Oxford. All the beauties of Feltre (by which name I distinguish our beloved England) stood in the gallery, waving

their handbaths at each turn of the game, and showering the winners by their plaudits. After which noble sport we were refreshed by a sumptuous banquet, whereat it pleased the noble Ursula (being the unsolicited Countess of Pembroke) to accommodate me with her fan for the cooling my somewhat too much warmed visage, in requital which courtesy, I said, casting my features into a smiling, yet melancholy look, O Belovest Ursula! remove again that too fatal gift, which not like the Zephyr cooleth, but like the hot breath of the Sirens, heateth yet more that which is already inflamed. Whereupon, looking upon me somewhat scornfully, yet not so but what the experienced courtier might permit a certain sort of appreciative affection."—

Thus the knight was interrupted by Halbert, who had waited with courteous patience for some little time, till he found, that far from drawing to a close, Sir Pierre seemed rather inclined to wax profuse in his reminiscences.

"Sir Knight," said the youth, "if this matter be not very much to the purpose, we will, if you object not, proceed to that which we have in hand. You should have studied in England had you desired to waste time in words, for have we spent it in blows?"

"I crave your pardon, most venerated Archduke," answered Sir Pierre; "truly I become oblivious of everything beside, when the recollections of the divine court of Feltina press upon my unbidden memory, even as a mist is dashed when he bewitches him of the headlike vision. Ah, forgotten Feltina! delicate name of the fair, chosen shade of the wise, the birth-place and cradle of nobility, the temple of courtesy, the fane of sprightly civility—Ah, heavenly court, or rather courtly heaven! charmed with dances, lulled asleep with harmony, awakened with sprightly sports and tournaments, decorated with silk and diamonds, glittering with diamonds and jewels, standing as aid with double piled valours, astute, and astutest!"

"The token, Sir Knight, the token!" exclaimed Halbert Gwendolyn, who, impatient of Sir Pierre's interminable story, wrenched him of the ground of their quarrel, as the best way to compel him to the purpose of their meeting.

And he judged right; for Sir Pierre shufled as sooner heard him speak, than he concluded, "Thy death-hour has struck—betwixt thee to thy sword—Viv!"

Both swords were unbalanced, and the combatants commenced their engagement. Halbert became immediately aware, that, as he had expected, he was far inferior to his adversary in the use of his weapon. Sir Pierre Shafton had taken no more than his own share of real merit, when he termed himself an absolutely good fencer; and Glendinning soon found that he should have great difficulty in coping with him and henceer from such a master of the sword. The English knight was master of all the mystery of the *stroke*, *enroule*, *pointe-croise*, *deux-faute*, and so forth, which the Italian masters of defence had lately introduced into general practice. But Glendinning, on his part, was no novice in the principles of the art, according to the old Scottish *balcan*, and possessed the first of all qualities, a steady and collected mind. At first, being desirous to try the skill, and become acquainted with the play of his enemy, he stood on his defence, keeping his feet, head, eye, and body, in perfect union, and holding his sword short, and with the point towards his antagonist's face, so that Sir Pierre, in order to assail him, was obliged to make actual passes, and could not avail himself of his skill in making feints; while, on the other hand, Halbert was prompt to parry these attacks, either by shuffling his ground, or with the sword. The consequence was, that after two or three sharp attempts on the part of Sir Pierre, which were evaded or disconcerted by the address of his opponent, he began to assume the defensive in his turn, fearful of giving some advantage by being repeatedly the assailant. But Halbert was too cautious to press on a swordsman whose dexterity had already more than once placed him within a hair's-breadth of death, which he had only escaped by uncommon watchfulness and agility.

When each had made a first or two, there was a pause in the conflict, both as if by one consent dropping their sword's point, and looking on each other for a moment without speaking. At length Halbert Glendinning, who felt perhaps more uneasy on account of his hurry than he had done before he had displayed his own courage, and proved the strength of his antagonist, could not help saying, "Is the subject of our quarrel, Sir Knight, so mortal, that one of our two bodies must needs fill up that grave? or may we with honour, having proved ourselves against each other, sheathe our swords and depart friends?"

"Valiant and most rational Arduity," said the Southern knight, "is no man on earth could you have put a question on the scale of honour, who was more capable of rendering you a ransom. Let us pause for the space of two weeks, until I give you my opinion on this dependence,* for certain it is, that brave men should not run upon their fate like brutes and fustians with beards, but should slay each other deliberately, decently, and with reason. Therefore if we really consider the state of our dependence, we may the better apprehend whether the victims these have doomed one of us to expiate the same with his blood—Dost thou understand me?"

"I have heard Father Rostan," said Halbert, after a moment's reflection, "speak of the three fates, with their thread and their shears."

"Enough—enough,"—interrupted Sir Percie Shaddon, sitting with a rowl in of rage, "the thread of thy life is spun!"

And with those words he attacked with the steadiest ferocity the Scottish youth, who had but just time to throw himself into a posture of defence. But the rash fury of the resident, as frequently happens, disappointed its own purpose; for, as he made a desperate thrust, Halbert's lightning avoided it, and ere the knight could recover his weapon, required him (in one his own language) with a resolute stoosta, which passed through his body, and Sir Percie Shaddon fell to the ground.

* Dependence—a phrase among the lawless, of the sword for an entering quarrel.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SECOND.

Yes, his back left him—every long thought,
Back lay passion, every strong affection,
All sense of honour & that brave service,
Are fled at once from the pale track before me;
And I have given that which ought not moved,
Thoughts, wild, suffer'd as a flying man,
To be a ghastly form of bloody sin,
From the dead dead for reptiles.

OUR PART

I BELIEVE few successful duellists (if the word successful can be applied to a superiority so fatal) have beheld their dead antagonist stretched on the earth at their feet, without wishing

they could ransom with their own blood that which it has been their fate to spill. Least of all could such indifference be the lot of so young a man as Halbert Glendinning, who, unused to the sight of human blood, was not only struck with sorrow, but with terror, when he beheld Sir Pierre Shadon lie stretched on the gravestone before him, vomiting gore as if impelled by the strokes of a pump. He threw his bloody sword on the ground, and hastened to kneel down and support him, vainly striving at the same time to staunch his wound, which seemed rather to bleed inwardly than outwardly.

The unfortunate knight spoke at intervals, when the sponge would permit him, and his words, so far as intelligible, partook of his efforted and convulsed, yet not ungenerous character.

"Most medical youth," he said, "thy fortune hath prevailed over knightly skill—and Avidity hath overcome Conscience, even as the lion hath sometimes hawked at and struck down the silver-gazelle.—Fly and save thyself!—Take my purse—it is in the outer pocket of my crimson-coloured hose—and is worth a clown's acceptance. See that my words, with my remonstrance, be sent to the Monastery of Saint Mary's"—(here his voice grew weak, and his mind and recollection seemed to waver)—"I bestow the red velvet jockey, with close breeches conforming—fit—oh!—the good of my soul."

"Be of good comfort, sir," said Halbert, half-distracted with his agony of pity and remorse. "I trust you shall yet do well—Oh for a leech!"

"Were there twenty physicians, O most generous Avidity, and that were a great spectacle—I might not survive, my life is sliding fast—Commend me to the medical nymph whom I called my Discretion—O Chastity!—true mistress of the bleeding heart—which now bleedeth in and aches!—Place me on the ground at my length, most medical victor, born to quench the pride of the burning light of the most filithous court of Flanders—O minute and angle—halpits and ladies—maquers and theatre—quintessence—chain-work and bawling—love, honour, and beauty!"—

While muttering these last words, which did from him, as it were, unawares, while dreaming he was receding to amid the glories of the English court, the gallant Sir Pierre Shadon stretched out his limbs—groaned deeply, shut his eyes, and became motionless.

The victor tore his hair for very sorrow, as he looked on the pale countenance of his victim. Life, he thought, had not utterly fled, but without better aid than his own, he saw not how it could be preserved.

"Why," he exclaimed, in vain possession, "why did I provoke him to an hour so fatal? Would to God I had submitted to the worst insult man could receive from man, rather than be the bloody instrument of this bloody deed—and doubly cursed be this evil-looking spot, which, haunted as I know it to be by a witch or a devil, I yet chose for the place of combat! In any other place, save this, there had been help to be gotten by speed of foot, or by swelling of voice—but here there was no one to be found by search, no one to hear my shouts, save the evil spirit who has surrounded this mischief. It is not her hour—I will essay the spell however; and if she can give me aid, she shall do it, or know of what a madman is capable even against those of another world!"

He opened his bloody eyes from his feet, and repeated the spell with which the reader is well acquainted; but there was neither voice, expression, nor signal of answer. The youth, in the impetuosity of his despair, and with the rash heartiness which formed the basis of his character, shouted aloud, "Witch—Sorcerer—Fiend!—art thou deaf to my cries of help, and so ready to appear and answer those of vengeance? Arise and speak to me, or I will choke up thy foulness, tear down thy holiness, and leave thy haunt as waste and bare as thy fatal sentences have made me waste of counsel and bare of counsel!"—This furious and raging invocation was suddenly interrupted by a distant sound, resembling a bell, from the gorge of the ravine. "How may Saint Mary be praised," said the youth, hastily fastening his sword, "I hear the voice of some living man, who may give me counsel and help in this fearful extremity."

Having drawn his sword, Halbert Glenfinning, hallooing at intervals, in answer to the sound which he had heard, ran with the speed of a hunted buck down the rugged dells, as if paradise had been before him, hell and all her fires behind, and his eternal happiness or misery had depended upon the speed which he carried. In a space incredibly short he saw one but a Scottish mountaineer having his sword strong by the deepest and most passionate interest, the youth reached the

they could reason with their own blood that which it has been their fate to spill. Least of all could such indifference be the lot of so young a man as Halbert Glendensing, who, unused to the sight of human blood, was not only struck with horror, but with terror, when he beheld Sir Pierce Shafton stretched on the grassward before him, vomiting gore as if expelled by the strokes of a pump. He threw his bloody sword on the ground, and hastened to kneel down and support him, vainly striving at the same time to staunch his wound, which seemed rather to bleed inwardly than outwardly.

The unfortunate knight spoke at intervals, when the surgeons would permit him, and his words, so far as intelligible, partook of his affected and smoothed, yet not ungenerous character.

"Most rational youth," he said, "thy fortune hath persecuted ever knightly skill—and Audacity hath overcome Conscience—men, even as the kite hath sometimes hawked at and struck down the falcon-quail.—Fly and save thyself!—Take my purse—it is in the outer pocket of my carnation-colored hose—and is worth a dove's acceptance. See that my mails, with my vestments, be sent to the Monastery of Saint Mary's"—(here his voice grew weak, and his mind and recollection seemed to waver).—"I bestow thee our velvet jerkin, with close branches containing—for—oh!—the good of my soul."

"Be of good comfort, sir," said Halbert, half-distracted with his spray of pity and remorse. "I trust you shall yet do well.—Oh for a leech!"

"Were there twenty physicians, O most generous Audacity, and that were a grave spectacle—I might not survive, my life is ebbing fast.—Command me to the rational nymph whom I called my Diaphane—O Christians!—true empress of the bleeding heart—which now bleedeth in and earnest!—Place me on the ground at my length, most rational vector, here to quench the pride of the burning light of the most fallacious court of Palamara.—O saints and angels—knight and ladies—monks and thespians—quaint devices—chain-work and brocade—love, honour, and beauty!"

While muttering these last words, which slid from him, as it were, unawares, while doubtless he was recalling to mind the glories of the English court, the pallid Sir Pierce Shafton stretched out his limbs—groaned deeply, shut his eyes, and became motionless.

The victor too has heart for very sorrow, as he looked on the pale countenance of his victim. Life, he thought, had not strictly fled, but without better aid than his own, he saw not how it could be preserved.

"Why," he exclaimed, in vain possession, "why did I preserve thee to an hour so fatal? Would to God I had submitted to the worst death man could reserve from man, rather than be the bloody instrument of this bloody deed—and doubly cursed be the evil-loding spot, which, haunted as I know it to be by a witch or a devil, I yet chose for the place of combat! In any other place, were this, there had been help to be gotten by speed of foot, or by uprising of voice—but here there is no one to be found by search, no one to hear my shouts, were the evil spirit who has counselled this mischief. It is not her hour—I will essay the spell however; and if she can give me aid, she shall do it, or know of what a madman is capable even against those of another world!"

He spurned his bloody shoe from his foot, and repeated the spell with which the reader is well acquainted; but there was neither voice, apparition, nor signal of answer. The youth, in the impetuosity of his despair, and with the rash confidence which formed the basis of his character, shouted aloud, "Witch—Sorceress—Fiend!—art thou deaf to my cries of help, and so ready to appear and answer those of vengeance? Arise and speak to me, or I will shake up thy fountain, tear down thy holytruth, and leave thy heart as waste and bare as thy fatal confidence has made me waste of comfort and bare of counsel!"—This furious and raging invocation was suddenly interrupted by a distant sound, resembling a bell, from the gorge of the ravine. "How may Saint Mary be praised," said the youth, hastily fastening his sword, "I hear the voice of some living man, who may give me counsel and help in this fearful extremity!"

Having donned his sword, Halbert Glendinning, hallooing at intervals, in answer to the sound which he had heard, ran with the speed of a hunted buck down the rugged dells, as if paradise had been before him, hell and all her torments behind, and his eternal happiness or misery had depended upon the speed which he exerted. In a space incredibly short for any one but a Scottish mountaineer having his nerves strung by the deepest and most passionate interests, the youth reached the

entrance of the ravine, through which the rill that flows down Court-mountain discharges itself, and unites with the brook that waters the little valley of Glendene.

Here he paused, and looked around him upwards and downwards through the glen, without perceiving a human form. His heart sank within him. But the windings of the glen interrupted his prospect, and the person, whose voice he had heard, might therefore be at no great distance, though not visible to his sight. The branches of an oak-tree, which shot straight out from the face of a tall cliff, projected to his bold spirit, steady hand, and active limbs, the means of ascending it as a place of outlook, although the enterprise was what most men would have shrunk from. But by one leaped from the south, the active youth caught hold of the lowest branch, and swung himself up into the tree, and in a minute more gained the top of the cliff, from which he could easily survey a human figure descending the valley. It was not that of a shepherd, or of a hunter, and scarcely any others used to traverse this deserted solitude, especially coming from the south, since the reader may remember that the brook took its rise from an intricate and dangerous morass which lay in that direction.

But Hubert Glendeneing did not pause to consider who the traveller might be, or what might be the purpose of his journey. To know that he saw a human being, and might rescue, in the extremity of his distress, the countenance and advice of a fellow-creature, was enough for him at the moment. He threw himself from the pinnacle of the cliff once more into the arms of the projecting oak-tree, whose boughs waved in wild air, anchored by the roots in a large rift or chasm of the rock. Catching at the branch which was nearest to him, he dropped himself from that height upon the ground; and such was the elastic springiness of his youthful frame, that he pricked there as lightly, and with as little injury, as the falcon stooping from her wheel.

To resume his race at full speed up the glen, was the work of an instant; and as he turned angle after angle of the indented banks of the valley, without meeting that which he sought, he became half afraid that the form which he had seen at such a distance had already melted into thin air, and was either a deception of his own imagination, or of the elementary spirits by which the valley was supposed to be haunted.

But, to his inexpressible joy, as he turned round the head of a huge and distinguished crag, he met, straight before and very near to him, a person, whose dress, as he viewed it hastily, resembled that of a pilgrim.

He was a man of advanced life, and wearing a long beard, having on his head a large doublet hat, without velvet band or brim. His dress was a tunic of black serge, which, like those commonly called *houzer-douks*, had an upper part, which covered the arms and fell down on the lower; a small scrip and bottle, which hung at his back, with a stout staff in his hand, completed his equipment. His step was feeble, like that of one exhausted by a tedious journey.

"Have ye, good father?" said the youth. "God and Our Lady have sent you to my assistance."

"And in what, my son, canst thou find a creature as I am, be of service to you?" said the old man, not a little surprised at being thus accosted by so handsome a youth, his features discomposed by anxiety, his face flushed with exertion, his hands and much of his dress stained with blood.

"A man bleeds to death in the valley here, hard by. Come with me—come with me! You are good—you have experience—you have at least your arms—and mine have well-nigh left me."

"A man—and bleeding to death—and here in this desolate spot!" said the stranger.

"Stay not to question it, father," said the youth, "but come instantly to his rescue. Follow me—follow me, without an instant's delay."

"Nay, but, my son," said the old man, "we do not lightly follow the guides who present themselves thus suddenly in the bosom of a howling wilderness. Ere I follow thee, thou must exposed to me thy name, thy purpose, and thy name."

"There is no time to exposed anything," said Halbert; "I tell thee a man's life is at stake, and thou must come to aid him, or I will carry thee thither by force."

"Nay, thou shalt not need," said the traveller; "if it indeed be as thou sayest, I will follow thee of free-will—the rather that I am not wholly unskilled in wood-craft, and have in my scrip that which may do thy friend a service.—Yet walk more slowly, I pray thee, for I am already well-nigh forewarned with travel."

With the indignant repugnance of the fiery steel when compelled by his rider to keep pace with some slow drudge upon the highway, Halbert accompanied the wayfarer, burning with anxiety, which he endeavoured to subdue, that he might not alarm his companion, who was obviously afraid to trust him. When they reached the place where they were to turn off the wider glen into the Corri, the traveller made a doubtful pause, as if unwilling to leave the broader path—"Young man," he said, "if thou moment'st might but good to these gray hairs, then wilt gale stride by thy cradle—I have no earthly treasure to tempt either robber or murderer."

"And I," said the youth, "am neither—and yet—God of Heaven!—I may be a murderer, unless your aid comes in time to the wounded wretch!"

"Is it even so?" said the traveller, "and do human passions defile the breast of nature, even in her deepest solitude?—Yet why should I marvel that where darkness shades the works of darkness should abound?—By its fruits is the tree known.—Lead on, unhappy youth—I follow thee!"

And with better will to the journey than he had refused hitherto, the stranger exerted himself to the uttermost, and seemed to forget his own fatigue in his efforts to keep pace with his impatient guide.

What was the surprise of Halbert Glen-linching, when, upon arriving at the fatal spot, he saw no appearance of the body of Sir Francis Shafton! The traces of the dog were otherwise sufficiently visible. The knight's cloak had indeed vanished as well as his body, but his doublet remained where he had laid it down, and the turf on which he had been stretched was stained with blood in many a dark crimson spot.

As he gazed round him in terror and astonishment, Halbert's eyes fell upon the place of sepulture which had so lately appeared to gape for a victim. It was no longer open, and it seemed that earth had received the expected tenant; for the usual narrow hollow was piled over what had lately been an open grave, and the grass sod was adjusted over all with the accuracy of an experienced workman. Halbert stood aghast. The idea rushed on his mind truthfully, that the earth-heap before him concealed what had lately been a living, moving, and sentient fellow-creature, whom, in little provocation, his fall had laid, reduced to a clod of the valley, as senseless and as cold as the

turf under which he rested. The hand that scooped the grave had completed its work; and whose hand could it be save that of the mysterious being of doubtful quality, whom his rashness had involved, and whom he had suffered to intermingle in his destinies?

As he stood with clasped hands and uplifted eyes, bitterly ruing his rashness, he was roused by the voice of the stranger, whose suspicions of his guide had again been awakened by finding the scene so different from what Halbert had led him to expect—"Young man," he said, "have thou heeded thy tongue with falsehood to cut perhaps only a few days from the life of one whom Nature will soon call home, without guilt on thy part to hasten his journey?"

"By the blessed Heaven!—by our dear Lady!" ejaculated Halbert.

"Drear not at all!" said the stranger, interrupting him, "saith thy Heaven, for it is God's throne, not by earth, for it is his footstool—our by the creature whom he hath made, for they are but earth and clay as we are. Let thy yea be yea, and thy nay, nay. Tell me, in a word, why and for what purpose thou hast signed a tale, to lead a bewildered traveller yet further astray?"

"As I am a Christian man," said Glendinning, "I left him here bleeding to death—and now I rescure my kin, and much I doubt that the body that thou seemst has closed on his mortal remains!"

"And who is he, for whose fate thou art so anxious?" said the stranger; "or how is it possible that this wounded man could have been either removed from, or interred in, a place so solitary?"

"His name," said Halbert, after a moment's pause, "is Pierre Shafton—there, on that very spot, I left him bleeding; and what power has conveyed him hence, I know no more than thou dost."

"Pierre Shafton?" said the stranger; "Sir Pierre Shafton of Wetherston, a kinsman, as it is said, of the great Pierre of Northumberland? If thou hast slain him, to return to the territories of the proud Abbot is to give thy neck to the gallows. He is well known, that Pierre Shafton, the meddling tool of wren plottings—a hardhearted trafficker in treason—a champion of the Pope, employed as a secret hope by those more politic

heads, who have more will to work mischief, than valour to encounter danger.—Come with me, youth, and save thyself from the evil consequences of this deed—Guide me to the Castle of Arned, and thy reward shall be protection and safety."

Agnes Halbert passed, and summoned his mind to a hasty council. The vengeance with which the Abbot was likely to visit the daughter of Shafton, his friend, and in some measure his guest, was likely to be severe, yet, in the various contingencies which he had considered previous to their deed, he had unconsciously turned to reflect what was to be his line of conduct in case of Sir Pierre falling by his hand. If he returned to Glendurg, he was sure to draw on his whole family, including Mary Arned, the resentment of the Abbot and community, whereas it was possible that flight might make him be regarded as the sole author of the deed, and might avert the indignation of the monks from the rest of the inhabitants of his paternal tower. Halbert recollected also the favour expressed for the household, and especially for Edward, by the Sub-Prior; and he considered that he could, by commencing his own guilt to that worthy ecclesiastic, when at a distance from Glendurg, secure his powerful interposition in favour of his family. These thoughts rapidly passed through his mind, and he determined on flight. The stranger's company, and his promised protection, came in aid of that resolution; but he was unable to reconcile the invitation which the old man gave him to accompany him for safety to the Castle of Arned, with the connections of Julian, the present usurper of that inheritance. "Good Father," he said, "I fear that you mistake the man with whom you wish me to harbour. Arned guided Pierre Shafton into Scotland, and his blacksmen, Chastin of the Glendurg, brought the Southern kirkers."

"Of that," said the old man, "I am well aware. Yet if thou wilt trust to me, as I have shown no reluctance to confide in thee, thou shalt find with Julian Arned welcome, or at least safety."

"Father," replied Halbert, "though I can ill reconcile what thou sayest with what Julian Arned hath done, yet caring little about the safety of a creature so lost as myself, and as thy words seem those of truth and honesty, and finally, as thou dost render thyself frankly up to my conduct, I will return the

confidence than last shown, and accompany them to the Castle of Arenal by a road which then himself could never have discovered." He led the way, and the old man followed for some time in silence.

CHAPTER TWENTY-THIRD.

*'Tis when the wound is differing with the cold,
The warrior first feels pain—'Tis when the hand
And fiery lance of his soul is gone,
The slayer feels remorse.*

OUR PLAY.

THE feelings of compunction with which Halbert Glenhewing was visited upon this painful occasion, were deeper than belonged to an age and country in which human life was held so cheap. They tell for avert certainty of those which might have affected a mind regulated by better religious precepts, and more strictly trained under moral laws; but still they were deep and severely felt, and divided in Halbert's heart even the regret with which he parted from Mary Arenal and the tower of his fathers.

The old traveller walked silently by his side for some time, and then addressed him,—"My son, it has been said that sorrow must speak or die—Why art thou so much cast down?—Tell me thy unhappy tale, and it may be that my gray head may deserve counsel and aid for your young life."

"Alas!" said Halbert Glenhewing, "can you wonder why I am cast down?—I am at that husband's figure from my father's house, from my mother, and from my friends, and I bear on my head the blood of a man who injured me but in life words, which I have thus bloodily requited. My heart now tells me I have done evil—it were harder than these words if it could bear un-mixed the thought, that I have sent this man to a long account, unaccounted and unatoned!"

"Pshaw there, my son," said the traveller. "That thou hast defiled God's image in thy neighbour's person—that thou hast sent dust to dust in idle words or bitter deeds, is indeed a sin of the deepest dye—that thou hast not shown the space which Heaven might have allowed him for repentance, makes it yet more deadly—but for all this there is help in God."

"I understood you not, father," said Halbert, struck by the solemn tone which was assumed by his companion.

The old man proceeded. "Thou hast slain thine enemy—it was a cruel deed: thou hast cut him off perdition in his sin—it is a fearful aggravation. Do yet by my counsel, and in lieu of him whom thou hast perdition consigned to the kingdom of Satan, let thine efforts meet another subject from the reign of the Evil One."

"I understood you, father," said Halbert; "thou wouldst have me atone for my rashness by doing service to the soul of my adversary—But how may this be? I have no money to purchase masses, and gladly would I go barefoot to the Holy Land to free his spirit from purgatory, only that"—

"My son," said the old man, interrupting him, "the atonement for whose redemption I entreat you to labour, is not the dead but the living. It is not for the soul of thine enemy I would exhort thee to pray—that has already had its final doom from a Judge as merciful as He is just, nor wert thou to earn that rest in to dream, and obtain a mass for each one, would it send the departed apart. Where the two hath fallen, it must lie. But the expiring, which hath in it yet the vapour and heat of life, may be healed to the point to which it ought to incline."

"Art thou a priest, father?" said the young man, "or by what commission dost thou talk of such high matters?"

"By that of my Almighty Master," said the teacher, "under whose banner I am an enlisted soldier."

Halbert's acquaintance with religious matters was no deeper than could be derived from the Archbishop of Saint Andrew's Catechism, and the pamphlet called the *Frequency Faith*,* both which were industriously circulated and recommended by the monks of Saint Mary's. Yet, however indifferent and superficial a theologian, he began to suspect that he was now in company with one of the gospellers, or hanties, before whose influence the ancient system of religion now tottered to the very foundation. Dred up, as may well be presumed, is a holy

* [This volume, printed at St. Andrew in 1781, known as Archbishop Hamilton's Catechism, was condemned by Bishop Spotswood and others with the *Frequency Faith*. A tract of four pages in 1818, answered only a few years ago, is more fully the one mentioned by Knox. See Knox's Works, vol. i. p. 383; *The Anonymous Abolitionist*, vol. iii. p. 403, and Knox, vol. vi. p. 678.]

lover against these formidable victories, the youth's first feelings were those of a loyal and devoted church vessel. "Old man," he said, "wert thou able to make good with thy hand the words that thy tongue hath spoken against our Holy Mother Church, we should have tried upon thee soon which of our crosses hath the better champion."

"Nay," said the stranger, "if thou art a true soldier of Rome, thou wilt not pause from thy purpose because thou hast the side of peers and of strength on thy side. Hearken to me, my son. I have showed thee how to make thy peace with Heaven, and thou hast rejected my proffer. I will now show thee how thou shalt make thy reconciliation with the powers of this world. Take this grey head from the frail body which supports it, and carry it to the chair of proud Abbot Boniface; and when thou tellst him thou hast slain Piers the Shoon, and his tre men at the dool, lay the head of Henry Warden at his feet, and thou shalt have praise instead of curse."

Halbert Glendinning stopped back in surprise. "What! say you that Henry Warden is famous among the barons, that even Knox's name is more more frequently in their mouths! Art thou he, and dost thou so approach the Highness of Saint Mary's?"

"I am Henry Warden, of a surety," said the old man, "for cowardly to be named in the same breath with Knox, but yet willing to venture on whatever danger my master's service may call me to."

"Hearken to me, then," said Halbert; "to slay thee I have no heart—to make thee prisoner, were equally to bring thy blood on my head—to leave thee in this wild without a guide were little better. I will conduct thee as I promised, in safety to the castle of Arundel; but hearken not, while we are on the journey, a word against the doctrines of the holy church of which I am an unworthy—but though an ignorant, a zealous member.—When thou art there arrived, beware of thyself—there is a high price upon thy head, and I dare Arundel have the glance of gold burnet-pearls."

"Yet thou sayest not," answered the Protestant preacher, the man he was, "that for him he would sell the blood of his guest!"

"Not if thou werest an terrified stranger, relying on his

* A gold coin of James V., the most beautiful of the Scottish series; so called because the effigy of the sovereign is represented wearing a burnet.

bold," said the youth, "evil as Jafin may be, he dare not break the rites of hospitality; for, loose as we on these marches may be in all other ties, these are respected amongst us even to slavery, and his sacred relations would think it incumbent on them to spill his blood themselves, to efface the disgrace such treason would bring upon their name and lineage. But if thou goest self-invited, and without assurance of safety, I promise thee thy risk is great."

"I am in God's hand," answered the preacher; "it is on His sword that I traverse these wild andlet dangers of every kind; while I am useful for my master's service, they shall not prevail against me, and when, like the barren fig-tree, I can no longer produce fruit, what imports it when or by whom the axe is laid to the root?"

"Your courage and devotion," said Glendinning, "are worthy of a better cause."

"That," said Warden, "cannot be—mine is the very best."

They continued their journey in silence, Halbert Glendinning trading with the utmost accuracy the names of the dangerous and intricate mountains and hills which divided the Highlands from the luxury of Ararat. From time to time he was obliged to stop, in order to assist his companions to cross the black intervals of quaking bog, called in the Scottish dialect *taps*, by which the firmer parts of the moors were intersected.

"Courage, old man," said Halbert, as he saw his companion almost exhausted with fatigue, "we shall soon be upon hard ground. And yet, soft as this moss is, I have seen the many falcons go through it as light as down when the quarry was upon the flight."

"True, my son," answered Warden, "for so I will still call you, though you turn me no longer father; and even as such headlong youth pursue the pleasures, without regard to the mine and the peril of the paths through which they are hurried."

"I have already told thee," answered Halbert Glendinning, sternly, "that I will hear nothing from thee that avers of doubt."

"Nay, but, my son," answered Warden, "thy spiritual father Maseel would surely not dispute the truth of what I have now spoken for your edification!"

Glendinning stoically replied, "I know not how that may be—but I well well it is the fashion of your brotherhood to talk

your look with fair discourse, and to hold yourselves up as angels of light, that you may the better extend the kingdom of darkness."

"Hoy God," replied the preacher, "pardon those who have thus reported of his servants! I will not offend them, my son, by being instant out of season—these speakest but as thou art taught—yet ever I trust that as goodly a youth will be still pained, like a brand from the burning."

While he thus spoke, the verge of the morrow was attained, and their path lay on the declivity. Greenward it was, and, viewed from a distance, deepened with its narrow and verdant line the dark-brown heath which it traversed, though the distinction was not so easily traced when they were walking on it.* The old man pursued his journey with comparative ease, and, unwilling again to awaken the jealous soul of his young companion for the Roman faith, he discoursed on other matters. The topic of his conversation was still guess, record, and instructive. He had travelled much, and knew both the language and manners of other countries, concerning which Halbert Glasfouling, already anticipating the possibility of being obliged to leave Scotland for the deed he had done, was naturally and anxiously desirous of information. By degrees he was more attracted by the charms of the stranger's conversation than repelled by the dread of his dangerous character as a heretic, and Halbert had called him father more than once, ere the towers of Arund Castle came in view.

The situation of this ancient fortress was remarkable. It occupied a small rocky islet in a mountain lake, or loch, as such a piece of water is called in Westmoreland. The lake might be about a mile in circumference, surrounded by hills of considerable height, which, except where old trees and brushwood cramped the ravines that divided them from each other, were bare and heathy. The surprise of the spectator was chiefly excited by finding a piece of water situated in that high and mountainous region, and the landscape around had features which might rather be termed wild, than either romantic or sublime; yet the scene was not without its charms. Under the burning sun of summer, the clear waves of the deep az-

* This sort of path, rarely when looked at from a distance, but not to be seen when you are upon it, is called on the Border by the equivalent name of a blind-road.

ruffled lake refreshed the eye, and impressed the mind with a pleasing feeling of deep solitude. In winter, when the snow lay on the mountains around, those dazzling masses appeared to ascend far beyond their wooded and natural height, while the lake, which stretched beneath, and filled their bosom with all its frozen waves, lay like the surface of a darkened and broken mirror around the black and rocky islet, and the walls of the gray castle with which it was crowned.

As the walls compact, either with its principal buildings, or with its flanking and outward walls, every projecting point of rock, which served as its site, it seemed as completely surrounded by water as the nest of a wild swan, save where a narrow causeway extended between the islet and the shore. But the fortress was larger in appearance than in reality; and of the buildings which it actually contained, many had become ruinous and uninhabitable. In the times of the grandeur of the Arned family, these had been occupied by a considerable garrison of followers and retainers, but they were now in a great measure deserted; and Julian Arned would probably have found his habitation in a residence better suited to his diminished fortunes, had it not been for the great security which the situation of the old castle afforded to a man of his pretensions and perfidious mode of life. Indeed, in this respect, the spot could scarce have been more happily chosen, for it could be rendered almost completely inaccessible at the pleasure of the inhabitant. The distance between the nearest shore and the islet was not indeed above a hundred yards; but then the causeway which connected them was extremely narrow, and completely divided by two cuts, one in the mid-way between the islet and shore, and another close under the outward gate of the castle. These formed a formidable, and almost insurmountable, interruption to any hostile approach. Each was defended by a drawbridge, one of which, being that nearest to the castle, was regularly raised at all times during the day, and both were lifted at night.*

* It is in vain to search near Malton for any such castle as is here described. The lake at the head of the Yarrow, and close to the rise of the water of Ails, presents an object of the kind. But in Yorkshire Loch is usually short of water, as the dry moor, as it is called, there is the remains of a fortress called *Lochsda Tower*, which, like the supposed Castle of Arned, is built upon an island, and connected with the bank by a causeway. It is much smaller than the Castle of Arned is described, consisting only of a single ruinous tower.

The situation of Julian Arnesel, engaged in a variety of frolics, and a party to almost every dark and mysterious transaction which was on foot in that wild and military frontier, required all those precautions for his security. His own ambiguous and doubtful course of policy had increased these dangers; for as he made professions to both parties in the state, and occasionally united more actively with either the one or the other, as changed best to serve his immediate purpose, he could not be said to have either firm allies and protectors, or determined enemies. His life was a life of expedients and of peril; and while, in pursuit of his interest, he made all the dodges which he thought necessary to attain his object, he often coveted his prey, and missed that which he might have gained by observing a straighter course.

CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR.

I'll walk on water; arm my eye with justice,
My hand with courage, and my head with wisdom,
Like him who waters on a lion's den.

OLD PLAY.

When, issuing from the gorge of a pass which terminated upon the lake, the travellers came in sight of the ancient castle of Arnesel, the old man looked with earnest attention upon the scene before him. The castle was, as we have said, in many places ruined, as was evident, even at this distance, by the broken, ragged, and irregular outline of the walls and of the towers. In others it seemed more entire, and a pillar of dark smoke, which ascended from the chimneys of the donjon, and spread its long dusky pennon through the clear ether, indicated that it was inhabited. But no corn-fields or enclosed pasture grounds on the side of the lake showed that provision was made for comfort and subsistence which usually appeared near the houses of the greater, and even of the lesser barons. There were no cottages with their patches of infield, and their crofts and gardens, surrounded by rows of massive sycamores; no church with its steeple tower in the valley; no herds of sheep among the hills; no cattle on the lower ground; nothing

which interested the occasional prosecution of the arts of peace and of industry. It was plain that the inhabitants, whether few or numerous, must be considered as the garrison of the castle, living within its defenced precincts, and subsisting by means which were other than peaceful.

Probably it was with this conviction that the old man, going on the castle, muttered to himself, "*Louis offensives et peins aveuables!*" and then, turning to Herbert Gladwin, he asked, "It's may say of powder that as King James did of another fortress in this province, that he who built it was a thief in his heart."

"But it was not so," answered Gladwin; "your castle was built by the old lords of Arundel, men as much beloved in peace as they were respected in war. They were the bulwark of the frontiers against foreigners, and the protectors of the natives from domestic oppression. The present usurper of their habitation no more resembles them, than the night-prowling owl resembles a falcon, because she builds on the same rock."

"This Julian Arundel, then, holds no high place in the love and regard of his neighbours?" said Warden.

"So little," answered Herbert, "that besides the jack-men and others with whom he has associated himself, and of whom he has many at his disposal, I know of few who voluntarily associate with him. He has been more than once outlawed both by England and Scotland, his lands declared forfeited, and his head set at a price. But in these anxious times, a man so daring as Julian Arundel has ever found some friends willing to protect him against the penalties of the law, on condition of his secret services."

"You describe a dangerous man," replied Warden.

"You may have experience of that," replied the youth, "if you deal not the more warily;—though it may be that he also has forsaken the community of the church, and gone astray in the path of heresy."

"What your blindness terms the path of heresy," answered the reformer, "is indeed the straight and narrow way, wherein he who walks turns not aside, whether for worldly wealth or for worldly passions. Would to God this man were moved by

* It was of Lockwood, the hereditary doctor of the Johnstones of Arundale, a strong castle situated in the centre of a quaking bog, that James VI. made this remark.

no other and no worse spirit than that which prompts my poor soulmate to extend the kingdom of Heaven! The Baron of Arundel is personally unknown to me, is not of our congregation or of our council; yet I bear to him charges treating my safety, from those whom he must fear if he does not respect them, and upon that assurance I will venture upon his hold—I am now sufficiently refreshed by these few minutes of repose."

"Take then this advice for your safety," said Halbert, "and believe that it is founded upon the usage of this country and its inhabitants. If you can better shift for yourself, go not to the Castle of Arundel—if you do risk going thither, obtain from him, if possible, his safe conduct, and beware that he swears it by the Black Rod—and lastly, observe whether he sits with you at the board, or pledges you in the cup; for if he gives you not these signs of welcome, his thoughts are evil towards you."

"Alas!" said the preacher, "I have no better earthly refuge for the present than these feverish towers, but I go thither trusting to evil which is not of this earth—But then, good youth, wouldst thou trust thyself in this dangerous den?"

"I," answered Halbert, "am in no danger, I am well known to Christs of the Church, the brethren of the John Arundel, and, what is a yet better protection, I have nothing either to provoke malice or to tempt plunder."

The tramp of a steed, which clattered along the stony banks of the loch, was now heard behind them; and, when they looked back, a rider was visible, his steed up and the point of his long lance glancing in the setting sun, as he rode rapidly towards them.

Halbert Glendinning soon recognised Christs of the Church, and made his companion aware that the handmaid of John Arundel was approaching.

"Ha, youngling!" said Christs to Halbert, as he came up to them, "thou hast made good my word at last, and come to take service with my noble master, hast thou not? Thou shalt find a good friend and a true, and ere Saint Barnaby come round again, thou shalt know a merry pass between Millburn Plain and Netherby, as if thou hadst been born with a jack on thy back, and a lance in thy hand.—What old wote hast thou with thee?—He is not of the brotherhood of Saint Mary's—at least, he has not the habit* of these black cattle."

* *Julie*—The breast, or mark, set upon sheep or cattle by their owners.

"He is a wayfaring man," said Hilbert, "who has concerns with Julius of Arundel. For myself, I intend to go to Edinborough to see the Court and the Queen, and when I return hither we will talk of your proffer. Meanwhile, as thou hast often invited me to the castle, I crave hospitality there to-night for myself and my companion."

"For thyself and welcome, young comrade," replied Christie; "but we harbour no pilgrims, nor ought that looks like a pilgrim."

"So please you," said Warden, "I have letters of recommendation to thy master from a sure friend, whom he will right willingly oblige in higher matters than in affording me a brief protection.—And I am no pilgrim, but resemble the same, with all its superstitious circumstances."

He offered his letters to the houseman, who shook his head.

"These," he said, "are matters for my master, and it will be well if he can read them himself; for me, sword and lance are my book and partner, and have been since I was twelve years old. But I will guide you to the castle, and the Baron of Arundel will himself judge of your errand."

By this time the party had reached the caseway, along which Christie advanced at a trot, intimating his presence to the warden within the castle by a shrill and peevish whistle. At this signal the further drawbridge was lowered. The houseman passed it and disappeared under the gloomy portal which was beyond it.

Glendinning and his companion, advancing more leisurely along the rugged caseway, stood at length under the same gateway, over which frowned, in dark red freestone, the ancient armorial bearings of the house of Arundel, which represented a female figure shrouded and muffled, which occupied the whole field. The cause of their assuming so singular a device was uncertain, but the figure was generally supposed to represent the mysterious being called the White Lady of Arundel.* The sight of this maddening shield awakened in the mind of Hilbert the strange circumstances which had connected his wife with that of Mary Arundel, and with the doings of the spiritist being who was attached to her house, and whom he saw here

* There is an ancient English family, I believe, which bears, or did bear, a ghost or spirit person with a bald crown. This seems to have been a device of a peevish or meddling household.

represented in stone, as he had before seen her effigy upon the wall ring of Waller Avenue, which, with other statues formerly mentioned, had been saved from pillage, and brought to Glenside, when Mary's mother was driven from her habitation.

"You sigh, my son," said the old man, observing the impression made on his youthful companion's countenance, but mislatching the cause; "if you fear to enter, we may yet return."

"That may be not," said Charles of the Chestnut, who emerged at that instant from the side-door under the gateway. "Look yonder, and choose whether you will return skimming the water like a wild duck, or winging the air like a plover."

They looked, and saw that the darkness which they had just crossed was again raised, and now responded its planks bellowed the setting sun and the portal of the castle, deepening the gloom of the arch under which they stood. Charles laughed and bid them follow him, saying, by way of encouragement, in Herbert's ear, "Answer boldly and readily to whatever the Baron asks you. Never stop to pick your words, and above all shew no fear of him—the devil is not so black as he is painted."

As he spoke thus, he introduced them into the large stone hall, at the upper end of which blazed a huge fire of wood. The long oaken table, which, as usual, occupied the midst of the apartment, was covered with rude preparations for the evening meal of the Baron and his chief domestics, five or six of whom, strong, athletic, savage-looking men, paced up and down the lower end of the hall, which rang to the jarring clang of their long swords that clinked as they moved, and to the heavy tramp of their high-heeled jack-boots. Iron jacks, or coats of buff, formed the principal part of their dress, and steel-bonnets, or large domed hats with Spanish plumes drooping backwards, were their head attire.

The Baron of Arvend was one of those tall, muscular, martial figures, which are the favorite subjects of Salvator Rosa. He wore a cloak which had been once gaily trimmed, but which, by long wear and frequent exposure to the weather, was now faded in its colours. Thrown negligently about his tall person, it partly hid, and partly showed, a short doublet of buff, under which was in some places visible that light shirt of mail which was called a *surcote*, because worn instead of more ostensible

armor to protect against private assassination. A leather belt sustained a large and heavy sword on one side, and on the other that gay pocket which had once called Sir Francis Shafton master, of which the henchmen and gildings were already much defaced, either by rough usage or neglect.

Notwithstanding the rudeness of his apparel, Julius Arnes's manner and countenance had far more elevation than those of the attendants who surrounded him. He might be fifty or upwards, for his dark hair was mingled with grey, but age had neither turned the fire of his eye nor the enterprise of his disposition. His countenance had been handsome, for beauty was an attribute of the family; but the lines were roughened by fatigue and exposure to the weather, and marked some by the habitual indulgence of violent passions.

He seemed in deep and moody reflection, and was pacing at a distance from his dependants along the upper end of the hall, sometimes stopping from time to time to smoke and feed a pipe-bowl, which sat upon his wrist, with its jaws (as the leather straps fixed to his legs) wrapt around his hand. The bird, which seemed not invariable to its master's attention, narrowed its curves by rolling forward its beak, and pecking playfully at his finger. At such intervals the Baron smiled, but instantly resumed the darkness of silent meditation. He did not even deign to look upon an object, which few could have passed and repassed so often without bestowing on it a transient glance.

This was a woman of exceeding beauty, rather gaily than richly attired, who sat on a low seat close by the large hall chimney. The gold chains round her neck and arms,—the gay gown of green which swept the floor,—the silver embroidered girdle, with its bunch of keys depending in homely pride by a silver chain,—the yellow silver *coronet* (Scottish, much) which was disposed around her head, and partly concealed her dark profusion of hair,—above all, the circumstance so delicately touched in the old ballad, that "the girl was too short," the "gown of green all too staid," for the wearer's present shape, would have indicated the Baron's lady. But then the lady sat,—the expression of deep melancholy, which was changed into a timid smile whenever she saw the least chance of catching the eye of Julius Arnes,—the subdued look of grief, and the starting tear for which this constrained smile

was again exchanged when she saw herself entirely disregarded—these were not the attributes of a wife, or they were those of a degraded and afflicted female, who had yielded her love no less than legitimate love.

Julian Arnold, as we have said, continued to pass the full without paying any of those court attentions which he rendered to almost every female either by affection or courtesy. He seemed totally unconscious of her presence, or of that of his attendants, and was only roused from his own dark reflections by the notice he paid to the falcon, to which, however, the lady seemed to attend, as if studying to find either an opportunity of speaking to the Baron, or of finding something suggestive in the expressions which he used to the bird. All this the strangers had time enough to remark; for no sooner had they entered the apartment than their sister, Charlotte of the Church-hill, after exchanging a significant glance with the marchioness or droopers at the lower end of the apartment, signed to His Lord Glendinning and to his companion to stand still near the door, while he himself, advancing nearer the table, placed himself in such a position as to catch the Baron's observation when he should be disposed to look around, but without promising to intrude himself on his master's notice. Indeed, the look of the man, naturally bold, heady, and audacious, seemed totally changed when he was in presence of his master, and resembled the degraded and cowering manner of a quarrelsome dog when rebuked by his owner, or when he feels himself obliged to deprecate the violence of a superior adversary of his own species.

In spite of the severity of his own situation, and every painful feeling connected with it, Herbert felt his curiosity interested in the female, who sat by the chimney unattended and unregarded. He marked with what keen and trembling solicitude she watched the broken words of Julian, and how her glance stole towards him, ready to be availed upon the slightest chance of his permitting himself to be watched.

Meanwhile he went on with his defiance with his featured features, now giving, now withholding, the moral with which he was about to feed the bird, and so coiling its appetite and gratifying it by turns. "What! more yet?—then feed him, then, wouldst never have done—give them part thou wilt have all—Ay, praise thy fathers, and prick thyself gay—much thou

will make of it now—don't think I know that yet!—don't think I see that all that ruffling and plucking of wing and feather is not for thy master, but to try what thou canst make of him, thou greedy glutton!—well—there—take it then, and rejoice thyself—little have gone for with thee, and with all thy acc— and so it should."

He ceased to look on the bird, and again traversed the apartment. Then taking another small piece of raw meat from the trencher, on which it was placed ready cut for his use, he began once again to tempt and tease the bird, by offering and withdrawing it, until he awakened its wild and bold disposition. "What! struggling, fluttering, striving at me with beak and single!" So be! So be! wouldst mount! wouldst fly! the jaws are round thy clutches, fool—thou canst neither eat nor soar but by my will—Beware thou come to no harm, wretch, else I will wring thy head off one of these days—Well, have it then, and well fare thou with it,—So be, Jockie!" One of the attendants stepped forward—"Take the fool glad hence to the mew—or, stay; leave him, but look well to his carking and to her larking—we will see her fly to-morrow,—How now, Chastle! art thou returned!"

Chastle advanced to his master, and gave an account of himself and his journey, in the way in which a police officer holds conversation with his magistrate, that is, as much by signs as by words.

"Noble sir!" said that worthy magistrate, "the Laird of ———," he named no place, but pointed with his finger in a north-western direction,—"may not ride with you the day he purposed, because the Lord Warden has threatened that he will."——

Here another black intelligibly enough made up by the speaker touching his own neck with his left forefinger, and leaving his head a little to one side.

"Gladly said!" said Julian; "by Heaven! the whole world turns about naught—it is not worth a horse man's living in—we may ride a day and night, and never see a feather wave or hear a horse prance—the spirit of our fathers is dead amongst us—the very brutes are degenerated—the cattle we bring home at our life's risk are more vicious—our hawks are different—our

* In the bloody language of hunting, as Lady Julian Bessons terms it, hawks' talons are called their *clutches*.

† He called when they only sought their prey by the instinct

boards are turnpikes and traffic-tolls—our men are women—and our women are”——

He looked at the female for the first time, and stopped short in the midst of what he was about to say, though there was something as uncomfortable in the glance, that the blink might have been thus filled up.—“Our women are such as she is.”

He said it not, however, and as if desirous of attracting his attention at all risks, and in whatever manner, she rose and came forward to him, but with a timorousness disguised by affected gravity.—“Our women, Julian—what would you say of the women?”

“Nothing,” answered Julian Arnold, “at least nothing but that they are kind-hearted wenchers like yourself, Kate.” The female coloured deeply, and returned to her seat.—“And what strangers have thou brought with thee, Christie, that stand yonder like two stone statues?” said the Baron.

“The taller,” answered Christie, “is, as please you, a young fellow called Halbert Glenshawang, the eldest son of the old widow at Glenshaw.”

“What brings him here?” said the Baron, “bath he any message from Mary Arnold?”

“Not as I think,” said Christie; “the youth is seeing the country—he was always a wild elf, for I have known him since he was the height of my sword.”

“What qualities hath he?” said the Baron.

“All manner of qualities,” answered his follower.—“he can strike a buck, break a deer, fly a hawk, halloo to a hound—he shouts in the long and crow-how to a bar’s-kneelth—wields a lance or sword like myself nearly—beats a horse manfully and fairly—I wot not what more a man need to do to make him a gallant rumpsteer.”

“And who,” said the Baron, “is the old miser” who stands beside him?”

“None out of a print as I feary—he says he is charged with letters to you.”

“And thine come forward,” said the Baron; and so soon as they approached him more nearly, thus, struck by the fine form and strength displayed by Halbert Glenshawing, he addressed him thus: “I am told, young Swastika, that you are

“Merry, and in the game in which it often occurs in Spain, and which is indeed no longer in vogue,—” watched old man.”

rounding the world to seek your fortune—if you will serve Julius Arenal, you may find it without going farther.”

“So please you,” answered Glendinning, “something has dawned to me that makes it better I should leave this land, and I am bound for Edinburgh.”

“What!—then hast stolen some of the king’s deer, I warrant—or lightened the windows of Saint Mary’s of some of their beams—or thou hast taken a moonlight leap over the Border?”

“Na, sir,” said Halbert, “my case is entirely different.”

“Then I warrant thee,” said the Baron, “thou hast stabbed some brother churl in a fray about a wench—thou art a fleshy lad to wrangle in such a cause.”

Indubitably disgusted at his tone and manner, Halbert Glendinning remained silent, while the thought darted across his mind, what would Julius Arenal have said, had he known the ground, of which he spoke so lightly, had arisen on account of his own brother’s daughter! “But be thy name of fight what it will,” said Julius, in continuation, “dost thou think the law or its maxims can follow thee into this island, or arrest thee under the standard of Arenal?—Look at the depth of the lake, the strength of the walls, the length of the causeway—look at my men, and think if they are likely to see a comrade injured, or if I, their master, am a man to desert a faithful follower, in good or evil. I tell thee it shall be an eternal day of strife between thee and justice, as they call it, from the instant thou hast put my colours into thy cap—thou shalt ride by the Warden’s nose as thou wouldest pass an old market-woman, and no’r a car which follows him shall dare to bay at thee!”

“I thank you for your offer, noble sir,” replied Halbert, “but I must answer in brief, that I cannot profit by them—my fortunes had me elsewhere.”

“Thou art a self-willed fool for thy pains,” said Julius, turning from him; and signing Christie to approach, he whispered in his ear, “There is promise in that young fellow’s looks, Christie, and we want men of limbs and sinews as unexpected—these thou hast brought to me of late are the mere refuse of mankind, wretched souls worth the arrow that ends them; this stranger is bred like Saint George. Fly him with wine and women—let the wench wear their master about him like epaulettes—then understandest!” Christie gave a sagacious nod

of intelligence, and fell back to a respectful distance from his master.—“And thou, old man,” said the Baron, turning to the older traveller, “hast thou been roaming the world after fortune too long; does not she has taken into thy way?”

“So please you,” replied Warden, “I were perhaps more to be pitied than I am now, had I indeed met with that fortune, which, like others, I have sought in my younger days.”

“Nay, understand me, friend,” said the Baron; “if thou art enticed with thy business gown and long staff, I also am well content thou shouldst be as poor and contemptible as is good for the health of thy body and soul.—All I care to know of thee is, the cause which hath brought thee to my castle, where few more of thy kind care to reside. Thou art, I warrant thou, some ejected monk of a suppressed convent, paying in his old days the price of the luxurious idleness in which he spent his youth.—Ay, or it may be some pilgrim with a budget of hair from Saint James of Compostella, or Our Lady of Lorcito; or thou mayest be some pardoner with his budget of relics from Rome, forgiving sins at a penny a-dozen, and one to the rub.—Ay, I guess why I find thee in this boy’s company, and doubtless thou wouldst have such a strapping lad as he to carry thy wallet, and relieve thy lay shoulders; but by the mass I will cross thy cunning. I make my vow to sun and moon, I will not use a proper lad as misbeard as to run the country with an old knave like Simoes and his brother.” Away with thee!” he added, doing so words, and speaking so fast as to give no opportunity of answer, being probably determined to turn the older guest into an abrupt flight.—“Away with thee, with thy divided coat, scrip, and walking-stick, or, by the mass of Aweod, I will have thee loose the bounds on thee.”

Warden waited with the greatest patience until Julius Aweod, astonished that the threats and violence of his language made no impression on him, passed in a sort of wonder, and said in a low imperious tone, “Why the devil dost thou not answer me?”

“When you have done speaking,” said Warden, in the same composed manner, “it will be full time to reply.”

* Two *gambouzes*, or bagging staves, whose assemblance and signification makes the subject of an old Scottish satirical poem. [The old poem of *Simoes and his brother*, preserved in *Barrow’s Manuscript*, is included in the *Select Remains of Ancient Popular Poetry*, 1826.]

"Say on, man, in the devil's name—but take heed—beg not bare—were it but for the rinds of cloaks, the refuse of the rate, or a morsel that my dogs would turn from—another a grain of meal, nor the eleventh part of a grey goose, will I give to any fabled fanner of thy coat."

"It may be," answered Warden, "that you would have less quarrel with my coat if you knew what it covers. I am neither a friar nor mendicant, and would be right glad to hear thy testimony against those foul depredators of God's church, and usurpers of his rights over the Christian flock, were it given in Christian charity."

"And who or what art thou, then," said Armand, "that thou comest to this border land, and art neither monk, nor soldier, nor broken man?"

"I am an humble teacher of the Holy Word," answered Warden. "This letter from a most noble person will speak why I am here at this present time."

He delivered the letter to the Baron, who regarded the seal with some surprise, and then looked on the letter itself, which seemed to excite still more. He then fixed his eyes on the stranger, and said, in a menacing tone, "I think thou dost not bring me or deceive me?"

"I am not the man to attempt either," was the concise reply.

Julian Armand sealed the letter to the window, where he perused, or at least attempted to peruse it more than once, often looking from the paper and gazing on the stranger who had delivered it, as if he meant to read the purport of the message in the face of the messenger. Julian at length called to the female,—"Catherine, hasten thee, and fetch me presently that letter which I bade thee keep ready at hand in thy cabinet, having no more lockfast place of my own."

Catherine went with the readiness of one willing to be employed; and as she walked, the situation which requires a wider gown and a longer girdle, and in which woman eludes from thee a double portion of the most anxious care, was still more visible than before. She soon returned with the paper, and was rewarded with a cold—"I thank thee, woman; thou art a useful creature."

This second paper he also perused and reproposed more than once, and still, as he read it, bent from time to time a wary and

observed eye upon Henry Warden. This examination and re-examination, though both the man and the place were dangerous, the preacher endured with the most composed and steady composure, seeming, under the eagle, or rather the vulture eye of the haun, as unswayed as under the gaze of an ordinary and peaceful peasant. At length Julian Arved folded both papers, and having put them into the pocket of his cloak, cleared his brow, and, moving forward, addressed his female companion. "Catherine," said he, "I have done this good man injustice, when I mistook him for one of the demons of Rome. He is a preacher, Catherine—a preacher of the—the new doctrine of the Lords of the Congregation."

"The doctrine of the blessed Scriptures," said the preacher, "purified from the demons of men."

"Repeat them?" said Julian Arved—"Well, then mayest call it what thou list; but to me it is recommended, because it sings off all those selfish dreams about saints and angels and devils, and restores lay monks that have ridden as so long, and spurned as so hard. No more masses and expurgate—no more tithes and offerings to make men poor—no more prayers or penance to make men cowards—no more chastelings and penances, and confessions and marriages."

"So please you," said Henry Warden, "it is against the corruptions, not against the fundamental doctrines, of the church, which we desire to renovate, and not to abolish."

"Pardon, pardon, man," said the Baron; "we of the holy are not what you set up, so you pull merely down what stands in our way. Specially it suits well with us of the Southland hills; for it is our profession to turn the world upside down, and we live over the highest hills when the devil's side is uppermost."

Warden would have replied; but the Baron allowed him not time, striking the table with the hilt of his dagger, and crying out,—*"Ha! you lowering knaves, bring our supper-meal quickly. See you not this holy man is exhausted for lack of food! I heard ye ever of priest or preacher that devoured not his five marks a-day!"*

The attendants hastened to and fro, and speedily brought in several large smoking platters filled with huge pieces of beef, bailed and roasted, but without any variety whatever; without vegetables, and almost without bread, though there were

at the upper end a few out-crooks in a basket. John Arnold made a sort of apology to Warden.

"You have been consigned to our care, Sir Preacher, since that is your title, by a person whom we highly respect."

"I am assured," said Warden, "that the most noble Lord"—

"Prithon, peace, men," said Arnold; "what need of naming names, as we understand each other? I must but to speak in reference to your safety and comfort, of which he desires us to be chary. Now, for your safety, look at my wife and water. But teaching your comfort, we have no care of our own, and the mad-grounds of the south are less easily transported than their horses, seeing they have no legs to walk upon. But what though? a string of wine thou shalt have, and of the best—thou shalt sit between Catherine and me at the board—And, Christin, do thou look to the young springaid, and call to the cellarer for a flagon of the best."

The Baron took his wonted place at the upper end of the board; his Catherine sat down, and courteously pointed to a seat betwixt them for their revered guest. But, notwithstanding the influence both of hunger and fatigue, Henry Warden retained his standing posture.

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIFTH.

*When lively scenes sleep in the deep,
And fade we into that more holy sleep—*

VOICE OF WARDEN.

JULIAN ARNOLD saw with surprise the demeanour of the reverend stranger. "Behove me," he said, "these well-balanced religious have fast-days, I warrant me—the old ones used to make those blessings chiefly on the holy."

"We acknowledge no such rule," said the preacher—"We hold that our faith consists not in eating or abstaining from special meats on special days; and in fasting we read our hearts, and not our purses."

"The better—the better for yourselves, and the worse for

Tom Taylor," said the Baron; "but come, sit down, or, if thou needs must, thou givest us a rest of thy office, another thy chair."

"Sir Baron," said the preacher, "I am in a strange land, where neither mine office nor my doctrine are known, and where, it would seem, both are greatly misunderstood. It is my duty so to bear me, that in my person, however unworthy, my Master's dignity may be respected, and that we may take not confidence from relaxation of the bonds of discipline."

"He is! he! there," said the Baron, "that worst sort father for thy safety, but not, I think, to preach to me, or control me. What is it thou wouldst have, Sir Preacher? Remember thou speakest to one somewhat short of patience, who loves a short health and a long draught."

"Is a word, then," said Henry Warden, "that lady?"

"How?" said the Baron, starting—"what of her?—what hast thou to say of that dame?"

"Is she thy house-dame?" said the preacher, after a moment's pause, in which he seemed to seek for the best mode of expressing what he had to say—"Is she, in brief, thy wife?"

The unfortunate young woman pressed both her hands on her face, as if to hide it, but the deep blush which crimsoned her brow and neck, showed that her cheeks were also glowing; and the burning tears, which found their way betwixt her slender fingers, bore witness to her sorrow, as well as to her shame.

"Now, by my father's name!" said the Baron, rising and spurring from him his scabbard with such violence, that it hit the wall on the opposite side of the apartment—then instantly restraining himself, he muttered, "What need to run myself into trouble for a fool's word?"—then resuming his seat, he answered coldly and scornfully—"No, Sir Priest or Sir Preacher, Catherine is not my wife—Curses thy whispering, thou Polish wretch—she is not my wife—but she is handfasted with me, and that makes her as honest a woman."

"Handfasted?" repeated Warden.

"Knowest thou not that rite, holy man?" said Arnold, in the same tone of derision; "then I will tell thee. We Bocher-men are more wary than your island clerics of Fife and Lothian—no jump to the dark for us—no clanking the fetters around our wrists till we know how they will wear with us—we take our wives, like our horses, upon trial. When we are handfasted,

as we term it, we use man and wife for a year and day; that space gone by, each may choose another mate, or, at their pleasure, may call the priest to marry them for life—and thus we will husbanding.”*

“Then,” said the preacher, “I tell thee, noble Baron, in brotherly love to thy soul, it is a custom horrible, gross, and corrupted, and, if persisted in, dangerous, yea, damnable. It binds thee to the father being while she is the object of desire—it releases thee when she is most the subject of pity—it gives all to brutal sense, and nothing to generous and gentle affection. I say to thee, that he who can meditate the breach of such an engagement, abandoning the devoted woman and the helpless offspring, is worse than the birds of prey; for of them the males remain with their mates until the nestlings can take wing. Alas! all, I say it is contrary to the pure Christian doctrine, which assigns woman to man as the partner of his labour, the mother of his end, his helpmate in good, his friend in affliction; not as the toy of his leisure hours, or as a flower, which, once cropped, he may throw aside as pleasure.”

“Now, by the Saints, a most virtuous beauty!” said the Baron; “quietly controlled and ardently pronounced, and to a well-chosen congregation. Hark ye, Sir Gospeller! trow ye to have a fool in head? Know I not that your sect rose by bluff Harry Tudor, merely because ye aided him to change his Kate! and wherefore should I not use the same Christian liberty with mine? Tush, man! bless the good fool, and meddle not with what concerns thee not—there hast no gill in Julian Arund.”

“He hath gilled and cheated himself,” said the preacher, “should he even incline to do that poor share of his domestic even the imperfect justice that remains to him. Can he now raise her to the rank of a pure and uncontaminated matron?—Can he deprive his child of the misery of being born to a mother who has sinned? He can indeed give them both the rank, the state of married wife and of lawful son; but, in public opinion, their names will be mischieved and sullied with a stain

* This custom of husbanding actually prevailed in the upland days. It arose partly from the want of priests. While the servants subsisted, monks were detained on regular rounds through the wilder districts, to marry those who had lived in this species of connection. A practice of the same kind existed in the Isle of Portland.

which his tardy efforts cannot entirely efface. Yet render it to them, Baron of Arved, render it to them this late and imperfect justice. Had we lived yet together for ever, and celebrate the day of your bridal, not with feasting or merriment, but with sorrow for past sin, and the resolution to commence a better life. Happy then will have the chance been that has driven me to this castle, though I come driven by calamity, and unknown where my course is bound, like a leaf travelling on the north wind."

The plain, and even coarse features, of the smiling speaker, were warmed at once and ennobled by the dignity of his enthusiasm; and the wild Baron, harkens as he was, and accustomed to spare at the control whether of religious or moral law, felt, for the first time perhaps in his life, that he was under subjection to a mind superior to his own. He sat mute and suspended in his deliberations, brooding latent anger and shame, yet borne down by the weight of the just rebuke thus boldly formulated against him.

The unfortunate young woman, receiving hopes from her tyrant's silence and apparent weakness, forgot both her fear and shame in her timid expectation that Arved would relent; and threw upon him her anxious and beseeching eyes, gradually drew near and stood to his side, till at length, laying a trembling hand on his cheek, she ventured to utter, "O noble Julius, listen to the good man!"

The speech and the motion were ill-timed, and wrought on that proud and wayward spirit the reverse of her wishes.

The fierce Baron started up in a fury, exclaiming, "What! thou Jewish sister, art thou confederate with this stinking rascalhood, when thou hast seen heard me in my own hall! Hence with thee, and think that I am proof both to male and female hypocrisy!"

The poor girl started back, astonished at his volubility of thunder and looks of fury, and, turning pale as death, endeavored to shy his words, and tottered towards the door. Her limbs failed in the attempt, and she fell on the stone floor in a manner which her situation might have rendered fatal.—The blood gushed from her face.—Halbert Glendinning leaped not a sight so heated, but, stirring a deep impression, started from his seat, and laid his hand on his sword, under the strong impulse of passing it through the body of the cruel and hard-

hearted sullen. But Christie of the Cheshill, perceiving his intention, threw his arms around him, and prevented him from stirring to execute his purpose.

The surprise to such an act of violence was indeed but momentary, as it instantly appeared that Arnold himself, shocked at the effects of his violence, was lifting up and endeavouring to soothe in his own way the terrified Catherine.

"Peace," he said, "peace, peace, thou silly maiden—why, Kate, though I listen not to this tramping preacher, I could not what might happen as thou dost bear me a stout lay. There—there—dry thy tears—call thy women.—So ho!—where be those quens?—Christie—Boskey—Hatchson—drag them hither by the hair of the head!"

A half-dozen of startled wild-looking females rushed into the room, and here sat her who might be either termed their mistress or their companion. She showed little sign of life, except by granting faintly and keeping her hand on her side.

No sooner had this luckless female been conveyed from the apartment, than the Baron, advancing to the table, filled and drank a deep goblet of wine; then, putting an obvious restraint on his passion, turned to the preacher, who stood horror-struck at the scene he had witnessed, and said, "You have borne too hard on us, Sir Preacher—but coming with the commendations which you have brought me, I don't not but your meaning was good. But we are a willow folk than you inland men of Fife and Lothian. Be advised, therefore, by me—tipee not an unlikken horse—put not your ploughshare too deep into our land—Preach in an spiritual liberty, and we will hearken to you.—But we will give no way to spiritual bondage.—So, therefore, down, and pledge me an old sack, and we will talk over other matters."

"It is *from* spiritual bondage," said the preacher, in the same tone of involuntary regret, "that I came to deliver you—it is from a bondage more fearful than that of the heaviest earthly yoke—it is from your own evil passions."

"Sit down," said Arnold, fiercely; "sit down while the play is good—stay by my father's seat and my mother's honour!"

"Nay," whispered Christie of the Cheshill to Halbert, "if he refuse to sit down, I would not give a gray goat for his head."

"Lord Baron," said Warden, "thou hast placed me in a cruel

why. But if the question be, whether I am to hide the light which I am commissioned to show forth, or to lose the light of the world, my choice is made. I say to thee, like the Holy Baptist to Herod, it is not lawful for thee to have this woman; and I say it though bonds and death be the consequences, counting my life as nothing in comparison of the ministry to which I am called."

Julius Arnest, enraged at the denance of this reply, flung down his right hand the cup in which he was about to drink to his guest, and from the other cast off the hawk, which flew wildly through the apartment. His first motion was to lay head upon his dagger. But, changing his resolution, he exclaimed, "To the dagger with this rascally scold!—I will bear no man speak a word for him—Look to the felon, Christie, thou fool!—as she escapes, I will dispatch you after her every man—Away with that hypocritical dreamer—drag him, hence if he resist!"

He was obeyed in both points. Christie of the Clithell arrested the hawk's flight, by putting his foot on her jaws, and so holding her fast, while Henry Warden was led off, without heeding above the slightest symptoms of terror, by two of the Baron's valets. Julius Arnest walked the apartment for a short time in silent gloom, and despatching one of his attendants with a whispered message, which probably related to the health of the unfortunate Catherine, he said aloud, "Those rash and meddling priests—By Heaven! they make us worse than we would be without them."

The storm which he presently resolved seemed somewhat to pacify his angry mood, and he took his place at the board, commanding his return to do the like. All sat down in silence, and began the repast.

During the meal Christie in vain attempted to engage his youthful companion in conversation, or, at least, in conversation. Hubert Glendinning pleaded fatigue, and expressed himself unwilling to take any liquor stronger than the health ale, which was at that time frequently used at meals. Thus every effort at privacy fled away, until the Baron, striking his hand against the table, as if impatient of the long unbroken silence, cried out aloud, "What ha! my masters—say ye Butler-men, and all ye waiters over your meal as a mass of words and

* *Wife H. Julius Arnest.*

drink!—Some can sing, if no one but to speak. Most refuse without either drink or music is ill of digestion.—Lower," he added, speaking to one of the youngest of his followers, "Don't get ready enough to sing when no one bids thee."

The young man looked first at his master, then up to the arched roof of the hall, then drank off the horn of ale, or wine, which stood beside him, and with a rough, yet not unmelodious voice, sang the following ditty to the ancient air of "Blue Bonnets over the Border."

L.

March, march, March and Turtledove,
 Wip the dill down ye march forward in order!
 March, march, March and Turtledove,
 All the Blue Bonnets are bound for the Border.
 May a banner spread,
 Flashes above your head,
 May a crest that is famous in story,
 Mount and make ready then,
 Sons of the mountain glen,
 Fight for the Queen and the old Scottish glory!

II.

Come from the hills where the Minstrel are gaden,
 Come from the glen of the bush and the rose,
 Come to the song where the banner is waving,
 Come with the bowler, the lance, and the hose.
 Trumpets are sounding,
 War-drums are bounding,
 Stead to your arms then, and march in good order;
 England shall reap a day
 Till of the bloody flag,
 When the Blue Bonnets come over the Border!"

The song, rude as it was, had in it that warlike character which at any other time would have roused Halbert's spirit; but at present the charm of minstrelsy had no effect upon him. He made it his request to Christie to suffer him to retire to rest, a request with which that worthy person, seeing no chance of making a favorable impression on his intended proselyte to his present humour, was at length pleased to comply. But no Sergeant Kite, who ever professed the profession of recruiting, was more attentive that his object should not escape him, than was Christie of the Chishill. He indeed conducted Halbert

* [A spirited notice in the *Illustrated*, edited (Edward Taylor's *March to Calcutta*), was, in printed in *Alfred Harcourt's* *The Noble Art of War*, and other collections.]

Glasdining to a small apartment overlooking the lake, which was accommodated with a trundle bed. But before quitting him, Christie took special care to give a look to the keys which crossed the outside of the window, and when he left the apartment, he failed not to give the key a double turn, circumstances which convinced young Glasdining that there was no intention of suffering him to depart from the Castle of Arund at his own time and pleasure. He judged it, however, most prudent to let these alarming symptoms pass without observation.

No sooner did he find himself in undisturbed solitude, than he ran rapidly over the events of the day in his recollection, and to his surprise found that his own passionate feelings, and even the death of Prince Stairton, made less impression on him than the singularly bold and determined conduct of his companion, Henry Warden. Providence, which wields its instruments to the end they are to achieve, had awakened in the cause of Reformation in Scotland, a body of preachers of more energy than refinement, bold in spirit, and strong in faith, countenance of whatever stood before them and their principal object, and seeking the advancement of the great cause in which they laboured by the roughest road, provided it were the shortest. The soft breeze may move the willow, but it requires the voice of the tempest to agitate the boughs of the oak; and, accordingly, to colder heavens, and in a less rude age, their numbers would have been ill adapted, but they were ably and successfully in their mission to the rude people to whom it was addressed.

Owing to these reasons, Robert Glasdining, who had related and repelled the arguments of the preacher, was deeply struck by the firmness of his denouncer in the dispute with Julian Arund. It might be discourteous, and more certainly it was imprudent, to choose such a place and such an audience, for upbraiding with his transgressions a house, whom both manners and situation placed in full possession of independent power. But the conduct of the preacher was uncompromising, firm, ready, and obviously grounded upon the deepest conviction which duty and principle could afford; and Glasdining, who had viewed the conduct of Arund with the deepest abhorrence, was proportionally interested in the brave old man, who had ventured life rather than withhold the course due to guilt. This pluck of virtue seemed to him to be in religion

what was demanded by divinity of her votaries in war; an absolute surrender of all selfish feelings, and a consecration of every energy proper to the human mind, to discharge the task which duty demanded.

Hallbert was at the period when youth is most open to passionate emotions, and knows best how to appreciate them in others, and he felt, although he hardly knew why, that, whether catholic or heretic, the safety of this man deeply interested him. Curiosity mingled with the feeling, and led him to wonder what the nature of those doctrines could be, which stole their votary so completely from himself, and devoted him to chaos or to death as their even champion. He had indeed been told of saints and martyrs of former days, who had labored for their religious faith the extremity of death and torture. But their spirit of enthusiastic devotion had long slept in the ages and isolated habits of their successors, and their adventures, like those of knights-errant, were rather read for amusement than for edification. A new impulse had been necessary to shake the slumber of religious zeal, and that impulse was now operating in favour of a purer religion, with one of whose staunchest votaries the youth had now met for the first time.

The sense that he himself was a prisoner, under the power of this savage divinity, by no means diminished Hallbert's interest in the fate of his fellow-sufferer, while he determined at the same time so far to exalt his fortitude, that neither threats nor suffering should compel him to enter into the service of such a master. The possibility of escape had occurred to him, and though with little hope of effecting it in that way, Glendinning proceeded to examine more particularly the window of the apartment. The apartment was situated in the first story of the castle; and was not so far from the rock on which it was founded, but that an active and bold man might, with little assistance, descend to a shelf of the rock which was immediately below the window, and from thence either leap or drop himself down into the lake which lay below his eye, clear and blue in the placid light of a full summer's noon.—"Were I once placed on that ledge," thought Glendinning, "John Arnold and Christie had seen the last of me." The size of the window favoured such an attempt, but the stone-work or iron bars seemed to form an insurmountable obstacle.

While Hallbert Glendinning gazed from the window with

that eagerness of hope which was prompted by the energy of his character and his determination not to yield to circumstances, his ear caught some sounds from below, and listening with more attention, he could distinguish the voice of the preacher engaged in his solitary devotions. To open a correspondence with him became immediately his object, and willing to do so by less marked sounds, he at length ventured to speak, and was answered from beneath—"Is it thou, my son?" The voice of the preacher now sounded more distinctly than when it was first heard, for Warden had approached the small aperture, which, serving his prison for a window, opened just beneath the wall and the rock, and admitted a scanty portion of light through a wall of immense thickness. This opened being placed exactly under Halbert's window, the proximity permitted the prisoner to converse in a low tone, when Halbert declared his intention to escape, and the possibility he saw of achieving his purpose, but for the iron stanchions of the window—"Prove thy strength, my son, in the name of God!" said the preacher. Halbert clasped him more in despair than hope, but to his great astonishment, and somewhat to his terror, the bar parted nearer near the bottom, and the longer part being easily bent outwards, and not secured with lead in the upper section, drops out into Halbert's hand. He immediately whispered, but as unexpressedly as a whisper could be expressed—"By Heaven, the bar has given way in my hand!"

"Thank Heaven, my son, instead of swearing by it," answered Warden from his dungeon.

With little effort Halbert glancing forward thrust himself through the opening thus wonderfully effected, and using his leathern sword-belt as a rope to assist him, let himself safely drop on the shelf of rock upon which the preacher's window opened. But though this no passage could be effected, being some larger than a loophole for sentinels, and apparently constructed for that purpose.

"Are there no means by which I can assist your escape, my father?" said Halbert.

"There are none, my son," answered the preacher; "but if thou wilt ensure my safety, that may be in thy power."

"I will labour earnestly for it," said the youth.

"Take thou a letter which I will presently write, for I have the means of light and writing materials in my cell—Hasten

towards Edinburgh, and on the way there will meet a body of horse marching southwards—Give them to their leader, and acquaint him of the state in which they have left me. It may help them by doing so well advantage thyself."

In a minute or two the light of a taper gleamed through the shut-bells, and very shortly after, the preacher, with the assistance of his staff, pushed a bellot to Glendinning through the window.

"God bless thee, my son," said the old man, "and complete the marvellous work which he has begun."

"Amen!" answered Halbert, with solemnity, and proceeded on his enterprise.

He hesitated a moment whether he should attempt to descend to the edge of the water, but the steepness of the rock, and darkness of the night, rendered the enterprise too dangerous. He clasped his hands above his head and boldly sprang from the precipice, shooting himself forward into the air as far as he could for fear of sudden rocks, and alighted on the lake, head foremost, with such force as sunk him for a minute below the surface. Not strong, long-breathed, and accustomed to such exertions, Halbert, even though supported with his sword, dived and rose like a sea-fowl, and swam across the lake in the northern direction. When he landed and looked back on the cliffs, he could observe that the alarm had been given, for lights gleamed from window to window, and he heard the draw-bridge lowered, and the tread of horses' feet upon the causeway. Not, little alarmed for the consequences of a pursuit during the darkness, he wrung the water from his dress, and, plunging into the snow, directed his course to the north-east by the assistance of the polar star.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SIXTH

Why, what an habitable landscape is this!

I think you all have drunk of Ceres's cup.

If you are honest like, here he would have been;

If he were mad, he would not plead so mildly.

CHICAGO OF BOSTON.

THE course of our story, leaving for the present Halbert Glendinning to the guidance of his courage and his fortune,

retreat to the Tower of Glendurg, where matters in the meanwhile fell out with which it is most fitting that the reader should be acquainted.

The meal was prepared at noonday with all the care which Elspeth and Tibb, assisted by the various accommodations which had been supplied from the Monastery, could bestow on it. Their dialogue ran on as usual in the intervals of their labour, partly as between mistress and servant, partly as maintained by groups of ready witted quality.

"Look to the minced meat, Tibb," said Elspeth; "and turn the broach even, that good-for-nothing Scampie,—thy wife are hurrying brock's nests, child.—Well, Tibb, thou is a fashous job, that Sir Pierce lying lainger with us up here, and who hons for how lang?"

"A fashous job indeed," answered her faithful attendant, "and little good did the name ever bring to fair Scotland. Ye may have your heads fuller of them than they are yet. Mow a sair heart haves the Pierces given to Scott's wife and harts with their pickling on the Borders. There was Hotspur and many more of that bloody kindred, haws ails in our shirts since Malcolm's time, as Martin says!"

"Martin should keep a well-sought tongue in his head," said Elspeth, "and not slander the kin of any body that quarters at Glendurg; forby, that Sir Pierce Shafton is much respected with the holy fathers of the community, and they will make up to us any faults that we may have with him, either by good word or good deed, I'm warrant them. He is a considerate lord the Lord Abbot."

"And wad he like a soft seat to his hinder end," said Tibb; "I haves seen a belted baron sit on a bare bench, and find nae fault. But as ye are pleased, mistress, I am pleased."

"Now, in good time, haws come Myrie of the Mill,—and where has ye been, lass, for s'e gone wrang without you?" said Elspeth.

"I just goed a blink up the burn," said Myrie, "for the young lady has been down on her bed, and is no just that well—So I goed a gill up the burn."

"To see the young lady come hame frae the sport, I will warrant you," said Elspeth. "Ay, ay, Tibb, that's the way the young folk guide us, Tibbie—haws us to do the work, and out to the play themselves."

"He'er a bit of that, mistress," said the Maid of the Mill, stripping her round pretty arms, and looking actively and good-humouredly round for some duty that she could discharge, "but just—I thought ye might like to see if they were coming back, just to get the dinner forward."

"And over ye might of them then?" demanded Elsie.

"Not the least wheeking," said Myra, "though I got to the head of a knowe, and though the English knight's beautiful white feather could have been seen over all the bushes in the glen."

"The knight's white feather?" said Dame Glendinning, "ye are a silly humpie—my Hubert's high head will be seen farther than his feather, let it be as white as it likes, I trow."

Myra made no answer, but began to knead dough for wassels with all despatch, observing that Sir Pierie had perdition of that dainty, and commended it upon the preceding day. And presently, in order to place on the fire the fish, or iron plate on which these wassels were to be baked, she displaced a stove-pipe in which some of Tibb's dalliances were exhibited to the vision of the kitchen fire. Tibb mumbled between her teeth—"And it is the tooth for my sick bairn, that manna make-room for the dainty Southron's wassel-head. It was a blithe time in Wight Walston's day, or good King Robert's, when the post-peddling got something here but hard strokes and bloody swords, but we will see how it will a' end."

Elsie did not think it proper to notice these discontented expressions of Tibb's, but they sank into her mind; for she was apt to consider her as a sort of authority in matters of war and policy, with which her former experience as house-woman at Arden Castle made her better acquainted than were the peaceful inhabitants of the Halidoms. She only spoke, however, to express her surprise that the business did not return.

"As they come not back the morn," said Tibb, "they will face the west, for the morn will be roasted to a cinder—and there is poor Burns that can turn the spit one longer; the bairn is making the an' kiddle in warm water—Gang awa, bairn, and take a mouthful of the colder air, and I will turn the wassels till ye come back."

"He's up to the barrowes at the tower-head, silent," said Dame Glendinning, "the air will be colder there than any

gate close, and bring us word if our Halbert and the gentlemen are coming down the glen."

The boy lingered long enough to allow his substitute, Tidd Tacket, heartily to kiss of her own generosity, and of his indebtedness by the side of a large fire. He at length returned with the news that he had seen nobody.

The matter was not remarkable so far as Halbert Glendinning was concerned, for, patient alike of want and of fatigue, it was no uncommon circumstance for him to remain in the wilds all winter time. But nobody had given Sir Patrick Shafton credit for being so true a sportsman, and the idea of an Englishman preferring the chase to his dinner was altogether inconsistent with their preconceptions of the national character. Another week-end and week-end-again, the usual dinner-hour passed long away; and the inmates of the tower, taking a hasty meal themselves, adjourned their more solemn preparations until the hunters' return at night, when it seemed now certain that their sport had either carried them to a greater distance, or engaged them for a longer time than had been expected.

About four hours after noon, arrived, not the expected sportsmen, but an unexpected visitor, the Sub-Prior from the Monastery. The scenes of the preceding day had dwelt on the mind of Father Easton, who was of that keen and penetrating cast of mind which leaves not to leave unsatisfied whatever of conjecture is subjected to its inquiry. His kindness was interested in the family of Glendinning, which he had now known for a long time; and besides, the community was interested in the preservation of the peace between Sir Patrick Shafton and his powerful host, since whatever might draw public attention on the former, would not fail to be prejudicial to the Monastery, which was already threatened by the hand of power. He found the family assembled all but Mary Arscott, and was informed that Halbert Glendinning had accompanied the stranger on a day's sport. So far was well. They had not returned; but when did youth and sport assume themselves bound by set hours? and the circumstance excited no alarm in his mind.

While he was conversing with Edward Glendinning touching his progress in the studies he had pointed out to him, they were startled by a shriek from Mary Arscott's apartment, which drew the whole family together in bustling haste. They found her

in a stroke in the arms of old Martin, who was bitterly accusing himself of having killed her; so indeed it seemed, for her pale features and closed eyes argued rather a dead corpse than a living person. The whole family were instantly in tumult. Snatching her from Martin's arms with the eagerness of affectionate terror, Edward bore her to the chamber, that she might receive the influence of the open air; the Sub-Prior, who, like many of his profession, had some knowledge of medicine, hastened to prescribe the most delicate remedies which occurred to him, and the terrified females contended with and impeded each other in their rival efforts to be useful.

"It has been one of her weary ghosts," said Dame Glendinning.

"It's just a twinkling on her spirits, as her blessed mother used to have," said Tish.

"It's some ill nerve has come over her," said the miller's maiden; while burnt feathers, cold water, and all the usual means of restoring suspended animation, were employed alternately, and with little effect.

At length a new assistant, who had joined the group unobserved, addressed his aid in the following terms:—"Here is this, my most fair Discretion! What cause hath moved the ruby current of life to rush back to the chancel of the heart, leaving pale those features in which it should have delighted to linger for ever?—Let me approach her," he said, "with the sovereign essence, distilled by the fair hands of the divine Ursula, and powerful to recall fugitive life, even if it were twinkling on the verge of departure."

Thus speaking, Sir Francis Shafton knelt down, and most gracefully presented to the nostrils of Mary Arnest a silver perfume-bottle, exquisitely chased, containing a sponge dipped in the essence which he recommended so highly. You, gentle reader, it was Sir Francis Shafton himself who thus unexpectedly proffered his good offices! his cheeks, indeed, very pale, and some part of his dress stained with blood, but not otherwise appearing differed from what he was on the preceding evening. But so soon as Mary Arnest opened her eyes, and fixed them on the figure of the officious courtier, then she screamed faintly, and exclaimed,—"*Scoundrel the man!*"

Those present stood aghast with astonishment, and none more so than the Euphrates, who found himself so suddenly and

as strangely accused by the patient whom he was endeavouring to succour, and who repelled his attempts to yield her assistance with all the energy of abhorrence.

"Take him away!" she exclaimed—"take away the murderer!"

"Now, by my knighthood," answered Sir Pierre, "your lonely mansion either of mind or body are, O my most dear Elvira, clouded by some strange hallucination. For either your eyes do not discern that it is Florio Shafton, your most devoted Admirer, who now stands before you, or else, your eyes discerning truly, your mind hath most erroneously concluded that he hath been guilty of some delito or violence in which his hand is a stranger. No murder, O most scornful Elvira, hath been this day done, saving but that which your angry glance are now punishing on your most devoted eyes."—

He was here interrupted by the Sub-Prior, who had, in the meantime, been speaking with Martin apart, and had received from him an account of the circumstances, which, suddenly communicated to Mary Arundel, had thrown her into this state. "Sir Knight," said the Sub-Prior, in a very solemn tone, yet with some hesitation, "circumstances have been communicated to us of a nature so extraordinary, that, reluctant as I am to exercise such authority over a guest of our venerable community, I am constrained to request from you an explanation of them. You left the tower early in the morning, accompanied by a youth, Herbert Glendinning, the eldest son of this good house, and you return hither without him. Where, and at what hour, did you part company from him?"

The English knight paused for a moment, and then replied, "I marvel that your reverence employs so grave a tone to enforce so light a question. I parted with the village whom you call Herbert Glendinning some hour or two after sunrise."

"And at what place, I pray you?" said the monk.

"In a deep ravine, where a fountain rises at the base of a huge rock; an earth-born Tana, which hurrah up its grey head, even so"—

"Spare us further description," said the Sub-Prior; "we know the spot. But that youth hath not since been heard of, and it will fall on you to account for him."

"My hairs ! my hairs !" exclaimed Dame Glendinning. "Yea, holy father, make the villain answer for my hairs !"

"I swear, good woman, by land and by water, which are the props of our life!"

"Swear by wine and woad-bread, for those are the props of thy life, thou greedy Southern !" said Dame Glendinning ;—"a base belly-god, is come here to eat the best, and pocket on our lives that give it to him !"

"I tell thee, woman," said Sir Francis Shafton, "I did but go with thy son to the hunting."

"A black hunting it has been to him, poor hairs," replied THIS ; "and now I wish it were given since I first saw the black Southern meet of thee. Little good comes of a French's hunting, from Cherry Chase till now."

"In silent, woman," said the Sub-Prior, "and will not upon the English knight ; we do not yet know of anything beyond capture."

"We will have his heart's blood !" said Dame Glendinning, and, seconded by the faithful Tobias, she made such a sudden onslaught on the volubly Euphrates, as must have terminated in something serious, had not the monks, aided by Myles Hapton, intervened to protect him from their fury. Edward had left the apartment the instant the disturbance broke out, and now entered, sword in hand, followed by Martin and Jasper, the one having a hunting-pipe in his hand, the other a cross-bow.

"Keep the door," he said to his two attendants ; "shoot him or stab him without mercy, should he attempt to break forth, if he offers us escape, by Heaven he shall die !"

"How now, Edward," said the Sub-Prior, "how is this that you so far forget yourself! meditating violence to a guest, and in my presence, who represent your holy lord !"

Edward stepped forward with his drawn sword in his hand. "Pardon me, reverend father," he said, "but in this matter the voice of nature speaks louder and stronger than yours. I took my sword's point against this proud man, and I descended of him the blood of my father—the blood of my father's son—of the heir of our name ! If he dares to give me a true account of this, he shall not deny me vengeance."

Embarrassed as he was, Sir Francis Shafton showed no personal fear. "Put up thy sword," he said, "young man ; not in the same day does Francis Shafton contend with two priests."

"Hear him! he condemns the deed, holy father," said Edward.

"Be patient, my son," said the Sub-Prior, endeavoring to soothe the feelings which he could not otherwise control, "be patient—then will attain the ends of justice better through my means than thine own violence—And you, women, be silent—Till, remove your children and Mary Amand."

While Till, with the assistance of the other females of the household, bore the poor mother and Mary Amand into separate apartments, and while Edward, still keeping his sword in his hand, hastily traversed the room, as if to prevent the possibility of Sir Francis Shafton's escape, the Sub-Prior busied upon knowing from the perplexed knight the particulars which he knew respecting Hubert Cheddening. His situation became extremely embarrassing, for what he might with safety have told of the issue of their combat was so revolting to his pride, that he could not bring himself to enter into the detail—and of Hubert's actual fate, he knew, as the reader is well aware, absolutely nothing.

The father in the meanwhile pressed him with questions, and prayed him to observe, he would greatly postpone himself by declining to give a full account of the transactions of the day. "You cannot deny," he said, "that yesterday you seemed to take the most violent offence at this unfortunate youth; and that you suppressed your resentment so suddenly as to impress us all with surprise. Last night you proposed to him the day's hunting party, and you sat out together by break of day. You parted, you said, at the fountain near the rock, about an hour or two after sunset, and it appears that before you parted you had been at strife together."

"I said not so," replied the knight. "Here is a cell, indeed, about the absence of a rustical landowner, who, I dare say, hath gone off (if he be gone) to join the next rascally band of freebooters! To ask me, a knight of the Faith's lineage, to account for such an insignificant fight, and I answer,—let me know the price of his head, and I will pay it to your convent treasure."

"You assert, then, that you have slain my brother?" said Edward, interposing once more; "I will personally show you at what price we have won the lives of our friends."

"Peace, Edward, peace—I entreat—I command thee," said

the Sub-Prior. "And you, Sir Knight, think better of us than to suppose you may spend Scotland's blood, and redress for it as for wine split in a drunken revel. This youth was no head-man—there will knowers, that in these own land there lacks not darts to hit thy sword against the meanest subject of England, but her laws would have called thee to answer for the deed. Do not hope it will be otherwise here, for you will but deceive yourself."

"You drive me beyond my patience," said the English, "even as the over-driven ox is urged into madness!—What can I tell you of a young fellow whom I have not seen since the second hour after sunset?"

"But can you explain in what circumstances you parted with him?" said the monk.

"What are the circumstances, in the devil's name, which you desire should be explained?—for although I protest against this constraint as often unworthy and unacceptable, yet would I willingly meet the day, provided that by words it may be ended," said the knight.

"If there be it not," said Edward, "blows shall, and that full speedily."

"Fare, impatient boy!" said the Sub-Prior; "and do you, Sir Pierre Shafte, enquire me why the ground is bloody by the verge of the fountain in Curriandress, where, as you say yourself, you parted from Hubert Glendinning?"

Resolved not to cover his defect if possibly he could avoid it, the knight answered in a haughty tone, that he supposed it was no unusual thing to find the turf bloody where hunters had slain a deer.

"And did you bury your game as well as kill it?" said the monk. "We must know from you who is the tenant of that grave, that newly-made grave, beside the very fountain whose margin is so deeply crimsoned with blood!—there must there must not evade me, therefore be ingenuous, and tell us the fate of this unhappy youth, whose body is doubtless lying under that bloody turf."

"It is he," said Sir Pierre, "they must have buried him alive, for I swear to thee, renowned father, that this rascal proved parted from me in perfect health. Let the grave be smoked, and if the body be found, then deal with me as ye like."

"It is not my sphere to determine thy fate, Sir Knight, but that of the Lord Alcock, and the noble reverend Chapter. It is but my duty to collect such information as may best possess their wisdom with the matters which have chanced."

"Might I presume so far, reverend father," said the knight, "I should wish to know the author and evidence of all these accusations, so unfavourably urged against me?"

"It is soon told," said the Sub-Prior; "nor do I wish to dispute it, if it can avail you in your defence. This morn- ing, Mary Arnest, apprehending that you nourished malice against her father-in-law under a friendly brow, did secretly send up the old man, Martin Tuckey, to follow your footsteps and to prevent mischief. But it seems that your evil passions had outstripped compassion: for when he came to the spot, guided by your footsteps upon the dew, he found but the bloody turf and the new covered grave; and after long and vain search through the wilds after Holbert and yourself, he brought back the successful news to her who had sent him."

"How he met my doubts, I pray you?" said Sir Percie, "for when I came to myself, I found that I was wrapp'd in my cloak, but without my under garment as your reverence may observe."

He saying, he opened his cloak, forgetting, with his characteristic inconsistency, that he showed he had stained with blood.

"How! cruel man," said the monk, when he observed the contradiction of his assertions; "wilt thou deny the guilt, even while thou bearest on thy person the blood thou hast shed? Wilt thou longer deny that thy rash hand has robbed a mother of a son, our country of a vessel, the Queen of Scotland of a loyal subject? and what canst thou expect, but that, at the least, we deliver thee up to England, as endangering our father's protection?"

"By the saints!" said the knight, now driven to extremity, "if this blood be the witness against me, it is but rebel blood, none the more so at variance it flows within my own veins."

"How were that possible, Sir Percie Blount," said the monk, "since I see no wound from whence it can have flowed?"

"That," said the knight, "is the most mysterious part of the transaction—See here!"

So saying, he pulled his shirt collar, and, opening his breast, showed the spot through which Halbert's sword had passed, but already healed, and leaving the appearance of a wound lately healed.

"This exhausts my patience, Sir Knight," said the Sub-Prior, "and is adding insult to violence and injury. Do you hold me for a child or an idiot, that you pretend to make me believe that the fresh blood with which your shirt is stained, flowed from a wound which has been healed for weeks or months? Unhappy monster, thinkest thou thus to blind us? The wall do we know that it is the blood of your victim, smothering with you in the desperate and mortal struggle, which has thus dyed your apparel?"

The knight, after a moment's reflection, and in reply, "I will be open with you, my father—but these men stand out of gunshot, and I will tell you all I know of this mysterious business; and none but good fathers, though it may pain thy wit to expose it, for I avouch to you it is too dark for mine own."

The monk commended Edward and the two men to withdraw, assuring the latter that his conference with the prisoner should be brief, and giving him permission to keep watch at the door of the apartment; without which allowance he might, perhaps, have had some difficulty in procuring his dinner. Edward had no sooner left the chamber, than he dispatched messengers to one or two families of the Haldoues, with whom one his brother and he sometimes associated, to tell them that Halbert Glendinning had been murdered by an Englishman, and to require them to repair to the Tower of Glendinning without delay. The duty of revenge in such cases was held so sacred, that he had no reason to doubt they would instantly come with such assistance as would insure the detection of the prisoner. He then locked the doors of the tower, both inner and outer, and also the gate of the courtyard. Having taken these precautions, he made a hasty visit to the families of the family, explaining himself in efforts to console them, and in protestations that he would have vengeance for his murdered brother.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVENTH.

Now, by Our Lady, Saint, 'tis best to sing,
That I, with every side of limb and wing,
Should be detain'd here for the second death
Of a wild woman, whose sinners' living
Is but the lowest level of the hell
In which he chose his help-mate.

Our Fair

WYNN ARMED was making preparations for securing and punishing the supposed members of his brother, with an intense thirst for vengeance, which had not hitherto shown itself as part of his character; for FURNE SHAFER made such communications as it pleased him to the Sub-Prior, who listened with great attention, though the knight's narrative was none of the clearest, especially as his self-interest led him to conceal or shrink the details which were necessary to render it intelligible.

"You are to know," he said, "personal father, that this wretched journal, having chosen to offer me, in the presence of your venerable Superior, yourself, and other excellent and worthy persons, besides the damsel, Mary ARMED, whom I leave my Discretion in all honour and kindness, a gross insult, rendered yet more intolerable by the tone and place, my just resentment did so gain the mastery over my discretion, that I resolved to allow him the privilege of an equal, and to indulge him with the combat."

"But, Sir Knight," said the Sub-Prior, "you will leave two matters very obscure. First, why the token he presented to you gave you so much offence, as I with others witnessed; and then again, how the youth, whom you then met for the first, or, at least, the second time, knew so much of your history as enabled him so greatly to move you."

The knight coloured very deeply.

"For your first query," he said, "most reverend father, we will, if you please, pretend it as nothing essential to the matter in hand; and for the second—I permit to you that I know as little of his means of knowledge as you do, and that I am well-nigh persuaded he dealt with business, of which more anon.—Well, sir—in the evening, I failed not to red my purpose with a pleasant brow, as in the custom amongst us martialists, who never display the bloody colours of defiance in our

countenance until our hand is armed to fight under them. I assailed the fish Discretion with more circumspection, and other toys, which could not but be reaching to her inexperienced ears. I arose in the morning, and met my antagonist, who, to my truth, for an inexperienced village, comporting himself as stoutly as I could have desired.—So, coming to the encounter, reversed air, I did try his mettle with some half-a-dozen of downright passes, with any one of which I could have been through his body, only that I was loth to take so fatal an advantage, but rather, arising away with my just indignation, strove to inflict upon him some flesh-wound of no very fatal quality. But, ah, in the midst of my cleanness, he, being incensed, I think, by the devil, did follow up his first offence with some heave of the same nature. Whenceupon, being eager to punish him, I made an outrageous, and my foot slipping at the same time,—not from any fault of force on my part, or any advantage of skill on his, but the devil having, as I said, taken up the matter in hand, and the grass being slippery,—so I recovered my position I encountered his sword, which he had advanced, with my undefended person, so that, as I think, I was in some sort run through the body. My javelin, being beyond measure appalled at his own unexpected and unmerited success in this strange encounter, takes the flight and leaves me there, and I fall into a dead swoon for the lack of the blood I had lost so foolishly—and when I awake, as from a sound sleep, I find myself lying, as it like you, wrapt up in my cloak at the foot of one of the birch-trees which stand together in a clump near to this place. I feel my limbs, and experience little pain, but much weakness—I put my hand to the wound—it was whole and skinned over as you now see it—I rise and come hither; and in these words you have my whole day's story.”

“I can only reply to so strange a tale,” answered the monk, “that it is scarce possible that Sir Pierre Shafton can expect me to credit it. Here is a gravel, the cause of which you exceed,—a wound received in the morning, of which there is no recent appearance at sunset,—a grave filled up, in which no body is deposited—the vanquished found alive and well—the victor departed no man knows whither. These things, Sir Knight, hang not so well together, that I should receive them as gospel.”

“Reverend father,” answered Sir Pierre Shafton, “I pray

you in the first place to observe, that if I offer possible and well justified reasons of that which I have already asserted to be true, I do so only in devout deference to your dues and to your order, protesting, that to any other apostle, seeing a man of religion, a lady, or my little grace, I would not deign to support that which I had once attested, otherwise than with the point of my good sword. And so much being promised, I have to add, that I can but give my honour as a gentleman, and my faith as a Catholic Christian, that the things which I have described to you have happened to me as I have described them, and not otherwise."

"It is a deep assertion, Sir Knight," answered the Sub-Prior; "yet, bethink you, it is only an assertion, and that no reason can be alleged why things should be believed which are so contrary to reason. Let me pray you to say whether the grave, which has been seen at your place of combat, was open or closed when your encounter took place?"

"Reverend father," said the knight, "I will tell from you nothing, but show you such signs of my bosom; even as the pure fountain revealeth the smallest pebble which graces the sand at the bottom of its crystal mirror, and so"—

"Speak in plain terms, for the love of heaven!" said the monk; "those hollow phrases belong not to solemn affairs—Was the grave open when the combat began?"

"It was," answered the knight, "I acknowledge it; even so be that acknowledgeth!"

"Nay, I pray you, fair son, declare those difficulties, and observe me. On yesterday at even no grave was found in that place, for old Martin chanced, contrary to his wont, to go thither in quest of a strayed sheep. At break of day, by your own confession, a grave was opened in that spot, and there a combat was fought—only one of the combatants appears, and he is covered with blood, and to all appearance wounded."—Here the knight made a gesture of surprise—"Nay, fair son, hear me but one moment—the grave is closed and covered by the soil—what use we believe, but that it conceals the bloody corpse of the fallen duellist?"

"By Heaven, it cannot!" said the knight, "unless the jured knight slain himself and buried himself, in order to place me in the predicament of his murderer."

"The grave shall doubtless be explored, and that by to-

morrow's dawn," said the monk; "I will see it done with mine own eyes."

"Yet," said the prisoner, "I protest against all evidence which may arise from its contents, and do most beforehand, that whatever may be found in that paper shall not prejudicate me in my defence. I have been so haunted by diabolical deceptions in this matter, that what do I know but that the devil may assume the form of this rustied journal, in order to procure me further vengeance?—I protest to you, holy father, it is my very thought that there is witchcraft in all that hath befallen me. Since I entered into this northern land, in which man, my flesh sometimes do abound, I, who am held in awe and regard even by the prime galleys in the court of Friesland, have been here tormented and taunted by a dissembling clown, I, whom Vincentio Savella termed his student and most agile disciple, was, to speak briefly, told by a crew-boy, who knew no more of fence than is used at every country dance. I was run, as it seemed to me, through the body, with a very sufficient stoic's, and bled on the spot; and yet, when I recovered, I find myself without either wound or wound, and, lacking nothing of my apparel, saving my marrow-coloured doublet, slashed with mine, which I will pray may be inquired after, but the devil, who transported me, should have dropped it in his passage among some of the trees or bushes—it being a choice and most desirable place of retreat, which I were for the first time at the Queen's payment in Southwark."

"Sir Knight," said the monk, "you do again go astray from this matter. I inquire of you reporting that which concerns the life of another man, and it may be, touches your own also, and you answer me with the tale of an old doublet?"

"Old?" exclaimed the knight; "now, by the gods and saints, if there be a gallant at the British Court more thoughtfully considered, and more considerably handled, more quickly serious, and more seriously quiet, in frequent changes of all rich varieties of venture, becoming one who may be accounted politician a courtier, I will give you leave to turn me a clown and a fool."

The monk thought, but did not say, that he had already acquired right to doubt the veracity of the Englishman, considering the marvellous tale which he had told. Yet his own strange adventures, and that of Father Philip, rushed on his mind, and

forbade his coming to any conclusion. He contented himself, therefore, with observing, that these were certainly strange incidents, and requested to know if Sir Francis Shafton had any other reason for suspecting himself to be in a manner so particularly selected for the sport of mockery and witcraft.

"For Sub-Priest," said the Englishist, "the most extraordinary circumstance remains behind, which alone, had I neither been beard in dispute, nor failed in combat, nor wounded and cured in the space of a few hours, would nevertheless of itself, and without any other consideration, have compelled me to believe myself the subject of some unexplained fascination. However so, it is not to your years that men should tell tales of love and gallantry, nor is Sir Francis Shafton one who, to say our whitsoever, is wont to boast of his late acquaintance with the chosen and prime beauties of the court; inasmuch that a lady, none of the least respectable constellations which revolve in that hemisphere of honour, pleasure, and beauty, but whose name I best prefer not, was wont to call me her Tutorship. Nevertheless truth must be spoken; and I cannot but allow, as the general aspect of the court, allowed in camps, and abroad both by city and country, that in the obscurity of the access, the tender delivery of the regard, the demonstration of the address, the adopting and pursuing of the fancy, the solemn close and the graceful fall-off, Francis Shafton was accounted the only gallant of the time, and as well accepted amongst the chancier brutes of the age, that no self-bred reveller of the post-chamber, or plumed jester of the tiltyard, approached him by a bow's length in the ladies' regard, being the mark at which every well-born and generous juvenile aimed his shaft. Nevertheless, removed as, having forced in this rude place something which by blood and birth might be termed a lady, and being desirous to keep my gallant honour in exercise, as well as to show my more devotion to the sex in general, I did shoot off some arrows of compliment at this Mary Arwood, turning her my Discretion, with other quaint and well-imagined courtesies, rather borrowed out of my beauty than warranted by her merit, or purchased for into the boyish bowler, who, rather than not exercise his bird-pipe, will shoot at mice or magpies for lack of better game"——

"Mary Arwood is much obliged by your notice," answered

the monk; "but to what does all this dated of past and present gallantry conduct us?"

"Marry, to this conclusion," answered the knight; "that either this my *Duennchen*, or I myself, am little less than bewitched; for, instead of receiving my account with a gratified bow, answering my regard with a suppressed smile, accompanying my falling off or departure with a slight sigh—honours with which I protest to you the subtlest dancers and proudest beauties in Palmyra have graced my poor services—she hath paid me as little and as cold regard as if I had been some belated down of those bleak mountains! Nay, this very day, while I was in the act of kneeling at her feet to render her the homage of this present quintessence of parent spirit distilled by the silver hands of the court of Palmyra, she pushed me from her with looks which screamed of repugnance, and, as I think, thrust at me with her foot as if to spurn me from her presence. These things, *reverend father*, are strange, poisonous, unusual, and bethink not in the current of mortal affairs, but are symptomatic of sorcery and fascination. So that, having given to your reverence a perfect, simple, and plain account of all that I know concerning this matter, I leave it to your wisdom to advise what may be found advisable in the same, it being my purpose to-morrow, with the peep of dawn, to set forward towards Edinborough."

"I grieve to be an interruption to your designs, Sir Knight," said the monk, "but that purpose of mine may hardly be fulfilled."

"How, *reverend father*!" said the knight, with an air of the utmost surprise; "if what you say respects my departure, understand that it must be, for I have so resolved it."

"Sir Knight," reiterated the Sub-Prior, "I must once more repeat, this must be, until the Abbot's pleasure be known in the matter."

"*Reverend sir*," said the knight, drawing himself up with great dignity, "I desire my hearty and thankful commendations to the Abbot; but in this matter I have nothing to do with his *reverend* pleasure, desiring only to consult my own."

"*Parbleu mon*," said the Sub-Prior; "the Lord Abbot hath in this matter a voice potentiated."

Sir Pierre Shafton's colour began to rise—"I marvel," he said, "to hear your *reverence* talk thus—What! will you, Sir

the imagined death of a rude low-born drungler and wrangler, venture to impugn upon the liberty of the kinsman of the house of Plouffe?"

"Sir Knight," returned the Sub-Prior, civilly, "your high lineage and your kindling anger will avail you nothing in the matter—You shall not come here to seek a shelter, and then spill our blood as if it were water."

"I tell you," said the knight, "once more, as I have told you already, that there was no blood spilled but mine own!"

"That remains to be proved," replied the Sub-Prior; "we of the community of Saint Mary's of Kenneshaunt, are not to take holy tales in exchange for the lives of our holy vassals."

"We of the house of Plouffe," answered Raoul, "break neither threats nor restraint—I say I will tarry to-morrow, happen what may!"

"And I," answered the Sub-Prior, in the same tone of determination, "say that I will break your journey, come what may!"

"Who shall journey me," said the knight, "if I make my way by force?"

"You will judge wisely to think as you make such an attempt," answered the monk, with composure; "there are men enough in the Rhodons to vindicate its rights over those who dare to infringe them."

"My men of Northumberland will know how to revenge this outrage to a beloved kinsman so near to his blood," said the Englishman.

"The Lord Abbot will know how to protect the rights of his territory, both with the temporal and spiritual sword," said the monk. "Besides, consider, were we to send you to your kinsman at Alverick or Warkworth to-morrow, he dare do nothing but transmit you in fetters to the Queen of England. Besides, Sir Knight, that you stand on slippery ground, and will not meet wisely in committing yourself to be a prisoner in this place until the Abbot shall decide the matter. There are armed men more to contravert all your efforts at escape. Let journey and negotiation, therefore, arm you to a necessary conclusion."

So saying, he dropped his hands and called aloud. Edward entered, accompanied by two young men who had already joined him, and were well armed.

"Edward," said the Sub-Prior, "you will supply the English

knight here in this space with suitable food and accommodation for the night, treating him with as much kindness as if nothing had happened between you. But you will place a sufficient guard, and look carefully that he make not his escape. Should he attempt to break forth, resist him to the death; but in no other case harm a hair of his head, as you shall be answerable."

Edward Glendinning replied,—“That I may obey your commands, reverend sir, I will not again offer myself to this person’s presence; for shame it were to me to break the peace of the Hallibone, but not less shame to leave my brother’s death unrevenged.”

As he spoke, his lips grew livid, the blood forsake his cheek, and he was about to leave the apartment, when the Sub-Prior recalled him and said in a solemn tone,—“Edward, I have known you from infancy—I have done what lay within my reach to be of use to you—I say nothing of what you owe to me as the representative of your spiritual Superior—I say nothing of the duty from the vessel to the Sub-Prior—But Father Rufus expects from the pupil whom he has nurtured—he expects from Edward Glendinning, that he will not by any deed of sudden violence, however justified in his own mind by the provocation, break through the respect due to public justice, or that which he has an especial right to claim from him.”

“Fear nothing, my revered father, for so in an hundred names may I well term you,” said the young man; “fear not, I would say, that I will in any thing diminish the respect I owe to the venerable community by whom we have so long been protected, far less that I will do aught which can be personally less than respectful to you. But the blood of my brother must not cry for vengeance in vain—your reverence knows our Border creed.”

“Vengeance is mine, with the Lord, and I will requite it,” answered the monk. “The barbarous custom of deadly feud which prevails in this land, through which each man seeks vengeance at his own hand when the death of a friend or kinsman has shamed, hath already deluged our vale with the blood of Scottish men, spilt by the hands of countrymen and kindred. It were endless to count up the fatal results. On the Eastern Border, the Houses are at feud with the Bishops and

Cookburne; in our Middle Marches, the Scotch and Kern have spilled as much brave blood in domestic feud as might have fought a pitched field in England, could they have but forgiven and forgotten a casual encounter that placed their arms in opposition to each other. On the west frontier, the Johnstones are at war with the Macraels, the Jardines with the Dells, drawing with them the flower of the country, which should place their breasts as a bulwark against England, into private and bloody warfare, of which it is the only end to waste and squander the force of the country, already divided in itself. Do not, my dear son Edward, permit this bloody prejudice to master your mind. I cannot ask you to think of the crime supposed as if the blood spilled had been less dear to you—Alas! I know that is impossible. But I do require you, in proportion to your interest in the supposed sufferer (for as yet the whole is matter of supposition), to hear on your mind the evidence on which the guilt of the accused person must be tried. He both speaks with me, and I confess his tale is an extraordinary, that I should have, without a moment's hesitation, rejected it as incredible, but that an affair which chanced to myself in this very place—more of that another time—threw it for the present to me, that from what I have myself experienced, I deem it possible, that, extraordinary as Sir Percival Shafton's story may seem, I hold it not utterly impossible."

"Father," said Edward Glendinning, when he saw that his preceptor paused, unwilling further to explain upon what grounds he was inclined to give a certain degree of credit to Sir Percival Shafton's story, while he admitted it as impossible—"Father to me you have been in every sense. You know that my hand grasped more readily to the book than to the sword; and that I looked utterly the ready and bold spirit which distinguished"—Here his voice faltered, and he paused for a moment, and then went on with resolution and vigour—"I would say, that I was unequal to Halbert as promptitude of heart and of hand; but Halbert is gone, and I stand his representative, and that of my father—his successor in all his rights" (while he said this his eyes shot fire), "and bound to assert and maintain them as he would have done—therefore I am a changed man, increased in courage as in my rights and pretensions. And, revered father, respectfully, but plainly and truly do I say, his blood, if it has been shed by this man,

shall be avenged—Father shall not sleep neglected in his lonely grave, as if with him the spirit of my father had ceased for ever. His blood flows in my veins, and while life has been poured forth unrepented, mine will permit me no rest. My poverty and meanness of rank shall not avail the lonely mourner. My calm nature and peaceful studies shall not be his protection. Even the obligations, holy father, which I acknowledge to you, shall not be his protection. I wait with patience the judgment of the Abbot and Chapter, for the daughter of one of their most nobly descended vassals. If they do right to my brother's memory, it is well. But mark me, father, if they shall fail in restoring me that justice, I bear a heart and a hand which, though I have not such contrivances, are capable of remedying such an error. He who takes up my brother's succession must avenge his death."

The monk perceived with surprise, that Edward, with his extreme diffidence, humility, and obedient anxiety, for such were his general characteristics, had still boiling in his veins the wild principles of those from whom he was descended, and by whom he was surrounded. His eyes sparkled, his frame was agitated, and the extremity of his desire of vengeance seemed to give a vehemence to his manner resembling the restlessness of joy.

"May God help us," said Father Eustace, "for, frail wretches as we are, we cannot help ourselves under sudden and strong temptation. Edward, I will rely on your word that you do nothing rashly."

"That will I not," said Edward,—"that, my better than father, I surely will not. But the blood of my brother,—the tears of my mother—and—and—and of Mary Arden, shall not be shed in vain. I will not desire you, father—if this Pierre Shafton hath slain my brother, he dies, if the whole blood of the whole house of Pierre were in his veins."

There was a deep and solemn deconvulsion in the attendance of Edward Glendinning, expressive of a rooted resolution. The Sub-Prior sighed deeply, and for the moment yielded to circumstances, and urged the acquiescence of his pupil as farthest. He commanded lights to be placed in the lower chamber, which for a time he passed in silence.

A thousand ideas, and even differing principles, debated with each other in his bosom. He greatly doubted the English

knights account of the deed, and of what had followed it. Yet the extraordinary and exceptional circumstances which had befallen the Baroness and herself in that very place, prevented him from being absolutely transfixed on the score of the wonderful wound and recovery of Sir Francis Skelton, and prevented him from at once condemning as impossible that which was altogether improbable. That he was at a loss how to control the fraternal affections of Edward, with respect to whom he felt something like the keeper of a wild animal, a lion's whelp or tiger's cub, which he has held under his control from infancy, but which, when grown to maturity, on some sudden provocation displays his fangs and talons, evicts his cage, ransoms his savage habits, and bids defiance at once to his keeper and to all mankind.

How to restrain and mitigate an ire which the national example of the times rendered deadly and intolerable, was sufficient cause of anxiety to Father Easton. But he had also to consider the situation of his community, dishonoured and degraded by submitting to suffer the slaughter of a vessel to pass unavenged; a circumstance which of itself might in those difficult times have afforded pretext for a revolt among their wavering adherents, or, on the other hand, exposed the community to imminent danger, should they pointed against a subject of England of high degree, connected with the house of Northumberland, and other northern families of high rank, who, as they possessed the means, would not be supposed to lack inclination, to wreak upon the monastery of Saint Mary of Kneppdale, any violence which might be offered to their kinsman.

In either case, the Sub-Prior well knew that the ostensible cause of feud, insurrection, or invasion, being once afforded, the case would not be tried either by reason or by evidence, and he groined in spirit when, upon consulting up the chances which arose in this ambiguous dilemma, he found he had only a chance of diffidence. He was a monk, but he felt also as a man, indignant at the supposed slaughter of young Chesham by one skilled in all the practices of arms, in which the vessel of the Monastery was most likely to be deficient; and to aid the resentment which he felt for the loss of a youth whom he had known from infancy, came to fill more the sense of dishonour arising to his community from passing over so gross an insult.

surrounding. Then the light in which it might be viewed by those who at present presided in the survey court of Scotland, attacked as they were to the Reformation, and allied by common faith and common interest with Queen Elizabeth, was a formidable subject of apprehension. The Sub-Treasor well knew how they hated after the services of the Church (to express it in the ordinary phrase of the religious of the time), and how readily they would grasp at such a pretext for marching on those of Saint Mary's, as would be afforded by the offering to pass unopposed the death of a native Scottishman by a Catholic Englishman, a rival to Queen Elizabeth.

On the other hand, to deliver up to England, or, which was nearly the same thing, to the Scottish administration, an English knight, engaged with the French by blood and political intrigue, a faithful follower of the Catholic Church, who had fled to the Highlands for protection, was, in the estimation of the Sub-Treasor, an act most unworthy in itself, and meeting the malodious of Heaven, besides being, moreover, fraught with great temporal risk. If the government of Scotland was now almost entirely in the hands of the Protestant party, the Queen was still a Catholic, and there was no knowing when, amid the sudden changes which agitated that tempestuous society, she might find herself at the head of her own affairs, and able to protect those of her own faith. Then, if the court of England and its Queen were violently Protestant, the northern counties, whose friendship or enmity were of most consequence in the first instance to the community of Saint Mary's, contained many Catholics, the heads of whom were able, and must be supposed willing, to avenge any injury suffered by Sir Francis Skelton.

On either side, the Sub-Treasor, thinking according to his sense of duty, most anxiously for the safety and welfare of his Monastery, saw the greatest risk of damage, blame, insult, and confusion. The only means on which he could determine, was to stand by the helm like a rickshaw pilot, watch every contingency, do his best to weather each reef and shoal, and commit the rest to Heaven and his patroness.

As he left the apartment, the knight called after him, beseeching he would order his trunk-carts to be sent into his apartment, understanding he was to be guarded there for the night, as he wished to make some alteration in his apparel.*

* Note 1. *Piquery of the Elizabethan Century.*

"Ay, ay," said the monk, writhing as he went up the winding stair, "may have his temporary with all dispatch. Alas! that man, with so many noble objects of pursuit, will agone himself like a jacksnipe, with a lance jokin and a cup and bells!—I must now to the melancholy work of composing that which is well-nigh impossible, a mother weeping for her first-born."

Advancing, after a gentle knock, into the apartment of the woman, he found that Mary Arnold had retired to bed, so tremulously indisposed, and that Dame Glendinning and Tibb were indulging their sorrows by the side of a smouldering fire, and by the light of a small iron lamp or cross, as it was termed. Poor Elspeth's agon was thrown over her head, and bitterly did she sob and weep for "her beautiful, her brave,—the very image of her dear Simon Glendinning, the stay of her widowhood and the support of her old age."

The faithful Tibb echoed her complaints, and, more violently than usual, made deep promises of revenge on Sir Francis Chaston, "if there was a man left in the world who could draw a whinger, or a woman that could draw a rapier." The presence of the Sub-Prior exposed silence as these discourses. He sat down by the unfortunate mother, and comforted, by such topics as his religion and reason suggested, to interrupt the current of Dame Glendinning's feelings; but the attempt was in vain. She listened, indeed, with some little interest, while he pledged his word and his influence with the Abbot, that the family which had lost their eldest born by means of a guest received at his command, should experience particular protection at the hands of the community; and that the bed which belonged to Simon Glendinning should, with extended bounds and added privileges, be conferred on Edward.

But it was only for a very brief space that the mother's sobs were apparently softer, and her grief more mild. She soon turned herself for casting a moment's thought upon woeless gear while poor Halbert was lying stretched in his bloody shirt. The Sub-Prior was not more fortunate, when he promised that Halbert's body "should be removed to hallowed ground, and his soul secured by the prayers of the Church in his behalf." Grief would have its natural course, and the weep of the confessor was wasted in vain.

to the monks, prevented her venturing forth alone, and intruding himself in the presence of Father Rostock, while in secret conference with the monks. There appeared no remedy but to wait till their interview was over, and, as the door was then, and did not shut very closely, she could hear every word that passed between them.

It thus happened, that without any intended intrusion on her part, she became privy to the whole conversation of the Sub-Prior and the English knight, and could also observe from the window of her little retreat, that more than one of the young men summoned by Edward arrived successively at the tower. These circumstances led her to entertain most strong apprehensions that the life of Sir Francis Skelton was in great and instant peril.

Woman is naturally compassionate, and not less willingly to witness grief and her distresses are on the side of him who claims her sympathy. The handsome presence, eloquent dress and address of Sir Francis Skelton, which had failed to make any favourable impression on the grave and lofty character of Mary Anson, had completely dazzled and bewitched the poor Maid of the Mill. The knight had perceived this result, and, fortified by seeing that his merit was not so usually undervalued, he had bestowed on Myra a good deal more of his courtesy than in his opinion her rank warranted. It was not cast away, but received with a devout sense of his condescension, and with gratitude for his personal notice, which, joined to her love for his nephew, and the natural tenderness of her disposition, began to make wild work in her heart.

"To be sure it was very wrong in him to say Richard Glendinning" (it was then the agreed she said with herself), "but then he was a gentleman born, and a soldier, and so gentle and courteous withal, that she was sure the quarrel had been all of young Glendinning's own seeking; for it was well known that both these lads were so taken up with that Mary Anson, that they never looked at another lass in the Habsburgs, more than if they were of a different degree. And then Halbert's share was as devilish as his manners were heavenly, and this poor young gentleman (who was habited like any peasant), banished from his own land, was first driven into a quarrel by a rude hussar, and then persecuted and like to be put to death by his kin and allies."

Myra rose bitterly at the thought, and then, her heart racing against such cruelty and oppression to a defenceless stranger, who dressed with so much skill, and spoke with so much grace, she began to consider whether she could not render him some assistance in this emergency.

Her mind was now entirely altered from its original purpose. At first her only anxiety had been to find the means of escaping from the interior apartment, without being noticed by any one, but now she began to think that Harren had placed her there for the safety and protection of the persecuted stranger. She was of a simple and affectionate, but at the same time an alert and enterprising character, possessing more than female strength of body, and more than female courage, though with feelings so susceptible of being bewildered with gallantry of dress and language, as a fine gentleman of any generation would have desired to exercise his talents upon. "I will save him," she thought, "that is the first thing to be resolved—and then I wonder what he will say to the poor Miller's widow, that has done for him what all the dainty dames in London or Hollywood would have been afraid to venture upon."

Prudence began to pull her down as she indulged speculations so hazardous, and boded to her that the warning Sir Percie Shafton's gratitude might prove, it was the more likely to be fraught with danger to his benefactress. Alas! poor Prudence, thou mayest say with our moral teacher,

"I grieve for you, but I grieve in vain."

The Miller's widow, while you poor your working into her travelling house, has glanced her eye on the small alcove by which she has placed her little lamp, and it returns to her a countenance and eyes, pretty and sparkling at all times, but animated at present with the energy of expression proper to those who have dared to form, and stand prepared to execute, deeds of generous valour. "Well! those features—with those eyes, joined to the beauty I am about to confer upon Sir Percie Shafton, do nothing towards increasing the distance of rank between us!"

Such was the question which Anne's vanity asked of herself; and though even Anne dared not answer in a ready affirmative, a middle conclusion was adopted—"Let me first soothe the golden youth, and trust to fortune for the rest."

Reinhold, therefore, from her mind everything that was personal to herself, the rich but generous girl turned her whole thoughts to the means of executing this enterprise.

The difficulties which intervened were of no ordinary nature. The vengeance of the men of that country, in case of deadly feud, that is, in case of a quarrel excited by the daughter of any of their vassals, was one of their most marked characteristics; and Edward, however guilty in other respects, was no less of his brother, that there could be no doubt that he would be as signal in his revenge as the customs of the country authorized. There was to be passed the inner door of the apartment, the two gates of the tower itself, and the gate of the courtyard, ere the prisoner was at liberty; and then a guide and means of flight were to be provided, otherwise ultimate success was impossible. But when the will of woman is strongly bent on the accomplishment of such a purpose, her will is seldom baffled by difficulties, however embarrassing.

The Sub-Prior had not long left the apartment, ere Myra had devised a scheme for Sir Francis Shafton's freedom, daring, bold, but likely to be successful, if desperately conducted. It was necessary, however, that she should remain where she was till as late as hour, that all in the tower should have taken themselves to repose, excepting those whose duty made them watchmen. The interval she employed in observing the movements of the person in whose service she was then habitually a volunteer.

She could hear Sir Francis Shafton pace the floor to and fro, in reflection devoted to his own turbulent life and precarious situation. By and by she heard him making a rustling among his trunks, which, agreeable to the order of the Sub-Prior, had been placed in the apartment to which he was confined, and which he was probably consulting more volubly thoughts by examining and arranging. Then she could hear him remove his walk through the room, and, as if his spirits had been somewhat revived and cheered by the survey of his wardrobe, she could distinguish that at one time he half recited a sonnet, at another half whistled a galliard, and at the third hummed a canticle. At length she could understand that he extended himself on the temporary couch which had been allotted to him, after muttering her prayers hastily, and in a short time she concluded he must be fast asleep.

She employed the moments which intervened in considering her enterprises under every different aspect; and, dangerous as it was, the steady review which she took of the various perils accompanying her purpose, furnished her with plausible devices for eluding them. Love and generous compassion, which give singly such powerful impulses to the female heart, were in this case united, and championed her to the last extremity of hazard.

It was an hour past midnight. All in the tower slept sound but those who had undertaken to guard the English prisoner; or if sorrow and suffering drove sleep from the bed of Dame Glendivine and her sister-daughter, they were too much wrapt in their own griefs to attend to external sounds. The means of striking light were at hand in the small apartment, and thus the Miller's maiden was enabled to light and turn a small lamp. With a trembling step and throbbing heart, she unlocked the door which separated her from the apartment in which the Southern knight was confined, and almost flinched from her fixed purpose, when she found herself in the same room with the sleeping prisoner. She scarcely trusted herself to look upon him, as he lay wrapped in his cloak, and first sidng upon the pallet bed, but turned her eyes away while she gently pulled his mantle with no more force than was just equal to awaken him. He moved not until she had twisted his cloak a second and a third time, and then at length looking up, was about to make an exclamation in the ardour of his surprise.

Myrie's bashfulness was conquered by her fear. She placed her fingers on her lips, in token that he must observe the most strict silence, and then pointed to the door to intimate that it was watched.

Sir Pierre Shafton now collected himself, and sat upright on his couch. He gazed with surprise on the graceful figure of the young woman who stood before him; her well-formed person, her flowing hair, and the outline of her features, showed dimly, and yet to advantage, by the partial and feeble light which she held in her hand. The romantic imagination of the gallant would soon have coined some complimentary paper for the occasion, but Myrie left him not time.

"I come," she said, "to save your life, which is due in great

poor—if you murder me, speak as low as you can, for they have mistreated your day with several men.”

“Consistent of mother’s daughter,” answered Sir Florio, who by this time was sitting upright on his couch, “dread nothing for my safety. Credit me, that, as in very truth, I have not spilled the red pottle (which these villagers call the blood) of their most useful nation, so I am under no apprehensions whatever for the loss of this restraint, seeing that it cannot but be harmful to me. Nevertheless, to thee, O most Malicious beauty, I return the thanks which thy courtesy may justly claim.”

“Nay, but, Sir Knight,” answered the maiden, in a whisper as low as it was treasonous, “I deserve no thanks unless you will ask by my counsel. Edward Glendinning hath sent for Dan of the Hootin-bird, and young Adie of Aikenshore, and they are come with three men more, and with bow, and jack, and spear, and I heard them say to each other, and to Edward, as they alighted in the court, that they would have rewards for the death of their kinsman, if the monk’s evil should enable for it—And the reward are so wild now, that the Abbot himself dare not control them, for fear they turn lawless, and refuse to pay their satisfaction.”

“In faith,” said Sir Florio Shanon, “it may be a shrewd temptation, and perchance the monks may rid themselves of trouble and danger, by handing me over the march to Sir John Foster or Lord Hamden, the English warriors, and so make peace with their monks and with England at once. Farest Malicious, I will be sure walk by thy side, and if thou dost continue to entreat me from this vile house, I will so advertise thy wit and beauty, that the latter’s speech of England d’Urbain shall seem but a gipsy in comparison of my Malicious.”

“I pray you, then, be silent,” said the Miller’s daughter; “for if your speech betrays that you are awake, my scheme fails utterly, and it is Heaven’s mercy and Our Lady’s that we are not already overheard and discovered.”

“I am silent,” replied the Scotswoman, “even as the starling night—but yet—if this continuance of silence should endanger thy safety, for and no less kind than fair chance, it were utterly unworthy of me to accept it at thy hand.”

“Do not think of me,” said Maida, hastily; “I am safe—I will take thought for myself, if I once see you out of this

dangerous dwelling—if you would provide yourself with any part of your apparel or goods, lose no time."

The Knight did, however, lose some time ere he could settle in his own mind what to take and what to abandon of his wardrobe, each article of which seemed endeared to him by recollection of the friends and events at which it had been exhibited. For some little while Myrie left him to make his selections at leisure, for she herself had also some preparations to make for flight. But when, returning from the chamber into which she had retired, with a small bundle in her hand, she found him still indecisive, she insisted in plain terms, that he should either make up his baggage for the enterprise, or give it up entirely. Thus urged, the disconsolate knight hastily made up a few clothes into a bundle, repacked his trunk-marks with a mute expression of parting sorrow, and estimated his readiness to wait upon his kind gods.

She led the way to the door of the apartment, having first carefully extinguished her lamp, and motioning to the knight to stand close behind her, tapped once or twice at the door. She was at length answered by Edward Glenarvon, who demanded to know who knocked within, and what was desired.

"Speak low," said Myrie Happer, "or you will awaken the English knight. It is I, Myrie Happer, who knock—I wish to get out—you have locked me up—and I was obliged to wait till the Southern slept."

"Locked you up!" replied Edward, in surprise.

"Yes," answered the Miller's daughter, "you have locked me up into this room—I was in Mary Arnaud's sleeping apartment."

"And can you not remain there till morning," replied Edward, "since it has so pleased?"

"What?" said the Miller's daughter, in a tone of affected delicacy, "I remain here a moment longer when I can get out without discovery!—I would not, for all the Holdings of Saint Mary's, remain a minute longer in the neighbourhood of a man's apartment than I can help it.—For whom, or for what, do you hold me? I promise you my father's daughter has been better brought up than to put in paid her good name."

"Come forth then, and get to thy chamber as silence," said Edward.

So saying, he unlocked the bolt. The staircase within was in

utter darkness, as Myra had before ascertained. So soon as she stooped out, she took hold of Edward as if to support herself, thus intercepting her person between him and Sir Percival Shadlow, by whom she was closely followed. Thus screened from observation, the Englishman slipped past on tiptoe, unnoted and in silence, while the dame complained to Edward that she wanted a light.

"I cannot get you a light," said he, "for I cannot leave this post; but there is a fire below."

"I will sit below till morning," said the Maid of the Mill, and, tripping down stairs, heard Edward hold and bar the door of the new luxurious apartment with vain caution.

At the foot of the stair which she descended, she found the object of her own waiting her further directions. She recommended to him the most absolute silence, which, for once in his life, he seemed not unwilling to observe, conducted him, with as much caution as if he were walking on cracked ice, to a dark recess, used for depositing wood, and instructed him to announce himself behind the door. She herself lighted her lamp once more at the kitchen fire, and took her distaff and spindle, lest she might not seem to be unemployed, in case any one came into the apartment. From time to time, however, she stole towards the window on tiptoe, to catch the first glances of the dawn, for the further prosecution of her adventurous project. At length she saw, to her great joy, the first pang of the morning brightness upon the grey clouds of the east, and, clasping her hands together, thanked Our Lady for the night, and implored protection during the remainder of her enterprise. Ere she had finished her prayer, she started at feeling a man's arm across her shoulder, while a rough voice spoke in her ear—"What! wonderful Myra of the Mill as soon at her prayers!—now, look on the heavy eyes that open so early!—I'll have a kiss for good-morrow's sake."

Even of the Harriet-kind, for he was the gallant who paid Myra this compliment, varied the action with the word, and the action, as is usual in such cases of rustic gallantry, was rewarded with a cuff, which Don received as a fine gentleman receives a tap with a fan, but which, delivered by the energetic arm of the Miller's maid, would have certainly unseated a less robust gallant.

"How now, Sir Quizzard!" said she, "and must you be away

from your guard over the English knight, to plague quiet folks with your horse-tricks?"

"Truly you are mistaken, pretty Myra," said the clown, "for I have not yet released Edward at his post; and were it not a shame to let him stay any longer, by my faith, I could find it in my heart not to quit you these two hours."

"Oh, you have hours and hours enough to see my son," said Myra; "but you must think of the distress of the household even now, and get Edward to sleep for a while, for he has kept watch this whole night."

"I will have another kin fast," answered Dan of the Flower-kirt.

But Myra was now on her guard, and, conscious of the vicinity of the wood-hole, offered such strenuous resistance, that the clown cursed the knight's bad humour with very unparaphrased phrases and emphasis, and ran up stairs to relieve the guard of his comrade. Stealing to the door, she heard the new sentinel hold a brief conversation with Edward, after which the latter withdrew, and the former entered upon the duties of his watch.

Myra suffered him to walk there a little while undisturbed, until the clanking became more general, by which time she supposed he might have digested her cognate, and then presenting herself before the watchful sentinel, demanded of him "the keys of the water tower, and of the courtyard gate."

"And for what purpose?" answered the watcher.

"To milk the cows, and drive them out to their pasture," said Myra; "you would not have the poor beasts kept in the byre all morning, and the family in such distress that there is no one fit to do a turn but the byre-woman and myself?"

"And where is the byre-woman?" said Dan.

"Sitting with me in the kitchen, in case these distressed folks want anything."

"There are the keys, then, Myra Doots," said the sentinel.

"Many thanks, Dan Mc'n-do-well," answered the Maid of the Mill, and escaped down stairs in a moment.

She hasten to the wood-hole, and there to robe the English knight in a short gown and petticoat, which she had provided for the purpose, was the work of another moment. She then unlocked the gates of the tower, and made towards the byre, or

cow-house, which stood in one corner of the courtyard. Sir Florio Shafon remonstrated against the delay which this would occasion.

"Fair and generous Hollara," he said, "had we not better make the outward gate, and make the best of our way home, even like a pair of swallows who make towards shelter of the rocks as the storm waves high?"

"We must drive out the cows first," said Myra, "for as soon it were to spoil the poor widow's milk, both for her sake and the poor house's own; and I have no mind any one shall leave the tower in a hurry to follow us. Besides, you must have your horse, for you will need a fast one ere all be done."

In saying, she looked and double-looked both the inward and outward door of the tower, proceeded to the cow-house, turned out the cattle, and, giving the knight his own horse to lead, drove them before her out at the courtyard gate, intending to return for her own palfrey. But the noise attending the first operation caught the watchful attention of Edward, who, starting to the balcony, called to know what the matter was.

Myra answered with great readiness, that "she was driving out the cows, for that they would be spoiled for want of looking to."

"I thank thee, kind maiden," said Edward—"and yet," he added, after a moment's pause, "what danger is that thou hast with them?"

Myra was about to answer, when Sir Florio Shafon, who apparently did not divine that the great work of his liberation should be executed without the interposition of his own lightning, uttered from beneath, "I am she, O most benighted Jewral, under whose clamps are placed the wily motions of the bird."

"Hail and darkness!" exclaimed Edward, in a transport of fury and astonishment, "It is Florio Shafon—What! treason! treason!—ho!—Dun—Jaeger—Morin—the villain escapes!"

"To horse! to horse!" cried Myra, and in an instant mounted behind the knight, who was already in the saddle.

Edward caught up a cross-bow, and let fly a bolt, which whistled as near Myra's ear, that she called to her companion,—"Spar—spar—Sir Knight! the next will not miss us.

—Had it been Halbert instead of Edward who bent that bow, we had been dead."

The knight pressed his horse, which dashed past the river, and down the knoll on which the tower was situated. Then taking the road down the valley, the gallant animal, reckless of its double burden, soon conveyed them out of hearing of the torch and alarm with which their departure filled the Tower of Glendoung.

Thus it strangely happened, that two men were flying in different directions at the same time, each accused of being the other's murderer.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SIXTH.

————— Here he ceased.
As so commonly as he leaves me here,
If he do, words will not so easily
Trust men again.

THE TWO FORTS. KILMURDO.

THE knight continued to keep the good horse at a pace as quick as the road permitted, until they had cleared the valley of Glendoung, and entered upon the broad side of the Tweed, which now rolled before them in wondrous beauty, displaying on its opposite bank the huge gray Monastery of Saint Mary's, whose towers and pinnacles were scarce yet touched by the seventy-three men, so deeply the cliffs here shrouded under the mountains which rise to the southward.

Turning to the left, the knight continued his road down to the northern bank of the river, until they arrived nearly opposite to the weir, or dam-dike, where Father Philip concluded his extraordinary aquatic excursion.

Sir Pierre Shafton, whose brain seldom admitted more than one idea at a time, had hitherto pushed forward without very distinctly considering where he was going. But the sight of the Monastery so near to him, reminded him that he was still on dangerous ground, and that he must necessarily provide for his safety by choosing some settled plan of escape. The situation of his guide and deliverer also occurred to him, for he

was far from being either selfish or ungrateful. He listened, and discovered that the Miller's daughter was weeping and weeping bitterly as she rested her head on his shoulder.

"What ails thee," he said, "my generous Madonna!—is there aught that Pierre Shafon can do which may show his gratitude to his deliverer?" Myra pointed with her finger across the door, but ventured not to turn her eyes in that direction. "Nay, but speak plain, most generous dame!" said the knight, who, for once, was puzzled as much as his own elegance of speech was wont to puzzle others, "for I swear to you that I comprehend naught by the extension of thy fair digit."

"Yonder is my father's house," said Myra, in a voice interrupted by the increased heat of her sorrow.

"And I was carrying thee discreetly to a distance from thy habitation!" said Shafon, imagining he had found out the source of her grief. "Woe worth the hour that Pierre Shafon, in attention to his own safety, neglected the accommodation of any female, the less of his most boundless liberality! Dismount, then, O lovely Madonna, unless thou wouldst rather that I should transport thee on horseback to the house of thy extraordinary father, which, if thou sayest the word, I am prompt to do, defying all dangers which may arise to me personally, whether by monk or miller."

Myra suppressed her sobs, and with considerable difficulty restrained her desire to alight, and take her fortune by herself. Sir Pierre Shafon, too devoted a square of chess to consider the most lively as exempted from a respectful attention, independent of the claims which the Miller's maiden possessed over him, dismounted instantly from his horse, and reclined in his arms the poor girl, who still wept bitterly, and, when placed on the ground, seemed scarce able to support herself, or at least still dazed, though, as it appeared, unconsciously, to the support he had afforded. He carried her to a weeping hawthorn, which grew on the grassy mound behind which the road wound, and, placing her on the ground beneath it, exhorted her to compose herself. A strong touch of natural feeling struggled with, and half overcame, his acquired affectation, while he said, "Grieve na, most generous dame, the service you have done to Pierre Shafon he would have deemed too dearly bought, had he known it was to cost you these tears and sighs."

Show me the cause of your grief, and if I can do ought to remove it, believe that the rights you have acquired over me will make your commands sacred as those of an emperor. Speak, then, fair Holmwood, and command him whose fatigue hath rendered at once your debtor and your champion. What are your orders?"

"Only that you will fly and save yourself," said Myola, muttering up her utmost efforts in other than few words.

"Yes," said the knight, "let me not leave you without some token of remembrance." Myola would have said there wanted none, and most truly would she have spoken, could she have spoken for weeping. "Fieris Shafon is gone," he continued, "but let this chain testify he is not forgotten to his deliverer."

He took from his neck the rich chain and medallion we have formerly mentioned, and put it into the powerless hand of the poor maiden, who neither received nor rejected it, but, occupied with more intense feelings, seemed scarce aware of what he was doing.

"We shall meet again," said Sir Fieris Shafon, "at least I trust so; meanwhile, weep no more, fair Holmwood, as thou lovest me."

The phrase of conjuration was but used as an ordinary commonplace expression of the time, but bore a deeper sense to poor Myola's ear. She dried her tears, and when the knight, in all kind and childlike courtesy, stooped to embrace her at their parting, she rose humbly up to receive the proffered honour in a posture of more defiance, and meekly and gratefully accepted the offered salute. Sir Fieris Shafon mounted his horse and began to ride off, but suddenly, or perhaps a stronger feeling, soon induced him to look back, when he beheld the Miller's daughter standing still motionless on the spot where they had parted, her eyes turned after him, and the unheeded chain hanging from her hand.

It was at this moment that a glimpse of the real state of Myola's affliction, and of the motive from which she had acted in the whole matter, glanced on Sir Fieris Shafon's mind. The galleys of that age, disinterested, aspiring, and left-handed, even in their courtesy, were stranger to those degrading and glibrous passions which age usually termed low passions. They did not "chase the humble maidens of the plide," or degrade their own rank, to deprive rural innocences

of peace and virtue. It followed, of course, that as competitors in this class were no part of their ambition, they were in most cases totally overlooked and unappreciated, left unimproved, as a modern would call it, where, as on the present occasion, they were actually made. The comparison of Astrophel and flower of the tall-purd of Peckham, had no more idea that his grace and good parts could attract the love of Myra Hopper, than a first-rate beauty in the house dresses of the field would which her charms may inflict on some attorney's romantic appetites in the pit. I suppose, in any ordinary case, the pride of rank and distinction would have pronounced on the humble admirer the doom which these Fielding denounced against the whole fustian world, "Let them look and die," but the obligations under which he lay to the ensconced maiden, mother's daughter as she was, precluded the possibility of Sir Florio's treating the matter as insoluble, and, much embarrassed, yet a little flattered at the same time, he rolls back to try what could be done for the damsel's relief.

The innate modesty of poor Myra could not prevent her showing too obvious signs of joy at Sir Florio Shaffan's return. She was betrayed by the sparkle of the rekindling eye, and a colour, which, however rapidly bestowed, she could not help giving to the cheek of the house which brought back the beloved sister.

"What further can I do for you, kind Melburn?" said Sir Florio Shaffan, himself hesitating and blushing; for, to the grace of Queen Anne's age he is spoken, her courtiers were more true to their breasts than true to their footstools, and even amid their virtues preserved still the decaying spirit of chivalry, which inspired of yore the very gentle Knight of Chaucer,

Who in his part was marked as a knight

Myra blushed deeply, with her eyes fixed on the ground, and Sir Florio proceeded in the same tone of embarrassed kindness. "Are you afraid to return home alone, my kind Melburn?—would you that I should accompany you?"

"Alas!" said Myra, looking up, and her cheek changing from scarlet to pale, "I have no home left."

"How! no home?" said Shaffan, "aye my generous Melburn she hath no home, when yonder stands the house of her father, and but a crystal stream between?"

"Alas!" answered the Miller's maiden, "I have no longer either home or father. He is a devoted servant to the Abbey—I have offended the Abbot, and if I return home my father will kill me."

"He dare not injure thee, by Heaven!" said Sir Florio; "I swear to thee by my honour and knighthood, that the forces of my cousin of Northumberland shall lay the Monastery so flat that a horse shall not stouble as he rides over it, if they should dare to injure a hair of your head! Therefore be hopeful and content, kind Myrinda, and know you have obliged one who can and will avenge the slightest wrong offered to you."

He sprung from his horse as he spoke, and in the satisfaction of his argument, grasped the willing hand of Myra (or Myrinda, as he had now christened her). His gazed too upon full black eyes, fixed upon his own with an expression which, however subdued by manly shame, it was impossible to mistake, as cheeks where something like hope began to restore the natural colour, and on two lips which, his double mouth, were kept a little apart by expectation, and showed within a line of teeth as white as pearl. All this was dangerous to look upon, and Sir Florio blushed, after repeating with low and low voice his request that the fair Myrinda would allow him to carry her to her father's, ended by taking the fair Myrinda to go along with him—"At least," he added, "until I shall be able to conduct you to a place of safety."

Myra Happer made no answer; but blushing modest patriot joy and shame, warmly expressed her willingness to accompany the Northern Knight, by holding her hands close, and protesting to remove her seal as crosses. "And that is your pleasure that I should do with thee?" she said, holding up the chain as if she had been for the first time aware that it was in her hand.

"Keep it, sweet Myrinda, for my sake," said the Knight.

"Not so, sir," answered Myra, gravely, "the maidens of my country take no such gifts from their captives, and I need no token to remind me of this warning."

Most earnestly and courteously did the knight urge her acceptance of the proposed pardon, but on this point Myra was resolute; holding, perhaps, that to accept of anything bearing the appearance of reward, would be to place the service

she had rendered him on a necessary footing. In short, she would only agree to attend the child, but it might prove the means of detecting the crime, until Sir Francis should be placed in perfect safety.

They mounted and resumed their journey, of which Myra, so bold and sharp-witted in some points as she was simple and susceptible in others, now took in some degree the direction, having only imposed the general destination, and learned that Sir Francis Shafton desired to go to Edinburgh, where he hoped to find friends and protection. Possessed of this information, Myra availed herself of her local knowledge to get as soon as possible out of the hands of the Shaftons, and into those of a temporal house, supposed to be addicted to the reformed doctrine, and upon whose faith, at least, she thought their pursues would not attempt to hazard any release. She was not indeed very apprehensive of a pursuit, reasoning with some confidence that the inhabitants of the Tower of Glasney would find it a matter of difficulty to surmount the obstacles arising from their own beliefs and laws, with which she had carefully accursed them, before setting forth on the career.

They journeyed on, therefore, in tolerable security, and Sir Francis Shafton found leisure to waste the time in high-flown speeches and long anecdotes of the court of Flanders, in which Myra bore an ear not a whit less attentive, than she did not understand one word out of those which was uttered by her fellow-traveller. She listened, however, and allowed open trust, as many a wise man has been contented to treat the conversation of a handsome but silly mistress. As for Sir Francis, he was in his element; and, well assured of the interest and full approbation of his auditor, he went on sporting Englishmen of more than usual obscurity, and at more than usual length. Thus passed the morning, and soon brought them within sight of a winding stream on the side of which arose an ancient baronial castle, surrounded by some large trees. At a small distance from the gate of the mansion, extended, as in those days was usual, a struggling hamlet, having a church in the centre.

"There are two hostelries in this Kirk town," said Myra, "but the worst is best for our purpose; for it stands apart from the other houses, and I know the man well, for he has dealt with my father for many."

This scene tended, to use a lawyer's phrase, *was all done* for Myra's purpose; for the Fierce Shafton had, by dint of his own ingenuity, been talking himself all this while into a high esteem for his fellow-traveller, and pleased with the gracious reception which she afforded to his powers of conversation, had well-nigh forgotten that she was not herself one of those high-born beauties of whom he was recounting so many stories, when this solitary speech at once placed the most disadvantageous circumstances attending her image under his immediate recollection. He said nothing, however. What indeed could he say? Nothing was so natural as that a mother's daughter should be separated with publicans who dealt with her father for soul, and all that was to be wondered at was the continuance of events which had rendered such a female the companion and guide of the Fierce Shafton of Wilverton, kinsman of the great Earl of Northumberland, whose prizes and advantages themselves termed *curia*, because of the Fierce blood.* He left the disgrace of strolling through the country with a miller's maiden on the crupper behind him, and was even congratulated enough to feel some emotions of shame, when he halted his horse at the door of the lodge inn.

But the start intelligence of Myra Hopper spared him further scenes of degradation, by instantly springing from his horse, and crossing the ears of mine host, who came out with his mouth agape to receive a guest of the knight's appearance, with an imagined tale, in which circumstances on circumstances were heaped so fast, as to astonish the Fierce Shafton, whose own narrative was none of the most brilliant. She explained to the publican that this was a great English knight travelling from the Monastery to the Court of Scotland, after having paid her vows to Saint Mary, and that she had been directed to conduct him as far as the road; and that Edith, her palfrey, had fallen by the way, because he had been over-weight with carrying home the last mother of need to the parsons of Longhope; and that she had turned as Edith to graze in the Tuckers' Park near Oxyphorus, for he had stood as still as Levi with will very weakness; and that the knight had generously insisted she should ride behind him, and that she had brought

* *Probert* tells us somewhere (the nature of romance are indifferent to accurate references) that the King of France called one of the Fierce curia, because of the blood of Northumberland.

him to her kind friend's society rather than to good Peter Peck's, who got his milk at the *Milketown* mill; and that he must get the best that the house afforded, and that he must get it ready in a moment of time, and that she was ready to help in the kitchen.

All this ran gliding off the tongue without pause on the part of Myra Hopper, or doubt on that of the landlord. The guest's horse was conducted to the stable, and he himself installed in the dearest corner and best seat which the place afforded. Myra, ever active and efficient, was at once engaged in preparing food, in spreading the table, and in making all the better arrangements which her experience could suggest, for the known and comfort of her companion. He would have noted that, for while it was impossible not to be gratified with the eager and alert kindness which was so active in his service, he felt an undeniable pain in seeing Myra's engaged in these varied services, and discharging them, moreover, as one to whom they were but too familiar. Yet this passing feeling was mixed with, and perhaps balanced by, the serious feeling with which the well-timed question, *How did those folks, however much in themselves, and gave to the wretched crew of a miserable inn of the period, the air of a tower, in which an enormous fairy, or at least a chaperone of Arcadia, was displaying, with unvarying solicitude, her designs on the heart of some knight, destined by fate to higher thoughts, and a more splendid mine.*

The lightness and grace with which Myra covered the little round table with a snow-white cloth, and arranged upon it the handsomely-croated napers, with its accompanying stoup of *Beau-deux*, were but phœbean graces in themselves; but yet there were very flattering ideas excited by each glance. She was so very well made, agile at once and graceful, with her hand and arm as white as snow, and her face in which a smile contended with a blush, and her eyes which looked over at Eustace when he looked elsewhere, and were dropped at once when they encountered his, that she was irresistible! In fact, the affectionate delivery of her whole demeanour, joined to the promptitude and readiness she had so lately evinced, tended to excite the service she had rendered, as if none.

——— sweet engaging Grace
Put on some shawl to cover thyself,
And look a woman's place.

But, on the other hand, came the daring reflection, that these duties were not taught her by love, to serve the beloved only, but arose from the ordinary and natural habits of a mother's daughter, accustomed, doubtless, to render the same service to every wealthier child who deposited her father's gift. Thus stopped the mists of vanity, and of the love which vanity had been withholding, as effectively as a peck of bluest flour would have done.

Amidst this variety of emotions, Sir Philip had forgotten not to ask the object of them to sit down and partake the good cheer which she had been so anxious to provide and to place in order. He expected that this invitation would have been thankfully, perhaps, but certainly most thankfully, accepted; but he was partly flattered, and partly pained, by the mixture of deference and resolution with which Myra declined his invitation. Immediately after, she vanished from the apartment, leaving the English to consider whether he was most gratified or displeased by her disappearance.

In fact, this was a point on which he would have found it difficult to make up his mind, had there been any necessity for it. As there was none, he drank a few cups of claret, and sang (to himself) a strophe or two, of the constancies of the divine Anacrophel. But in spite both of wine and of Sir Philip Sidney, the connection in which he now stood, and that which he was in future to hold, with the lovely Melmore or Myrcella, as he had been pleased to denominate Myra Happer, occurred to his mind. The situation of the case (as we have already noticed) fortunately coincided with his own natural generosity of disposition, which indeed amounted almost to extravagance, in prohibiting, as a deadly sin, all the against gallantry, delivery, and morality, he remembering the good offices he had received from this poor mother, by allowing any of the advantages which her confidence in his honour had afforded. To do Sir Philip justice, it was an idea which never entered into his head; and he would probably have dealt the most absolute condemnations, against, or punishment, which the school of Vincent Bourne had taught him, to any man who had dared to suggest to him such selfish and ungrateful notions. On the other hand, he was a man, and former various circumstances which might render their journey together in this extreme fashion a useful and a safe. Moreover he was a concealer and a courtier, and

bit does was something ridiculous in twirling the head with a miller's daughter behind his middle, giving rise to suspicions not very creditable to either, and to ludicrous constructions, as far as he himself was concerned.

"I would," he said half aloud, "that if such might be done without harm or discredit to the too-unlucky, yet too-well-distinguishing Melians, she and I were fairly married, and bound on our different courses, even as we see the goodly vessel bound for the distant sea, hasten on and bear away into the deep, while the humble fly-boat carries to shore those friends, who, with wounded hearts and watery eyes, have committed to their higher destiny the most daring adventures by whom she fair Melia is rescued."

He had never uttered the wish when it was granted; for the boat started to say that his worshipped highness's horse was ready to be brought forth as he had desired, and on his inquiry for "the—the damsel—that is—the young woman"—

"Myne Bagger," said the landlord, "has returned to her father's, but she bids me say, you could not save the road for Edinburgh, in respect it was no fair for you nor for gae."

It is seldom we are exactly blessed with the precise fulfilment of our wishes at the moment when we utter them; perhaps, because Heaven wisely withhold what, if granted, would be often reserved with indignation. So at least it chanced in the present instance, for when mine host said that Myne was returned homeward, the knight was tempted to reply, with an question of surprise and vexation, and a hasty demand, whether and when she had departed! The first sensation his graceless supposition, the second found utterance.

"Where is she gone?" said the host, gazing on him, and repeating his question—"She is gone home to her father's, it is like—and she gae just when she gae when about your worship's horse, and now it will be! (she might have trusted me, but neither and neither she think a body as she-like as themselves), so she's there when on the gate by this time."

"Is she gone then?" muttered Sir Phoebe, making two or three hasty strides through the narrow apartment—"Is she gone?—Well, then, let her go. She could have had but the grace by sliding by me, and I little credit by her society. That I should have thought there was such difficulty in shaking her off! I warrant she is by this time laughing with some

show she has experienced, and my risk shall well prove a good dinner.—And ought it not to prove so? and has she not deserved it, were it ten times more valuable?—*Perce Shafton!* *Perce Shafton!* dost thou grudge thy deliverer the gratitude she hath so deeply won? The selfish air of the northern had both infected thee, *Perce Shafton!* and blighted the blossoms of thy generosity, even as it is said to blight the flowers of the railway.—*Yet I thought,*" he added, after a moment's pause, "that she would not so easily and voluntarily have parted from me. But it kills not thinking of it.—Oust my recasting, now, hast, and let your groom lead forth my nag."

The good host turned also to have some mental point to discuss, for he wondered not vaguely, debating perhaps whether his conscience would bear a double charge for the same guests. Apparently his conscience replied in the negative, though not without hesitation, for he at length replied:—"It's nothing to me; it wins deep that the having is done paid. Nevertheless, if your worshipful knighthood please to give sight for increase of trouble"—

"Now!" said the knight; "the reckoning paid? and by whom, I pray you?"

"Ere by *Myrie Happer*, if truth seems to spoken, as I said before," answered the honest landlord, with as many compensations for taking the verily as another might have felt for making a lie in the circumstance.—"And out of the money supplied for your honour's journey by the *Abbot*, as she bade to me. And little was I to exchange any gratitude that *Myrie* my debt." He added in the confidence of honesty which his frank avowal entitled him to entertain, "Nevertheless, as I said before, if it please your knighthood if two good-will to another extraordinary trouble"—

The knight cut short his argument, by showing the landlord a coin-piece, which probably doubted the value of a Scottish reckoning, though it would have defrayed but a half one of the *Three Graces* or the *Yairry*. The honesty so much delighted him, that he ran to fill the stopper-up (for which no charge was ever made) from a bottle yet clearer than that which he had placed for the former stopper. The knight passed slowly to horse, partook of his courtesy, and thanked him with the stiff consideration of the court of *Elizabeth*; then mounted and followed the northern path, which was pointed out to the

struck in Edinburgh, and which, though very unlike a modern highway, bore yet so distinct a resemblance to a public and frequented road as not to be easily mistaken.

"I shall not need her guidance at noon," said he to himself, as he rode slowly onward, "and I suppose that was one reason of her abrupt departure, so different from what one might have expected—Well, I am well rid of her. Do we not pray to be liberated from temptation? Yet that she should have acted so much in violation of her own situation and aims, as to think of delaying the wedding! I would I saw her once more, but to expiate to her the sins of which her impetuosity hath rendered her guilty. And I fear," he added, as he emerged from some struggling trees, and looked out upon a wild moorish country, composed of a succession of swelling heathy hills, "I fear I shall never want the aid of this *Arcton*, who might afford me a clue through the recesses of poster's mysterious labyrinth."

As the Knight thus communed with himself, his attention was caught by the sound of a horse's trotting, and a lad, mounted on a little grey Scottish nag, about fourteen hands high, coming along a path which led from behind the trees, joined him on the high-road, if it could be termed such.

The dress of the lad was completely in village fashion, yet neat and handsome in appearance. He had a pair of grey cloth slacks and trousers, with black hose of the same, with deer-skin gaiters, so mottled, and handsome silver spurs. A cloak of a dark military colour was closely drawn round the upper part of his person, and the cape in part masked his face, which was also obscured by his breast of black velvet cloth, and its little plume of feathers.

For *Francis Shotton*, that of society, destined also to have a guide, and, moreover, prepossessed in favour of so handsome a youth, failed not to ask him whence he came, and whether he was going? The youth looked another way, as he answered that he was going to Edinburgh, "to seek service in some nobleman's family."

"I fear me you have run away from your last master," said the Knight, "must you dare not look me in the face while you answer my question?"

"Indeed, sir, I have not," answered the lad, hesitantly, while, as if with reluctance, he turned round his face, and instantly

withdrew it. It was a glance, but the discovery was complete. There was no mistaking the dark fall eye, the cheek in which such embarrassment could not altogether disguise an expression of some humour, and the whole figure at once betrayed, under her metamorphosis, the Maid of the Mill. The recognition was joyful, and Sir Pierre Shadon was too much pleased to have regained his companion to remember the very good reasons which had caused him for losing her.

To his questions respecting her doings, she answered, that she had obtained it in the Kirkstons from a friend; it was the holiday suit of a son of hers, who had taken the field with his legs lost, the horse of the land. She had borrowed the suit under pretence she meant to play in some swimming or rural metamorphosis. She had left, she said, her own apparel in exchange, which was better worth ten crowns than this was worth less.

"And the tag, my ingenious Melanes," said Sir Pierre, "whereas comes the tag?"

"I borrowed it from our host at the Glad's Nest," she replied; and added, half stifling a laugh, "he has sent to get, instead of it, our bell, which I left in the Tuckor's Park at Copenhagen. He will be lucky if he find it there."

"But then the poor man will lose his horse, mustn't he?" said Sir Pierre Shadon, whose English notions of property were a little startled at a mode of acquisition more respectful to the class of a miller's daughter (and in a Rindler miller to boot) than with those of an English person of quality.

"And if he does lose his horse," said Wynne, laughing, "surely he is not the first man on the marches who has had such a mischance. But he will be no loser, for I warrant he will stop the value out of moneys which he has owed my father this many a day."

"But then your father will be the loser," objected yet again the pertinacious sprightliness of Sir Pierre Shadon.

"What signifies it now to talk of my father!" said the damed, pettishly; then instantly changing to a tone of deep feeling, she added, "My father has this day lost that which will make him hold light the loss of all the gear he has left."

Struck with the accents of successful sorrow in which his companion uttered those few words, the English knight felt himself bound both in honour and conscience to expostulate

with her as strongly as he could, on the risk of the ship which she had now taken, and on the propriety of her returning to her father's house. The master of her chamber, though adorned with many unnecessary flourishes, was honourable both in his heart and heart.

The Maid of the Mill listened to his flowing periods with her head sunk on her bosom as she rode, like one in deep thought or deeper sorrow. When he had finished, she raised up her countenance, looked full on the knight, and replied with great firmness—"If you are weary of my company, Sir Pierre Shafton, you have but to say so, and the Miller's daughter will be no further trouble to you. And do not think I will be a burden to you, if we travel together to Edinburgh; I have wit enough and pride enough to be a willing burden to no man. But if you reject not my company at present, and that not in will be burdensome to you hereafter, speak no more to me of returning back. All that you can say to me I have said to myself, and that I am now here, is a sign that I have said it to no purpose. Let this subject, therefore, be for ever ended between us. I have already, in some small fashion, been useful to you, and the time may come I may be more so; for this is not your land of England, where men say justice is done with little fear or favour to great and to small; but it is a land where men die by the strong hand, and defend by the ready wit, and I know better than you the perils you are exposed to."

Sir Pierre Shafton was somewhat mortified to find that the damsel conceived her presence useful to him as a protector as well as guide, and said something of seeking protection from knight save his own arm and his good sword. Myra answered very quietly that she nothing doubted his bravery; but it was that very quality of bravery which was most likely to involve him in danger. Sir Pierre Shafton, whose head never kept very long in any continued train of thinking, acquiesced without much reply, resolving in his own mind that the maiden only used this apology to disguise her real motive, of a passion to his person. The concern of the situation flattened his reality and elevated his imagination, as placing him in the attitude of one of those romantic heroes of whom he had read the histories, where similar transformations made a distinguished figure.

He took many a sidelong glance at his page, whose habits of country sport and country exercise had rendered her quite

adequate to sustain the character she had assumed. She managed the little wag with dexterity, and even with grace; nor did anything appear that could have betrayed her daughter, except when a beautiful consciousness of her companion's eye being fixed on her, gave her an appearance of temporary embarrassment, which greatly added to her beauty.

The couple rode forward as in the morning, pleased with themselves and with each other, until they arrived at the village where they were to repose for the night, and where all the inhabitants of the little inn, both male and female, joined in extolling the good grace and handsome countenance of the English knight, and the uncommon beauty of his youthful attendant.

It was here that Myra Hopper first made Sir Francis Shafton sensible of the reserved manner in which she proposed to live with him. She addressed him as her master, and, waiting upon him with the reverent demure of an actual domestic, permitted not the least approach to familiarity, not even such as the knight might with the utmost innocence have ventured upon. For example, Sir Francis, who, as we know, was a great connoisseur in dress, was detailing to her the advantageous change which he proposed to make in her attire as soon as they should reach Edinburgh, by arraying her in his own colours of pink and carnation. Myra Hopper listened with great complacency to the eulogies with which he dilated upon warts, laces, slashes, and windings, until, carried away by the enthusiasm with which he was asserting the superiority of the falling band over the Spanish ruff, he approached his hand, in the way of illustration, towards the collar of his page's doublet. She instantly stepped back, and gently reminded him that she was alone and under his protection.

"You cannot but remember the cause which has brought me here," she continued; "make the least approach to any familiarity which you would not offer to a person surrounded by her court, and you have seen the last of the Miller's daughter—She will vanish as the chaff disappears from the chafing kiln* when the west wind blows."

"I do protest, Sir Melmore," said Sir Francis Shafton—but the Sir Melmore had disappeared before his protest could be uttered. "A most singular wench," said he to himself; "and

* The place where corn was roasted, which that operation was performed by the hand, was called in Scotland the chafing-kiln.

by this hand, as decent as she is fair-featured—Cecilia, shame it were to offer her smile or discomfure! She notices Cecilia too, though somewhat awed by her condition. Had she but read Raphael, and forgiven that accused mill and churning-mill, it is my thought that her conscience would be troubled with as many and as choice points of amendment, as that of the most virtuous lady in the court of Solomon. I trust she means to return to bear me company."

But that was no part of Myla's professed scheme. It was then drawing to dusk, and he saw her not again until the next morning, when the horses were brought to the door that they might prosecute their journey.

But our story here necessarily leaves the English knight and his page, to return to the Tower of Glasbury.

CHAPTER THIRTIETH.

*You tell it as it ought—It may be so ;
But ever I am, among the people which tell,
"Do the first deed thy counsel'd man to do,
And was the blow the spirit himself had felled."*

OLD PLAY.

We must resume our narrative at the period when Mary Arund was conveyed to the apartment which had been formerly occupied by the two Glasburys, and when her faithful attendant, Tilda, had exhausted herself in various attempts to compose and to comfort her. Father Easton also dealt forth with valiant kindness those spotless and dignified consolations, which friendship almost always offers to grief, though they are authoritatively effaced in vain. She was at length left to indulge in the declaration of her own sorrowful feelings. She felt as those who, having for the first time, have lost what they loved, before time and repeated calamity have taught them that every loss is to a certain extent irreparable or indurable.

Such grief may be conceived better than it can be described, as is well known to those who have experienced it. But Mary Arund had been taught by the proximity of her situation, to regard herself as the Child of Destiny ; and she indubitably and

reflecting turn of her disposition gave to her sorrows a depth and breadth peculiar to her character. The glare—and it was a bloody glare—had closed, as she believed, over the youth to whom she was married, but most wondrously stretched, the form and action of Hallam's character bearing a singular correspondence to the energy of which her own was capable. Her sorrow did not exhaust itself in sighs and tears, but when the first shock had passed away, concentrated itself with deep and steady meditation to collect and calculate, like a bankrupt debtor, the full amount of her loss. It seemed as if all that connected her with earth had vanished with this broken life. She had never dared to anticipate the probability of an ultimate union with Hallam, yet now his supposed fall seemed that of the only tree which was to shelter her from the storm. His projected, the more gentle character, and more powerful attachments, of the younger Glendinning; but it had not escaped her (what never failed escaped women in such circumstances) that he was disposed to place himself in competition with what she, the daughter of a proud and warlike race, deemed the more manly qualities of his elder brother; and there is no time when a woman does so little justice to the character of a surviving lover, as when comparing him with the preferred rival of whom she has been recently deprived.

The motherly, but more kindness of Dame Glendinning, and the darling fondness of her old domestic, seemed now the only kind feeling of which she formed the object; and she could not but reflect how little these were to be compared with the devoted attachment of a high-spirited youth, whom the least glance of her eye could command, as the high-mettled steed is governed by the bridle of the rider. It was when plunged among these conflicting reflections, that Mary Arwell felt the void of mind, arising from the sorrow and beguiled ignorance in which Anne then educated the children of her church. Their whole religion was a ritual, and their prayers were the formal recitation of unknown words, which, in the hour of affliction, could yield but little consolation to those who from habit resorted to them. Turned to the practice of mental direction, and of personal approach to the Divine presence by prayer, she could not help exclaiming in her distress, "There is no aid for me on earth, and I know not how to ask it from Heaven!"

As she spoke these in an agony of sorrow, she cast her eyes

into the apartment, and saw the mysterious Spirit, which waited upon the fortunes of her house, standing in the moonlight in the midst of the room. The same form, as the reader knows, had more than once offered itself to her sight, and either her native boldness of mind, or some peculiarly attached to her from her birth, made her now look upon it without shuddering. But the White Lady of Arnsal was now more distinctly visible, and more closely present, than she had ever before seemed to be, and Mary was appalled by her presence. She would, however, have spoken, but there was a tradition, that though others who had seen the White Lady had asked questions and received answers, yet those of the house of Arnsal who had ventured to speak to her, had never long survived the colloquy. The figure, besides, as sitting up in her bed, Mary Arnsal gazed on it intently, amazed by its gestures to caution her to keep silence, and at the same time to bespeak attention.

The White Lady then seemed to press one of the planks of the floor with her foot, while as her usual low, melodiously, and unusual strain, she repeated the following verses:—

"Maiden, whose name was the Living Dead,
 Whose eyes still converse with the Dead Alone,
 Maiden, arise! Bounce my feet the bill
 The Weak, the Low, the Path, which thou dost strive
 To feel, and count me that,—Ourselves spirit's dead
 Toss the dark lot, it was my lot to weep,
 Showing the road which I shall never tread,
 Through my first private life—Sleep, thralld sleep,
 Dark, long, and cold forgetfulness my lot is—
 But do not then at least let thy spirit,
 Leave thee the full garden in this spot,
 For all the more that wilt feel Adam's loss—
 Sleep, then, and make it possible may not make it mine!"

The phantom stooped towards the floor as she concluded, as if with the intention of laying her hand on the board on which she stood. But ere she had completed that gesture, her form became indistinct, was presently only like the shade of a fiery cloud, which passed horizontal north and the moon, and was soon altogether invisible.

A strong impression of fear, the first which she had experienced in her life to any alarming extent, seized upon the mind of Mary Arnsal, and for a minute she left a disposition to faint. She repelled it, however, mastered her courage, and

addressed himself to sobs and sighs, in her church room-mended. Broken chambers at length stole on her exhausted mind and frame, and she slept until the dawn was about to arise, when she was awakened by the cry of "Treason! treason! follow, follow!" which arose in the tower, when it was found that Pierre Shafton had made his escape.

Apprehensive of some new misadventure, Mary Arnold hastily arranged the dress which she had not held aside, and, venturing to quit her chamber, learned from Tibb, who, with her grey hairs dishevelled like those of a dwarf, was flying from room to room, that the bloody Southern villain had made his escape, and that Halbert Goodenough, poor being, would sleep unrevenged and unquelled in his bloody grave. In the lower apartments the young men were roaring like thunder, and venting in oaths and exclamations against the fugitives the rage which they experienced in finding themselves locked up within the tower, and deterred from their vindictive pursuit by the wily precautions of Myrie Hagger. The authoritative voice of the Sub-Prior commanding silence was next heard, upon which Mary Arnold, whose time of feeling did not lead her to enter into counsel or society with the rest of the party, again retired to her solitary chamber.

The rest of the family held counsel in the square, Edward almost beside himself with rage, and the Sub-Prior in no small degree offended at the effrontery of Myrie Hagger in attempting such a scheme, as well as at the unbridled boldness and dexterity with which it had been executed. But neither surprise nor anger availed aught. The windows, well secured with iron bars for keeping assassins out, proved now as effectual for detaining the inhabitants within. The battlements were open, unguarded; but without ladders or ropes to act as a substitute for walls, there was no possibility of descending from them. They easily succeeded in shutting the inhabitants of the cottage beyond the precincts of the convent; but the men had been called in to strengthen the guard for the night, and only women and children remained, who could contribute nothing in the emergency, except their useless exclamations of surprise, and there were no neighbours for miles around. Emma Shephard, however, though debarred in tears, was not so unaided of external allies, but that she could find voice enough to tell the women and children without, to "leave their sleeping, and look

after the news that she could not get released, what w^t the awful distraction of her mind, what w^t that house still having looked them up in their sin tower as fast as if they had been in the Jeddah Tallyho!"

Nevertheless, the men, finding other means of exit impossible, unanimously concluded to force the doors with such tools as the house afforded for the purpose. These were not very proper for the occasion, and the strength of the doors was great. The interior one, formed of oak, occupied them for three mortal hours, and there was little prospect of the iron door being forced in double the time.

While they were engaged in this ungrateful toil, Mary Arnold had with much less labour acquired much knowledge of what the Spirit had intimated in her cryptic rhymes. On examining the spot which the phantom had indicated by her gesture, it was not difficult to discover that a board had been loosened, which might be raised at pleasure. On removing this piece of plank, Mary Arnold was admitted to find the Black Book, well remembered by her as her mother's favourite study, of which she immediately took possession, with as much joy as her present situation rendered her capable of feeling.

Ignorant in a great measure of its contents, Mary Arnold had been taught from her infancy to hold the volume in sacred veneration. It is probable that the deceased Lady of Walto Arnold only postponed initiating her daughter into the mysteries of the Divine Word, until she should be better able to comprehend both the lessons which it taught, and the risk at which, in those times, they were studied. Death intervened, and removed her before the time became favourable to the reformers, and before her daughter was so far advanced in age as to be fit to receive religious instruction of this deep import. But the affectionate mother had made preparations for the earthly work which she had most at heart. There were slips of paper inserted in the volume, in which, by an appeal to, and a comparison of, various passages in holy writ, the errors and human inventions with which the Church of Rome had defiled the simple offices of Christianity, as created by the divine architect, were pointed out. These controversial topics were treated with a spirit of calmness and Christian charity, which might have been an example to the theologians of the party; but they were clearly, fully, and plainly stated, and supported by the neces-

very pious and religious. Other papers there were which had no reference whatever to polemics, but were the simple effusions of a devoted mind communing with itself. Among these was one frequently used, as it seemed from the state of the manuscript, on which the mother of Mary had transcribed and placed together those affecting words to which the heart has recourse in affliction, and which serve as at once of the sympathy and protection afforded to the children of the penitence. In Mary Arnold's state of mind, these situated her above all the other lessons, which, coming from a hand so dear, had reached her at a time so critical, and in a manner so touching. She read the affecting promise, "I will never leave thee nor forsake thee," and the comforting exhortation, "Call upon me in the day of trouble, and I will deliver thee." She read them, and her heart responded to the conclusion, Surely this is the Word of God!

There are those to whom a sense of religion has come in storm and tempest; there are those whom it has surrounded amid scenes of revelry and idle vanity; there are those, too, who have heard the "still small voice" amid rural scenes and placid contentment. But perhaps the knowledge which cleaveth not to us, is most frequently impressed upon the mind during seasons of affliction; and there are the softening showers which cause the seed of Heaven to spring and take root in the human breast. At least it was thus with Mary Arnold. She was insensible to the discordant noise which rang below, the clang of arms and the jarring symphony of the lenses which they used to force them, the measured shouts of the labouring timbers as they combined their strength for each beam, and gave tone with their voices to the exertions of their arms, and their deeply muttered vows of revenge on the fugitives who had betrayed them at their departure a task so tedious and difficult. None all this din, combined in hideous concert, and oppressive of sight but peace, love, and forgiveness, could direct Mary Arnold from the new course of study on which she had so singularly entered. "The severity of Heaven," she said, "shows me, the wounds which are around are but those of earth and earthly passion."

Meanwhile the noon was passed, and little suspension was made on the iron gate, when they who laboured at it received a sudden reinforcement by the unexpected arrival of Charles of the Cliffhill. He came at the head of a small party, consisting

of four horsemen, who bore in their caps the spig of holly, which was the badge of Arundel.

"What, ho!—my masters," he said, "I bring you a prisoner."

"You had better have brought us liberty," said Dan of the Howletthirst.

Christie looked at the state of affairs with great surprise. "As I were to be hanged for it," he said, "as I say for as little a matter, I could not forbear laughing at seeing men peeping through their own bars like so many rats in a rat-trap, and be with the beard bristled, like the oldest rat in the cellar."

"Hark, thou unarmoured knave," said Edward, "it is the Bob-Poor; and this is neither time, place, nor company for your ruffian jests."

"What, ho! is my young master mad-as-pot?" said Christie, "why, man, were he my own carnal father, instead of being father to half the world, I would have my laugh out. And now it is over, I must assist you, I reckon, for you are setting very grossly about this gear—put the pluck nearer the staple, man, and haul me as true crew through the grates, for that's the best to fly away with a wicket on the shoulders. I have broken into as many grates as you have teeth in your young head—ay, and broke out of them too, as the captains of the Guard of Lookers-on know full well."

Christie did not boast more skill than he really possessed; for, applying their combined strength, under the direction of that experienced engineer, bolt and staple gave way before them, and in less than half-an-hour, the grates which had so long repelled their force stood open before them.

"And now," said Edward, "to home, my master, and pursue the villain Stafford!"

"Halt there," said Christie of the Clithell; "pursue your guest, my master's friend and my oval!—there go two words to that bargain. What the devil deed would you pursue him for?"

"Let me pass," said Edward vehemently, "I will be viled by no man—the villain has murdered my brother!"

"What says he?" said Christie, turning to the others; "murdered! who is murdered, and by whom?"

"The Englishman, Sir Thomas Stafford," said Dan of the

Howlet-kind, "has murdered young Halbert Glendinning yesterday morning, and we have all men to the flag."

"It is a badlan business, I think," said Christie. "First I find you all locked up in your own tower, and next I am come to prevent you bringing a murder that was never committed."

"I tell you," said Edward, "that my brother was slain and buried yesterday morning by this blue Englishman."

"And I tell you," answered Christie, "that I saw him alive and well last night. I would I knew his trick of getting out of the grave; most men find it more hard to break through a gown and than a prison door."

Every body now passed, and looked on Christie in astonishment, until the Sub-Prior, who had hitherto avoided communication with him, came up and required earnestly to know, whether he meant really to maintain that Halbert Glendinning lived.

"Father," he said, with more respect than he usually showed to any one save his master, "I confess I may sometimes jest with those of your coat, but not with you; because, as you may partly recollect, I owe you a life. It is certain as the sun is in heaven, that Halbert Glendinning stopped at the house of my master the Baron of Arundel last night, and that he was father in company with an old man, of whom more anon."

"And where is he now?"

"The devil only can answer that question," replied Christie, "for the devil has possessed the whole family I think. He took fright, the foolish lad, at something or other which our Baron did in his woody house, and so he jumped into the lake and swam ashore like a wild duck. Robin of Redoubt spoiled a good gilding in chasing him this morning."

"And why did he chase the youth?" said the Sub-Prior; "what harm had he done?"

"None that I know of," said Christie; "but such was the Baron's order, being in his mood, and all the world having gone mad, as I have said before."

"Whether away or fast, Edward!" said the monk.

"To Carr-a-a-chaa, Father," answered the youth.—"Mulla and Dea, take peck-axe and mattock, and follow me if you be men!"

"Nicht," said the monk, "and fall not to give us instant notice what you find."

"If you find night there like Halbert Glenwading," said Christie, hallooing after Edward, "I will be bound to set him rambling.—'Tis a sight to see how that fellow takes the heat!—It is in the time of action men see what stuff are made of. Halbert was eye stepping up and down like a roe, and his brother used to sit in the chimney-cook with his back and one-like truck.—But the lad was like a loaded backshot, which will stand in the corner as quiet as an old crotch until ye draw the trigger, and then there is nothing but flash and smoke.—But here comes my prisoner; and, setting other matters aside, I must pay a word with you, Sir Sub-Prior, respecting him. I came on before to treat about him, but I was interrupted with this business."

As he spoke, two more of Arosell's troopers rode into the courtyard, leading between them a horse, on which, with his hands bound to his side, sat the reformed prisoner, Henry Warden.

CHAPTER THIRTY-FIRST.

As silent I knew him a deep-sifted youth,
Gone, thoughtful, and reserved, among his peers,
Turning the leaves of sport and feud to leisure,
Staring his lady to believe his word.

OLD PLAY.

THE Sub-Prior, at the Prior's request, had not failed to return to the tower, into which he was followed by Christie of the Cistertal, who, shutting the door of the apartment, drew near, and began his discourse with great confidence and familiarity.

"My master," he said, "sends me with his commendations to you, Sir Sub-Prior, above all the community of Saint Mary's, and more specially those even to the Abbot himself; for though he be termed my lord, and so forth, all the world knows that you are the master of the tower."

"If you have ought to say to me concerning the community," said the Sub-Prior, "it were well you proceeded in it without further delay. Time presses, and the tale of young Glenwading dwells on my mind."

"I will be certain for him, body for body," said Christine. "I do protest to you, as sure as I am a living man, as sure as he is me."

"Should I not tell his unhappy mother the joyful tidings?" said Father Rustan,—"and yet better wait till they come from searching the grave. Well, Sir Jackson, you manage to me from your master?"

"My lord and master," said Christine, "half good reason to believe that, from the information of certain back friends, whom he will reward at some leisure, your reverend community hath been led to deem him ill attached to Holy Church, allied with heretics, and those who favour heresy, and a dangerous ally the spells of your Abbey."

"Be brief, good headman," said the Sub-Prior, "for the devil is ever ready to be lured when he prevaileth."

"Briefly then—my master deems your Brotherhood; and to secure himself from the maligner's calumnies, he sends to your Abbot that Henry Warden, whose sermons have turned the world upside down, to be dealt with as Holy Church deems, and as the Abbot's pleasure may determine."

The Sub-Prior's eyes sparkled at the intelligence; for it had been accounted a matter of great importance that this man should be arrested, possessed, as he was known to be, of so much real and popularity, that scarcely the preaching of Kier himself had been more availing to the people, and more formidable to the Church of Rome.

In fact, that ancient system, which so well accommodated its doctrines to the wants and wishes of a barbarous age, had, since the art of printing, and the gradual diffusion of knowledge, laid forth his own huge batteries, into which his thousand reforming schemes were darting their harpoons. The Roman Church of Scotland, in particular, was at her last gasp, scarcely blowing blood and water, yet still with unexhausted, though annual exertions, maintaining the conflict with the weakness, who on every side were plunging their weapons into her bulwarks. In many large towns, the monasteries had been suppressed by the fury of the populace; in other places, their possessions had been usurped by the power of the reforming nobles; but still the hierarchy made a part of the common law of the realm, and might claim both its property and its privileges wherever it had the means of asserting them. The

community of Saint Mary's of Kinnaird was considered as being particularly in this situation. They had retained undiminished their territorial power and influence; and the great barons in the neighbourhood, partly from their attachment to the party in the state who still upheld the old system of religion, partly because each grasped the share of the prey which the others must necessarily claim, had as yet abstained from despoiling the Hibernians. The community was also understood to be protected by the powerful Earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, whose sincere attachment to the Catholic faith secured at a later period the great rebellion of the north of Elizabeth.

Thus happily placed, it was supposed by the friends of the decaying cause of the Roman Catholic faith, that some determined example of courage and resolution, carried along the franchise of the church were yet entire, and her jurisdiction undisturbed, might awe the progress of the new opinions into activity; and, protected by the laws which still existed, and by the terror of the sovereign, might be the means of securing the territory which Rome yet possessed in Scotland, and perhaps of recovering that which she had lost.

The matter had been considered more than once by the northern Catholics of Scotland, and they had held communication with those of the south. Father Baxter, devoted by his public and private vows, had sought the flame, and had eagerly advised that they should execute the doom of heresy on the first infidel preacher, or, according to his sense, on the first heretic of influence, who should venture within the precincts of the Hibernians. A host, naturally kind and noble, was, in this instance, as it has been in many more, deceived by his own generosity. Father Baxter would have been a bad administrator of the imperial power of Spain, where that power was omnipotent, and whose judgment was carried without danger to those who reflected it. In such a situation his superior might have resisted in favour of the criminal, when it was at his pleasure to crush or to place at freedom. But in Scotland, during this crisis, the case was entirely different. The question was, whether one of the spirituality dared, at the hazard of his own life, to step forward to assert and avow the rights of the church. Was there any who would venture to yield the slender in her case, or must it remain like that in the hand

of a painted *Figlio*, the object of devotion instead of terror! The stain was calculated to excite the soul of Rastene, for it comprised the question, whether he dared, at all hazards to himself, to accede with stoical assent to a manner which, according to the general opinion, was to be advantageous to the church, and, according to sacred law, and to his firm belief, was not only possible but meritorious.

While such resolutions were agitated amongst the Catholics, others placed a virtue within their grasp. Henry Warden had, with the assent proper to the ecclesiastical retirement of his age, transgressed, in the reluctance of his soul, the bounds of the doctrinal liberty allowed to his age as far, that it was thought the Queen's personal dignity was concerned in bringing him to justice. He fled from Edinburgh, with recommendations, however, from Lord James Stewart, afterwards the celebrated Earl of Murray, to some of the Border chieftains of inferior rank, who were privately conjured to procure him safe passage into England. One of the principal persons to whom such recommendation was addressed, was Julian Aroncl; for so yet, and for a considerable time afterwards, the correspondence and interest of Lord James lay rather with the subordinate leaders than with the chiefs of great power, and men of distinguished influence upon the Border. Julian Aroncl had mingled without scruple with both parties—yet, had as he was, he certainly would not have practised slight against the great whom Lord James had recommended to his hospitality, had it not been for what he termed the preacher's efficient intermeddling in his family affairs. But when he had determined to make Warden run the lecture he had read him, and the scene of public scandal which he had acted in his hall, Julian resolved, with the constitutional shrewdness of his disposition, to confuse his vengeance with his interest. And therefore, instead of doing violence on the person of Henry Warden within his own castle, he determined to deliver him up to the Community of Saint Mary's, and at once make them the instrument of his own revenge, and found a share of personal recompense, either in money, or in a grant of *Abbay lands* at a low quitrent, which last began now to be the established form in which the temporal nobles purchased the spirituality.

The Abb-Prior, therefore, of Saint Mary's, respectfully and

the staidest, active, and indefatigable enemy of the church, delivered into his hand, and felt himself called upon to make good his promise to the friends of the Catholic faith, by spending hereby in the blood of one of its most ardent professors.

To the honour more of Father Eustace's heart than of his conscience, the communication that Harry Warden was placed within his power, struck him with more sorrow than triumph; but his next feelings were those of exultation. "It is said," he said to himself, "no cause knows suffering, it is cruel to cause human blood to be spilled; but the judge to whom the sword of Saint Paul, as well as the keys of Saint Peter, are confided, must not shrink from his task. Our weapon returns into our own hands, if not wielded with a steady and unflinching hand against the irreconcilable enemies of the Holy Church. Forward, then! It is the doom he has incurred, and were all the heretics in Scotland armed and at his back, they should not prevent his being pronounced, and, if possible, enforced.—Bring the heretic before me," he said, waving his commands aloft, and in a tone of authority.

Harry Warden was led in, his hands still bound, but his feet at liberty.

"Clear the apartment," said the Sub-Treasurer, "of all but the necessary guard in the prison."

All retired except Christie of the Chastell, who, having dismissed the inferior troopers whom he commanded, unsheathed his sword, and placed himself beside the door, as if taking upon him the character of sentinel.

Two judges and the accused met face to face, and in that of look was reflected the noble confidence of resistance. The monk was stout, at the utmost risk to himself and his community, to surmount what in his ignorance he considered to be his duty. The pretender, actuated by a better interest, yet not a more ardent zeal, was prompt to submit to execution for God's sake, and to such, were it necessary, his witness with his blood. Placed at such a distance of time as better enables us to appreciate the tendency of the principles on which they severally acted, we cannot doubt to which the palm ought to be awarded. But the zeal of Father Eustace was as free from passion and personal views as if it had been started in a better cause.

They approached each other, armed each and prepared for

intellectual conflict, and each intently regarding his opponent, as if either hoped to spy out some defect, some chink in the armor of his antagonist.—As they gazed on each other, old recollections began to awake in either bosom, at the sight of features long unseen and much altered, but not forgotten. The brow of the Sub-Prior darkened by degrees its frown of command, the look of calm yet stern defiance gradually vanished from that of Warden, and both lost for an instant that of gloomy solemnity. They had been ardent and intimate friends in youth at a foreign university, but had been long separated from each other; and the change of name, which the preacher had adopted from motives of safety, and the mark from the common custom of the convent, had prevented the possibility of their hitherto recognising each other in the opposite parts which they had been playing in the great polemical and political drama. But now the Sub-Prior exclaimed, "Henry Wallowood!" and the preacher replied, "William Allen!"—and, stirred by the old familiar names, and nerve-to-be-forgotten recollections of college studies and college intimacy, their hands were for a moment locked in each other.

"Remove his hands," said the Sub-Prior, and assisted Christie in performing that office with his own hands, although the preacher scarcely would consent to be unbound, repeating with emphasis, that he rejoiced in the cause for which he suffered chains. When his hands were at liberty, however, he showed his sense of the kindness by again exchanging a grasp and a look of affection with the Sub-Prior.

The salute was frank and generous on either side, yet it was but the friendly recognition and greeting which are wont to take place between adverse champions, who in grilling is late but all is known. As each felt the pressure of the situation in which they stood, he quitted the grasp of the other's hand, and fell back, confronting each other with looks more calm and serene than expressive of any other passion. The Sub-Prior was the first to speak.

"And in this, then, the end of that restless activity of mind, that bold and indefatigable love of truth that urged investigation to its utmost limits, and seemed to take heaven itself by storm—is this the termination of Wallowood's career?—And having known and loved him during the best years of our youth, do we meet in our old age as judge and criminal?"

"Not as judge and criminal," said Henry Warton,—for to avoid confusion we describe him by his later and best known name—"Not as judge and criminal do we mean, but as a misguided opposer and his ready and devoted victim. I, too, may ask, are these the harvest of the rich hopes excited by the divinest learning, acute logical powers, and varied knowledge of William Allen, that he should seek to be the solitary drone of a cell, graced only above the swarm with the high commission of exciting Roman malice on all who oppose Roman imposture?"

"Not to thee," answered the Sub-Prior, "be ascribed—not unto thee, nor unto mortal man, will I render an account of the power with which the Church may have availed me. It was granted but as a deposit for her welfare—the her welfare it shall at every risk be sacrificed, without fear and without favour."

"I expected no less from your magnified soul," answered the preacher; "and as we have you not one on whom you may lawfully exercise your authority, ensure that his mind at least will defy your influence, as the snows of that Mount Etna which we saw together, dwelt not under the heat of the hottest summer sun."

"I do believe thee," said the Sub-Prior, "I do believe that thou hast indeed mental vulnerabilities by force. Let it yield them to persuasion. Let us debate these matters of faith, as we once were wont to conduct our scholastic disputes, when hours, nay, days, glided past in the mutual exercise of our intellectual powers. It may be thou mayest yet hear the voice of the shepherd, and return to the universal fold."

"No, Allen," replied the preacher, "this is no vain question, defined by dreaming scholastics, on which they may whet their intellectual faculties until the very metal be wasted away. The errors which I combat are like those fables which are only cast out by fasting and prayer. Alas! not many vines, not many learned, are chosen; the cottage and the hamlet shall in our days bear witness against the schools and their disciples. Thy very wisdom, which is foolishness, hath made thee, as the Greeks of old, hold as foolishness that which is the only true wisdom."

"Then," said the Sub-Prior, sternly, "is the more cost of ignorant enthusiasm, which appeals from learning and from authority, from the sure guidance of that lamp which God hath afforded us in the Councils and in the Fathers of the Church, to a rash, self-willed, and arbitrary interpretation of the Scriptures,

wrested according to the private opinion of each speculating house."

"I decline to reply to the charge," replied Warden. "The question at issue between your Church and mine, is, whether we will be judged by the Holy Scriptures, or by the devices and decisions of man not less subject to error than ourselves, and who have defiled our holy religion with vain devices, raised up idols of stone and wood, in form of those who, when they lived, were but sinful creatures, to stage the worship due only to the Creator—established a toll-house between heaven and hell, that profitable purgatory of which the Pope keeps the keys, like an an insipid judge nominally punishment for ladies, and"—

"Silence, blasphemer," said the Sub-Prior, sternly, "or I will have thy violent outburst stopped with a gag!"

"Ay," replied Warden, "such is the freedom of the Christiana conference to which Emma's guests so kindly invite us!—the gag—the rack—the axe—the rack—the axe—the rack—the axe. But know thou, mine ancient friend, that the character of thy former suspension is not so changed by age, but that he still deems to endure for the cause of truth all that thy proud hierarchy shall dare to inflict."

"Of that," said the monk, "I nothing doubt.—Thou wert ever a lion to turn against the spear of the lanceer, not a dog to be dismayed at the sound of his bays."—He walked through the room in silence. "Well-wad!" he said at length, "we are no longer be friends. Our faith, our hope, our anchor on earth, is no longer the same."

"Deep is my sorrow that thou speakest truth. May God so judge me," said the Reformer, "as I would buy the forgiveness of a soul like thine with my dearest heart's blood."

"To thee, and with better reason, do I return the wish," replied the Sub-Prior; "it is such an arm as those that should defend the interests of the Church, and it is now directing the battering-ram against them, and rendering precarious the breach through which all that is greedy, and all that is base, and all that is mutable and hot-headed in this unsteady age, directly hope to advance to destruction and to spoil. But since such is our fate, that we can no longer fight side by side as friends, let us at least act as generous enemies. You cannot have forgotten,

*'O gaze forth, del' angelic satyrs!
Kiss me, say, kiss' th' holy dragon!'*—

Although, perhaps," he added, stopping short in his quotation, "your new faith forbids you to reserve a place in your memory, even for what high poets have recorded of loyal faith and generous sentiment."

"The faith of Buchanan," replied the preacher, "the faith of Buchanan and of Bora, cannot be unfriendly to literature. But the poet you have quoted affects strange ideas for a disolute court than for a convent."

"I might start on your Theodore Bora," said the Sub-Prince, smiling; "but I hate the judgment that, like the flesh fly, settles over whatever is sound, to detect and settle upon some spot which is tainted. But to the purpose. If I conduct thee or send thee a prisoner to Saint Mary's, thou art bought a tenant of the dungeon, tomorrow a burden to the gibbet tree. If I were to let thee go loose at large, I were thereby wronging the Holy Church, and breaking mine own solemn vow. Other resolutions may be adopted in the capital, or better than my speechy ones. Will thou remain a true prisoner upon thy parole, bound as we know, as is the plume amongst the warriors of this country? Will thou solemnly promise that thou wilt do so, and that at my summons thou wilt present thyself before the Abbot and Chapter at Saint Mary's, and that thou wilt not stir from the house above a quarter of a mile in any direction? Will thou, I say, engage me thy word for that and such is the sure trust which I repose in thy good faith, that thou shalt remain here unharmed and unmolested, a prisoner at large, subject only to appear before our court when called upon?"

The preacher paused—"I am unwilling," he said, "to fetter my native liberty by any self-adapted engagement. But I am already in your power, and you may bind me to my word. By such promise, to abide within a certain limit, and to appear when called upon, I renounce not my liberty which I at present possess, and am free to exercise; but, on the contrary, being in bonds, and at your mercy, I acquire thereby a liberty which I at present possess not. I will therefore accept of thy proffer, as what is cheerfully offered on thy part, and may be honourably accepted on mine."

"Stay yet," said the Sub-Prince, "one important part of thy engagement is forgotten—thou art further to promise, that while thou art at liberty, thou wilt not preach or teach, directly or indirectly, any of those pestilential heresies by which so many

scale have been in this our day won over from the kingdom of light to the kingdom of darkness."

"There we break off our treaty," said Warden, firmly—"We write no if I preach not the Gospel!"

The Sub-Prior's countenance became divided, and he again passed the apartment, and muttered, "A plague upon the self-willed fool!" then stopped short in his walk, and proceeded in his argument—"Why, by thine own reasoning, Henry, thy refusal here is but puerile obstinacy. It is in my power to place you where your preaching can reach no human ear; to preaching therefore to abstain from it, you grant nothing which you haven't in your power to refuse."

"I know not that," replied Henry Warden, "thou mayest indeed cast me into a dungeon, but can I forget that my Master hath not task-work for me to perform even in that dreary mansion! The chains of Saints here, we say, been the means of breasting the hosts of Satan. In a prison, holy Paul found the pillar whom he brought to believe the word of salvation, he and all his house."

"Nay," said the Sub-Prior, in a tone half-ironic anger and scorn, "if you match yourself with the blessed Apostle, it were time we had done—prepare to endure what thy folly, as well as thy luxury, deserves.—Died him, soldier."

With proud satisfaction to his fate, and regarding the Sub-Prior with something which almost amounted to a smile of superiority, the preacher placed his arms so that the bonds could be again fastened round him.

"Spare me not," he said to Christie; for even that refusal hesitated to draw the cord strictly.

The Sub-Prior, meanwhile, looked at him then under his cord, which he had drawn over his head, and partly over his face, as if he wished to shade his own emotions. They were those of a husbandman within point-blank shot of a noble stag, who is yet too much struck with his majesty of front and of action to take aim at him. They were those of a father, who, leveling his gun at a magnificent eagle, is yet reluctant to use his advantage when he sees the noble coverage of the hawk prancing himself in proud defiance of whatever may be attempted against him. The heart of the Sub-Prior (ignited as he was) recoiled, and he doubted if he ought to purchase, by a rigorous discharge of what he deemed his duty, the remorse he ought

afterwards led by the death of one so nobly independent in thought and character; the friend, brother, of his own happiest years, during which they had, side by side, striven in the noble race of knowledge, and indulged their intervals of repose in the lighter studies of classical and general letters.

The Sub-Prior's hand pressed his half-embrowned cheek, and his eye, more completely obscured, was bent on the ground, as if to hide the workings of his swelling sorrow.

"Were but Edward safe from the infection," he thought to himself—"Edward, whose eager and enthusiastic mind pressed forward in the chase of all that hath even the shadow of knowledge, I might trust this enthusiast with the women, after due caution to them that they cannot, without guilt, attend to his ravings."

As the Sub-Prior revolved these thoughts, and delayed the definitive order which was to denounce the fate of the prisoner, a sudden noise at the entrance of the tower directed his attention for an instant, and, his cheek and brow flushed with all the glow of heat and determination, Edward Glendinning rushed into the room.

CHAPTER THIRTY-SECOND.

There is my grave of other days
Along the margin path I wander,
And visit my solitary way
To the sad shrine that marks me yonder.

There, in the silent convent's shade,
All hopes may be forgiven;
And there for thee, oh! dearest maid,
My wishes shall rise to heaven.
THE CHANT, LAST OF THE MONASTERY.

THE first words which Edward uttered were,—*"My brother is safe, recovered labor—he is safe, thank God, and lives!"*—There is not in CROUCH-ABBEY a grave, nor a vestige of a grave. The turf around the fountain has neither been disturbed by pick-axe, spade, nor trowel, since the deer's-hair first sprung there. *"He lives as surely as I live!"*

The symptoms of the youth—the steadily with which he

looked and moved—the springy step, outstretched hand, and radiant eye, reminded Henry Warden of Halbert, so kindly his guide. The brothers had indeed a strong family resemblance, though Halbert was the more athletic and active in his person, taller and better knit in the limbs, and though Edward had, on ordinary occasions, a look of more habitual sweetness and more profound reflection. The preacher was interested as well as the Sub-Prior.

"Of whom do you speak, my son?" he said, in a tone as unexpected as if his own life had not been at the same moment trembling in the balance, and as if a danger and death did not appear to be his nearest doom.—"Of whom, I say, speak you? Of a youth somewhat older than you seem to be—brown-haired, open-featured, taller and stronger than you appear, yet having much of the same air and of the same tone of voice—and such a one is the brother whom you seek, it may be I can tell you more of him."

"Speak, then, for Heaven's sake," said Edward—"life or death lies on thy tongue!"

The Sub-Prior joined eagerly in the same request, and, without waiting to be urged, the preacher gave a minute account of the circumstances under which he met the older Glendinning, with so exact a description of his person, that there remained no doubt as to his identity. When he mentioned that Halbert Glendinning had conducted him to the dell in which they found the grass bloody, and a grave newly closed, and told how the youth accused himself of the slaughter of Sir Percie Shafte, the Sub-Prior looked on Edward with astonishment.

"Didst thou not say, even now," he said, "that there was no vestige of a grave in that spot?"

"No more vestige of the earth having been removed than if the turf had grown there since the days of Adam," replied Edward Glendinning. "It is true," he added, "that the adjacent grass was trampled and bloody."

"There are delusions of the Enemy," said the Sub-Prior, crossing himself.—"Christian men may no longer doubt of it."

"But as it be so," said Warden, "Christian men might better guard themselves by the sword of prayer than by the life-line of a scholastical spell."

"The badge of our salvation," said the Sub-Prior, "cannot be so turned—the sign of the cross banisheth all evil spirits."

"Ay," answered Henry Warden, up and armed for controversy, "but it should be borne in the heart, not scored with the dagger in the air. That very responsive sin, through which your hand passes, shall as soon bear the imprint of your action, as the external action shall smite the fleshly body who substitutes vain notions of the body, life, gentleness, and signs of the cross, for the living and heart-born duties of truth and good works."

"I pity thee," said the Sub-Prior, as ardently ready for polemics as himself,—*"I pity thee, Henry, and reply not to thee. Thou sayest as well whence faith and measure the cross with a nerve, as make out the power of holy words, deeds, and signs, by the strong grasp of thine own reason."*

"Not by mine own reason would I judge them," said Warden; "but by His holy Word, that unfolding and covering lamp of our paths, compared to which human reason is but as a glimmering and fading taper, and your boasted tradition only a misleading willfire. Show me your Scriptures warmed for working virtue to such vain signs and notions?"

"I offered thee a fair field of debate," said the Sub-Prior, "which thou didst refuse. I will not at present resume the controversy."

"Were there my last accounts," said the reformer, "and were they viewed at the stake, half-drenched with smoke, and as the flames kindled into a blaze around me, with that last utterance I would testify against the superstitious devices of Rome."

The Sub-Prior suppressed with pain the controversial answer which arose to his lips, and, turning to Edward Glendinning, he said, "there could be now no doubt that his mother ought presently to be informed that her son lived."

"I told you that two hours since," said Christie of the Clinchill, "so you would have believed me. But it seems you are more willing to take the word of an old grey woman, whose life has been spent in pattering horsey, than mine, though I never made a foray in my life without duly saying my paternoster."

"Go, then," said Father Easter to Edward, "let thy ever-loving mother know that her son is restored to her from the grave, His the child of the widow of Sarnpheld; at the intercession," he added, looking at Henry Warden, "of the blessed Saint whom I invoked in his behalf."

"Deserved thyself," said Warden, instantly, "then, art a doubter of others. It was no dead man, no creature of clay,

when the blessed Tadhg invoked, when, stung by the reproach of the threnological woman, he prayed that her son's soul might come into him again."

"It was by his intercession, however," repeated the Sub-Prior, "for what says the Vulgate? *Quia ita est scriptum: 'In credidit Dominus vocem Moysi; et reversus est animas suam filium suum, et reversus;'*—and thinkest thou the intercession of a glorified saint is more feeble than when he walks on earth, attended in a tabernacle of clay, and seeing but with the eye of flesh?"

During this controversy Edward Glendinning appeared restless and impatient, agitated by some strong internal feeling, but whether of joy, grief, or expectation, his consciousness did not expressly declare. He took now the unusual freedom to break in upon the discourse of the Sub-Prior, who, notwithstanding his resolution to the contrary, was obviously kindling in the spirit of controversy, which Edward diverted by conjuring his conscience to allow him to speak a few words with him in private.

"Remove the prisoner," said the Sub-Prior to Christie; "look to him carefully that he escape not; but for thy life do him no injury."

His commands being obeyed, Edward and the monk were left alone, when the Sub-Prior thus addressed him.

"What haile come over thee, Edward, that thy eye kindles so wildly, and thy cheek is thus changing from ashen to pale? Why didst thou break in so hastily and unadvisedly upon the argument with which I was prosecuting yonder heretic? And wherefore dost thou not tell thy mother that her son is restored to her by the intercession, so Holy Church well warrants us to believe, of blessed Saint Benedict, the patron of our Order? For if ever my prayers were put forth to him with aid, it hath been in behalf of this house, and thine eyes have seen the result—go tell it to thy mother."

"I must tell her then," said Edward, "that if she has rejoined me son, another is lost to her."

"What meanest thou, Edward? what language is this?" said the Sub-Prior.

"Father," said the youth, kneeling down to him, "my sin and my shame shall be told thee, and thou shalt witness my penance with thine own eyes."

"I comprehend thee not," said the Sub-Prior. "What

must then have done to deserve such self-accusation?—That thou too hast done," he added, knitting his brows, "to the dance of luxury, ever most effectual tempter of those, who, like yonder unhappy man, are distinguished by their love of knowledge?"

"I am guiltless in that matter," answered Glendinning, "nor have presumed to think otherwise than thou, my kind father, hast taught me, and than the Church allows."

"And what is it then, my son," said the Sub-Prior, kindly, "which thus afflicts thy conscience? speak it to me, that I may answer thee in the words of comfort; for the Church's mercy is great to those obedient children who doubt not her power."

"My conscience will require her mercy," replied Edward. "My brother Herbert—an kind, so brave, so gentle, who spoke not, thought not, acted not, but is here to me, whose hand had aided me in every difficulty, whose eye watched over me like the eagle's over her nestlings, when they pass their first flight from the eyrie—this brother, so kind, so gently affectionate—I heard of his murder, his bloody, his violent death, and I rejoined—I heard of his unexpected restoration, and I answered!"

"Edward," said the father, "thou art hardly thyself—what could urge thee to such odious ingratitude?—In your hurry of spirits you have mistaken the confused heat of your feelings—Go, my son, pray and compose thy mind—we will speak of this another time."

"No, father, no," said Edward, vehemently, "now or never!—I will find the means to tame this rebellious heart of mine, or I will tear it out of my bosom—Mistake its passions?—No, father, grief can ill be mistaken for joy—all wept, all delighted around me—my mother—the monks—the too, the cause of my crime—all wept—and I—I could hardly disguise my brutal and hearse joy under the appearance of sorrow—Brother, I said, I cannot give thee tears, but I will give thee blood—Yes, father, as I courted him after love, while I kept watch upon the English prisoner, and said, I am on hand sooner to hope and to happiness!"

"I understood thee not, Edward," said the monk, "nor can I conceive in what way thy brother's supposed murder should have affected thee with such unnatural joy—Surely the world desires to succeed him in his small possessions!"

"Poth! the paltry trick!" said Edward with the same emotion. "No, father, it was rivalry—it was jealous rage—it was the love of Mary Anne, that rendered me the unaccused watch I accuse myself!"

"Of Mary Anne!" said the Priest—"of a lady as high above other of you in name and in rank? How dared Halbert—how dared you, to presume to lift your eye to her but in honor and respect, as a superior of another degree from yours?"

"Whom did I love with for the emotion of jealousy?" replied Edward, "and in what but a line of dead ancestors was Mary, our mother's guest and foster-child, distant from us, with whom she was brought up!—Enough, we loved—we both loved her! But the passion of Halbert was requited. He knew it not, he saw it not—but I was sharper-eyed. I saw that even when I was more approved, Halbert was more beloved. With me she would sit for hours at our common task with the cold simplicity and indifference of a sister, but with Halbert she treated not herself. She changed color, she was distressed when he approached her; and when he left her she was sad, pensive, and solitary. I knew all this—I saw my dead's advancing progress in her affections—I love it, father, and yet I hated him not—I could not hate him!"

"And well for thee that thou didst not," said the father; "well and headstrong as thou art, wouldst thou hate thy brother for partaking in thine own folly?"

"Father," replied Edward, "the world esteems thee wise, and holds thy knowledge of mankind high; but thy question shows that thou hast never loved. It was by an effort that I saved myself from hating my kind and affectionate brother, who, all unconscious of my rivalry, was perpetually looking me with kindness. Nay, there were moments of my mind in which I could return that kindness for a time with energetic enthusiasm. Never did I feel this so strongly as on the night which parted us. But I could not help rejoicing when he was swept from my path—could not help anything when he was again restored to be a stumbling-block in my path."

"May God be gracious to thee, my son!" said the monk; "this is an awful state of mind. Even in such evil mood did the fine creature rise up against his brother, because Abel's was the more acceptable sacrifice."

"I will wrestle with the demon which has haunted me,

father," replied the youth, firmly—"I will wrestle with him, and I will subdue him. But first I must recover from the sorrow which has to follow here. I cannot endure that I should see Mary Arnold's eyes again flash with joy at the restoration of her lover. It were a sight to make indeed a second Cain of me! My fierce, turbulent, and transitory joy discharged itself in a threat to unquiet households, and how can I estimate the frenzy of my despair?"

"Madman!" said the Sub-Prior, "at what dreadful crime does thy fury drive?"

"My lot is determined, father," said Edward, in a resolute tone, "I will embrace the spiritual state which you have so oft recommended. It is my purpose to return with you to Saint Mary's, and, with the permission of the Holy Virgin and of Saint Benedict, to offer my profession to the Abbot."

"Not now, my son," said the Sub-Prior, "not in the impetuosity of mood. The wise and good accept not gifts which are made in heat of blood, and which may be after repented of; and shall we make our offerings to wisdom and to goodness (such with him of solemn resolution and deep devotion of mind, there is necessary to make them acceptable to our own frail companions in this valley of darkness? Thus I say to thee, my son, not as meaning to deter thee from the good path thou art now inclined to prefer, but that thou mayest make thy vocation and thine election sure."

"These are actions, father," returned Edward, "which brook no delay, and this is one. It must be done this very now; or it may never be done. Let me go with you; let me not behold the return of Hubert into this house. Shame, and the tears of the injustice I have already done him, will join with these dreadful passions which urge me to do him yet further wrong. Let me then go with you."

"With me, my son," said the Sub-Prior, "thou shalt surely go; but our rule, as well as reason and good order, require that you should dwell a space with us as a probationer, or novice, before taking upon thee those final vows, which, inseparating thee for ever from the world, dedicate thee to the service of Heaven."

"And when shall we set forth, father?" said the youth, as eagerly as if the journey which he was now undertaking led to the pleasure of a summer holiday.

"Then now, if thou wilt," said the Sub-Prior, gliding to his impetuosity—"go, then, and command them to prepare for our departure.—Yet stay," he said, as Edward, with all the weakened enthusiasm of his character, hastened from his presence, "come hither, my son, and kneel down."

Edward obeyed, and knelt down before him. Notwithstanding his slight figure and thin features, the Sub-Prior could, from the energy of his tone, and the earnestness of his devotional manner, impress his pupils and his penitents with an ordinary feelings of personal devotion. His heart always was, as well as seemed to be, in the duty which he was immediately performing; and the spiritual guide who thus shows a deep conviction of the importance of his office, seldom fails to impress a similar feeling upon his hearers. Upon such occasions as the present, his pale body seemed to assume more magnetic stature—his spare and emaciated countenance bore a bold, lofty, and more commanding port—his eyes, always heavenly, trembled as laboring under the immediate impulses of the Divinity—and his whole demeanor seemed to bespeak, not the more ordinary man, but the organ of the Church in which she had vested her high power for delivering sinners from their load of iniquity.

"First then, my fair son," said he, "dislodge the circumstances which have thus suddenly determined thee to a religious life?"

"The one I have confessed, my father," answered Edward, "but I have not yet told of a strange appearance, which, acting in my mind, hath, I think, aided to determine my resolution."

"Tell it then now," returned the Sub-Prior; "it is thy duty to have me enlightened in ought, so that thereby I may understand the temptation that hurls thee."

"I tell it with unwillingness," said Edward; "for although, God wot, I speak but the mere truth, yet even while my tongue speaks it as truth, my eye can realize it as false."

"Yet say the whole," said Father Eustace; "either fear strikes from me, seeing I may have reason for doubting as true that which others might regard as fiction."

"Know, then, father," replied Edward, "that heretic hope and despair—and, heaven! what a hope!—the hope to find the corpse mangled and crushed hardly in strength the bloody day which the foot of the scornful victor had trod down upon my good, my gentle, my sanguine brother,—I aped to the

glass called Confession-shine; but, as your reverence has been already informed, neither the grave which my unbelieved widow had in spite of my better self hoped to see, nor any appearance of the earth having been opened, was visible in the solitary spot where Martin had, at morning yesterday, seen the fatal fallide. You know our fatherless, father. The place had an evil name, and this deception of the night misled them to leave it. My companions became affrighted, and hastened down the glass as men caught in toilsomen. My hopes were too much blasted, my mind too much agitated, to fear either the living or the dead. I descended the glass more slowly than they, often looking back, and not ill pleased with the politeness of my companions, which left me to my own popple and lonely lament, and induced them to hasten into the toiler state. They were already out of sight, and had conceived the windings of the glass, when, looking back, I saw a female form standing beside the fountain!"—

"How, my fair son?" said the Sub-Prior, "behave you just not with your present attention?"

"I just not, father," answered the youth, "it may be I shall never just again—surely not for many a day. I saw, I say, the form of a female clad in white, such as the Spirit which haunts the house of Armet is supposed to be. Believe me, my father, for, by heaven and earth, I saw naught but what I saw with these eyes!"

"I believe thee, my son," said the monk; "proceed in thy strange story."

"The apparition," said Edmund Offendening, "saw, and thus ran her leg; for, strange as it may seem to you, her words abide by my remembrance as if they had been wing to me from halfway upward—

"These who seek in my fountain here,
 Whose thoughts and hopes then don't not see;
 Whose heart within they'd wildly glad
 Whose heart the love don't dark and red;
 His close heart, then don't not here
 Grown or with, grown or here;
 The Dead Alive is gone and bid—
 Go then and join the Living Dead!"

"The Living Dead, whose other love
 Of silence such thoughts as these had none,
 Whose heart within the children read
 Of passion by their tears signed;

Where, under ead and eadens share,
 This hope are eadred, wild waken glen
 Back the eadens's eadred ead,
 Eadred and ead be the ead,
 Ead the ead, and ead the ead,
 To the eadred eadred ead.

"Tha a wild lay," said the Sub-Prætor, "and eadred, I fear me, with no good end. But we have power to turn the mad-captains of Seaton to his eadred. Edward, thou shalt go with me as thou eadred, thou shalt prove the life for which I have long thought thee best fitted—thou shalt aid, my son, this trembling band of eadred to sustain the Holy Ark, which hold unshattered men press eadred forward to touch and to profess.—With thou not first see thy mother?"

"I will see no one," said Edward, hastily; "I will risk nothing that may shake the purpose of my heart. From Saint Mary's they shall learn my destination—all of them shall learn it. My mother—Mary Annet—my eadred and happy brother—they shall all know that Edward has no longer to the world to be a dog on their happiness. Mary shall no longer need to constrain her looks and expressions to eadred because I am eadred. She shall no longer"—

"My son," said the Sub-Prætor, interrupting him, "it is not by looking back on the vanities and eadred of this world, that we fit ourselves for the discharge of eadred which are not of it. Go, get our horses ready, and, as we eadred the eadred together, I will teach thee the eadred through which the eadred and eadred men of old had that precious eadred, which can convert eadred into happiness."

CHAPTER THIRTY-THIRD.

For, as my eadred, this eadred is all eadred,
 Like to the eadred of the eadred eadred,
 Eadred by the eadred eadred through the eadred,
 While the eadred eadred, eadred, eadred the eadred!
 Madmen, eadred; 'till eadred eadred to eadred it.

OLD MAN.

Edward, with the speed of one who doubts the eadredness of his own resolution, hastened to prepare the horses for their

departure, and at the same time thanked and dismissed the neighbours who had come to his assistance, and who were not a little surprised both at the suddenness of his proposed departure, and at the turn affairs had taken.

"Haste's cold hospitality," quoth Dan of the Howlet-kind to his comrades; "I trust the Goodfellow's may die and come alive right off, ere I put foot to stirrup again for the matter."

Martin soothed them by placing food and liquor before them. They ate silently, however, and departed in bad humour.

The joyful news that Halbert Goodfellow lived, was quickly communicated through the snowing family. The mother wept and thanked Heaven alternately; and, her habits of domestic economy yielding as her feelings became calmer, she observed, "It would be an unco task to mend the patch, and what were they to do while they were broken in that fashion? At open seams dogs come in."

This remark, "She says thought Halbert was over gleg at his weapons to be killed so easily by my Sir Francis of them a'. They might say of these Goodfellow as they lived; but they had not the pit and wool of a money Gent, when it came to close grips."

On Mary Arnold the impression was inconceivably deeper. She had but newly learned to pray, and it seemed to her that her prayers had been instantly answered—But the consolations of Heaven, which she had learned to explore in the words of Scripture, had descended upon her after a manner almost marvellous, and recalled the dead from the grave at the sound of her lamentations. There was a dangerous degree of enthusiasm in this strain of feeling, but it originated in the purest devotion.

A solemn and unobtrusive matter, one of the few articles of most costly attire which she possessed, was devoted to the purpose of wrapping up and concealing the sacred volume, which henceforth she was to regard as her chiefest treasure, lamenting only that, for want of a fitting interpreter, much must remain to her a book closed and a fountain sealed. She was conscious of the yet greater danger she incurred, of putting an imperfect or even false sense upon some of the doctrines which appeared most comprehensible. But Heaven had provided against both these hazards.

While Edward was preparing the horses, Christie of the Chesham again solicited his orders respecting the reform

preacher, Henry Warden, and again the worthy man's kindness to succour in his own mind the compassion and esteem which, almost in spite of him, he could not help feeling for his former companion, with the duty which he owed to the Church. The unexpected resolution of Edward had removed, he thought, the chief objection to his being left at Glenside.

"If I carry this Widdow, or Warden, to the Monastery," he thought, "he must die—die in his hermitage—poorish body and soul. And though such a measure was once thought advisable, to strike terror into the heretics, yet such is now their daily increasing strength, that it may rather rouse them to fury and to revenge. True, he refuses to pledge himself to abstain from sowing his tares among the wheat; but the ground here is too barren to receive them. I fear not his making apostrophe to these poor women, the virgins of the Church, and bend up as due obedience to her behests. The keen, searching, inquiring, and bold disposition of Edward, might have afforded fuel to the fire, but that is removed, and there is nothing left which the flame may catch to—There shall he have no power to spread his evil doctrines abroad, and yet his life shall be preserved, and it may be his soul rescued as a prey from the toiler's net. I will myself contend with him in argument; for when we stalled in common, I yielded not to him, and surely the cause for which I struggle will support me, were I yet much weaker than I deem myself. Were this man reclaimed from his errors, an hundred-fold more advantage would arise to the Church from his spiritual regeneration, than from his temporal death."

Having finished these meditations, in which there was at once goodness of disposition and narrowness of principle, a considerable portion of self-opinion and no small degree of self-deception, the Sub-Prior commanded the preacher to be brought into his presence.

"Henry," he said, "whatever a rigid sense of duty may demand of me, ancient friendship and Christian compassion forbid me to lead thee to eternal death. Thou wert wont to be generous, though stern and stubborn in thy resolves; let not thy sense of what thine own thoughts term duty, draw thee farther than mine have done. Remember, that every sheep whom thou shalt have led astray from the fold, will be demanded to thee and through eternity of him who hath left thee the liberty of doing such evil. I ask no engagement of

then, were that thou wert a prisoner on thy word at this tower, and wilt appear when summoned."

"Thou hast found an invention to bind my hands," replied the preacher, "more sure than would have been the heaviest shackles in the prison, or the convent. I will not readily do what may endanger them with thy unhappy inquiries, and I will be the more cautious, because, if we had further opportunity of conference, I trust thou wouldest not yet be moved as a heated iron, the burning, and that, coming from the library of Aristotle, that trader in human soul and human soul, I may yet assist thee to lay hold on the Rock of Ages."

The Sub-Prior heard the sentiment, so similar to that which had occurred to himself, with the same kindly feelings with which the gamecock knew and replied to the challenge of his rival.

"I bless God and Our Lady," said he, drawing himself up, "that my faith is already anchored on that Rock on which Saint Peter founded his Church."

"It is a perversion of the text," said the sage Henry Warden, "presented on a vain play upon words—a most idle perversion."

The controversy would have been reheated, and in all probability—for what can leave the good temper and moderation of polemists—might have ended in the preacher's being transported a captive to the Monastery, had not Christin of the Official observed that it was growing late, and that he, having to dismiss the plea, which had no good reputation, could not greatly be troubling them after sunset. The Sub-Prior, therefore, stifled his desire of argument, and again telling the preacher, that he trusted to his gratitude and generosity, he bade him farewell.

"Be assured, my old friend," replied Warden, "that no willing act of mine shall be to thy prejudice. But if my Master shall please work before me, I must obey God rather than man."

These two men, both sanctified from natural disposition and acquired knowledge, had more points of similarity than they themselves would have admitted. In truth, the chief distinction between them was, that the Catholic, defending a religion which afforded little leisure to the feelings, had, in his devotion to the same he expressed, more of the heat than of the heart, and was public, cautious, and artful; while the Protestant,

oting under the strong impulse of more lately-adopted conviction, and feeling, as he justly might, a more earnest confidence in his cause, was confident, eager, and propulsive in his desire to advance it. The great world had been contented to defend, the preacher aspired to conquer, and, of course, the impulse by which the latter was governed, was more active and more decisive. They could not part from each other without a signed promise of hands, and each looked to the face of his old companion, as he bade him adieu, with a countenance strongly expressive of sorrow, affection, and pity.

Father Thomas then explained briefly to Dame Glendinning, that this person was to be her guest for some days, forbidding her and her whole household, under high-spirited censures, to hold any conversation with him on religious subjects, but commanding her to attend to his wants in all other particulars.

"May our Lady forgive me, reverend father," said Dame Glendinning, somewhat dumfounded at this intelligence, "but I must needs say, that over many guests have been the rule of many a house, and I know they will bring down Glendinning. First came the Lady of Arundel—her soul be at rest—she meant me ill—but she brought with her so many begies and fidles, as has kept the house in care ever since, so that we have been living as it were in a dream. And then came that English knight, if it please you, and if he have killed my son outright, he has chased him off the gate, and it may be long enough yet I see him again—sorry the damage done to outer door and inner door. And now your reverence has given us the charge of a heretic, who, if it like, may bring the great horned devil himself down upon us all, and they say that if he neither door nor window will serve him, but he will take away the side of the wall across along with him. Nevertheless, reverend father, your pleasure is doubtless to be done to our power."

"Go to, woman," said the Sub-Prior; "send for workmen from the chancel, and let them charge the expenses of their repairs to the Community, and I will give the treasurer warrant to allow them. Moreover, in settling the rental suits, and feu-duties, thou shalt have allowance for the trouble and charges to which thou art now put, and I will cause strict search to be made after thy son."

The dame courted deep and low at such favourable expression; and when the Sub-Prior had done speaking, she added her further hope that the Sub-Prior would hold some communication with her gospie the Miller, concerning the fate of his daughter, and exposed to him that the shame had by no means happened through any negligence on her part.

"I will doubt me, Sister," she said, "whether Myke finds her way back to the Mill in a hurry, but it was all her father's own fault that let her run humping about the country, riding on bare-backed mules, and never willing to do a turn of work within doors, unless it were to dress delicious at dinner time for his old eyes."

"You troubled me, dame, of another matter of urgency," said Father Eustace; "and, God knows, too many of them press on me at this moment. This English knight must be sought out, and explanation given to him of these most strange chances. The guilty girl must also be recovered. If she hath suffered no reputation by this unhappy mistake, I will not hold myself innocent of the damage. Yet how to find them out I know not."

"So please you," said Christine of the Chisel, "I am willing to take the chase, and bring them back by fair means or foul, for though you have always looked as black as night at me, whenever we have congregated, yet I have not forgotten that had it not been for you, my neck would have bore the weight of my four quarters." If any man can track the tread of them, I will say in the face of both Marie and Terrotilda, and take the Parish to boot, I am that man. But first I have matters to tend of on my master's score, if you will permit me to ride down the glen with you."

"May I, my friend," said the Sub-Prior, "then shouldst remember I have but slender cause to trust thee for a companion through a place so solitary."

"Tush! tush!" said the jacksman, "dare you not; I had the worst too surely to begin that sport again. Besides, have I not and a dozen of them, I owe you a life? and when I owe a man either a good turn or a bad, I never fail to pay it sooner or

* In the Scotch Legend of *Flay*, this proverbial saying is said by Chaucer. Tush is a more homely form.

And this sweet thing we in his grippe,
My may (ye wote) will not quit myn mypple.

lain. Moreover, beware me if I come to go alone down the glen, or even with my troopers, who are, every one of them, as much devils' hounds as myself; whereas, if your reverence, since that in the wood, take back and poster, and I come along with pick and spear, you will make the devils take the air, and I will make all human enemies take the earth."

Edward here entered, and told his reverence that he here was prepared. At this instant his eye caught his mother's, and the resolution which he had so strongly formed was staggered when he recollected the necessity of bidding her farewell. The Sub-Prior saw his embarrassment, and came to his relief.

"Dunno," said he, "I forget to mention that your son Edward goes with me to Saint Mary's, and will not return for two or three days."

"You'll be willing to help him to recover his brother? May the saints reward your kindness!"

The Sub-Prior returned the benediction which, in this instance, he had not very well deserved, and he and Edward set forth on their route. They were presently followed by Christian, who came up with his followers at such a speedy pace, as intimated sufficiently that his wish to obtain spiritual survey through the glen was extremely sincere. He had, however, other matters to stimulate his speed, for he was desirous to communicate to the Sub-Prior a message from his master Julian, connected with the delivery of the prisoner Warden; and having requested the Sub-Prior to ride with him a few yards before Edward and the troopers of his own party, he thus addressed him, sometimes interrupting his discourse in a manner testifying that his fear of supernatural beings was not altogether lulled to rest by his confidence in the sanctity of his fellow-traveller.

"My master," said the rider, "dreaded he had sent you an acceptable gift in that old heretic preacher; but it seems, from the slight care you have taken of him, that you make small account of the boon."

"Nay," said the Sub-Prior, "do not thus judge of it. The Community must account highly of the service, and will reward it to thy master in goodly fashion. But this man and I are old friends, and I trust to bring him back from the pails of perdition."

"Nay," said the monk-trooper, "when I saw you shake hands at the beginning I counted that you would fight it all out in

love and honour, and that there would be no extreme charge between ye—however it is all one to my master—Saint Mary! what call ye ye, Sir Monk?”

“The branch of a willow overhanging across the path between us and the sky.”

“Doubtless ye,” said Chastle, “if it looked not like a man’s hand holding a sword.—But, touching my master, he, like a prudent man, hath kept himself aloof in these broken times, until he could see with precision what footing he was to stand upon. Right tempting often he hath had from the Lords of Conscience, whom ye call heretics; and at one time he was minded, to be plain with ye, to have taken their way—for he was assured that the Lord James* was coming this road at the head of a stout body of cavalry. And accordingly Lord James did as the recken upon him, that he sent this man Warke, or whatsoever be his name, to my master’s protection, as an avowed friend; and, moreover, with charge that he himself was marching likewise at the head of a strong body of horse.”

“Now, Our Lady Brevint?” said the Sub-Prior.

“Aye!” answered Chastle, in some trepidation, “did your reverence see aught?”

“Nothing whatever,” replied the monk, “it was thy tale which wrought from me that exclamation.”

“And it was some come,” replied he of the Chastle, “for if Lord James should come either, your Holiness would stroke for it. But he of good cheer—that expedition is called before it was begun. The Baron of Arundel had once news that Lord James had been seen to march westward with his merry-men, to prevent Lord Scrope against Cassle and the Kennedie. By my faith, it will meet him a break; for wot ye what they say of that name,—

“Twice Wigles and the town of Aye,
Forpatrick and the castle of Cree,
We may well think for to this day,
Value to court Saint Kenneth.”†

“Then,” said the Sub-Prior, “the Lord James’s purpose of coming southwards being broken, next this person, Henry Warke, a cold reception at Arundel Castle.”

* Lord James Stewart, afterwards the Regent Murray.

† This verse agrees with some tradition as an old description of Cassle (Stirling spoken), by the parish minister of Warke, who says that the Kennedie Squidron as he passed could neither find they pass due to the depth he speaks of.

"It would not have been altogether so rough a man," said the man-tronger; "for my master was in heavy thought what to do in these unsettled times, and would scarce have considered releasing a man sent to him by so terrible a leader as the Lord James. But, to speak the truth, some busy devil tempted the old man to meddle with my master's Christian charity of land-feeding with Catherine of Newport. So that broke the wind of peace between them, and now ye may have my master, and all the force he can make, at your devotion, for Lord James never forgave wrong done to him; and if he come by the upper hand, he will have Julian's head if there were never another of the name, as it is like there is not, excepting the bit slip of a little powder. And now I have told you more of my master's affairs than he would thank me for, but you have done me a frank turn once, and I may need one at your hands again."

"Thy frankness," said the Sub-Prior, "shall surely advantage thee, for much it concerns the Church in these broken times to know the purposes and motives of those around us. But what is it that thy master expects from us in reward of good service; for I esteem him one of those who are not willing to work without his hire?"

"Nay, that I can tell you daily; for Lord James had promised him, in case he would be of his faction in these parts, an easy tack of the wind-shores of his own barony of Arvedel, together with the lands of Cranchery Moor, which he interested with his own. And he will look for no less at your hand."

"But there is old Gilbert of Cranchery Moor," said the Sub-Prior, "what are we to make of him? The lord's Lord James may take on him to dispose upon the goods and lands of the Habbonas at his pleasure, because, doubtless, but for the protection of God, and the baronage which yet remains faithful to their creed, he may despoil us of them by force; but while they are the property of the Community, we may not take clothings from ancient and faithful vassals, to gratify the avariciousness of those who serve God only from the love of gain."

"By the mass," said Christo, "it is well talking, Sir Prior, but when ye consider that Gilbert has but two half-starved cowardly peasants to follow him, and only an old jaded ewe to ride upon, sicker for the plough than for manly service; and that the Baron of Arvedel never rides with fewer than ten jacks-men at his back, and oftener with fifty, bolin is all that affires

to war as if they were to do battle for a kingdom, and mounted on sage Gaid nicker at the clash of the sword as if it were the clank of the lid of a corn-chest—I say, when ye have computed all this, ye may guess what scores will beat across your Monastery."

"Friend," said the monk, "I would willingly purchase thy master's assistance on his own terms, since time leaves us no better means of defence against the voracious spoliation of harry; but to take from a poor man his patrimony!"—

"For that matter," said the rider, "his seat would scarce be a soft one, if my master thought that Gilbert's interest stood between him and what he wishes. The Haldrons has land enough, and Gilbert may be quartered elsewhere."

"We will consider the possibility of so disposing the matter," said the monk, "and will expect in consequence your master's most active assistance, with all the followers he can make, to join in the defence of the Haldrons, against any force by which it may be threatened."

"A man's hand and a mailed glove on that," said the judiceman. "They call us murderers, thieves, and what not; but the side we take we hold by.—And I will be thither when my horse comes to a point which side he will take, for the castle is a kind of ball (Our Lady forgive me for naming such a word in this place!) while he is in his mood, studying how he may best advantage himself. And now, Heaven be praised! we are in the open valley, and I may event a round oak, should ought happen to prove it."

"My friend," said the Rich-Priest, "there's but little merit in abstaining from oaths or blasphemy, if it be only out of fear of evil spirits."

"Nay, I am not quite a church vessel yet," said the judiceman, "and if you link the oak too tight on a young horse, I promise you he will rear.—Why, it is worth for me to disturb old customs on any account whatever."

The night being fine, they dashed the river at the spot where the Scourer met with his unhappy encounter with the spirit. As soon as they arrived at the gate of the Monastery, the porter in waiting eagerly exclaimed, "Reverend father, the Lord Abbot is most anxious for your presence."

"Let these strangers be carried to the great hall," said the

* Note A. Good folk of the Haldrons.

Sub-Prior, "and be treated with the best by the cellarer; reminding them, however, of that modesty and decency of conduct which becometh guests in a house like this."

"But the Lord Abbot demands you instantly, my venerable brother," said Father Philip, arriving in great haste. "I have not seen him more discouraged or dispirited of countenance since the field of Pinkieburgh was strewn."

"I come, my good brother, I come," said Father Eustace. "I pray thee, good brother, let this youth, Edward Glenlister, be conveyed to the Chamber of the Novices, and placed under their instruction. God hath touched his heart, and he proposes laying aside the vanities of the world, to become a brother of our holy order; which, if his good parts be matched with living docility and humility, he may one day live to adorn."

"My very venerable brother," exclaimed old Father Nicholas, who came hobbling with a third summons to the Sub-Prior, "I pray thee to hasten to our worshipful Lord Abbot. The holy pairings be with us! never was I Abbot of the House of Saint Mary's in such consternation; and yet I remember me well when Father Ingilram had the news of Fiodden-feld."

"I come, I come, venerable brother," said Father Eustace. And having repeatedly ejaculated "I come!" he at last went to the Abbot in good earnest.

CHAPTER THIRTY-FOURTH.

It is not tears will do it—Church artillery
Are shown soon by real valiance,
And crosses are but vain opposed to maces.
Go, raise your standard, mark your church place down,
Put the charred crosser subject to your hands,
And quell your long-voiced legions—Turn them out,
Then placed with your good men, to guard your wall,
And they will vanish forth.—

OLD PLAY.

THE Abbot received his counsellor with a boundless expression of welcome, which amounted to the Sub-Prior an extreme agitation of spirits, and the utmost pace of good counsel. There was neither manner-like nor standing-up upon the little table,

at the elbow of his huge chair of state; his hands alone lay there, and it seemed as if he had been telling there in his entirety of distress. Beside the hands was placed the mitre of the Abbot, of an antique form, and blazoning with precious stones, and the rich and highly-embossed cushion rested against the same table.

The Prior and old Father Nicholas had followed the Sub-Prior into the Abbot's apartment, perhaps with the hope of learning something of the important matter which seemed to be in hand.—They were not mistaken; for, after having entered in the Sub-Prior, and being themselves in the act of retiring, the Abbot made them a signal to remain.

"My brethren," he said, "it is well known to you with what painful and we have overcome the weighty affairs of this house committed to our unworthy hand—your bread hath been given to you, and your water hath been sure—I have not wanted the resources of the Convent on vain pleasures, on bantering or bowking, or on change of rich cope or alb, or on feasting idle herds and jesters, saving those who, according to old wont, were received in times of Christmas and Easter. Neither have I enriched either mine own relations nor strange women, at the expense of the patrimony."

"There hath not been such a Lord Abbot," said Father Nicholas, "in my knowledge, since the days of Abbot Ingilram who"—

At that portentous word, which always preluded a long story, the Abbot broke in.

"May God have mercy on his soul!—we talk not of him now.—What I would know of ye, my brethren, is, whether I have, in your mind, faithfully discharged the duties of mine office?"

"There has never been subject of complaint," answered the Sub-Prior.

The Prior, more diffuse, enumerated the various acts of indulgence and kindness which the mild government of Abbot Boniface had conferred on the brotherhood of Saint Mary's—the indulgence—the gratia—the *libera*—the weekly mass of baked almonds—the enlarged accommodation of the refectory—the better arrangement of the cellars—the improvement of the revenue of the Monastery—the discussion of the petitions of the brethren.

"You might have added, my brother," said the Abbot,

listening with melancholy acquiescence to the detail of his own misdeeds, "that I seemed to be built that curious screen, which screens the debaters from the north-east wind.—But all these things are nothing.—As we read in holy Macbeth, *Cybernetica per exhibitionem Dei*. It hath cost me no little thought, no common toil, to keep these weighty matters in such order as you have seen them—there was both born and time to be kept full—infirmity, dormitory, guest-hall, and refectory, to be looked to—provisional to be made, provisional to be heard, strongest to be entertained, none to be granted or refused; and I warrant you, when every one of you was asleep in your cell, the Abbot took him awake for a full hour by the bell, thinking how these matters might be ordered wisely and suitably."

"May we ask, reverend my lord," said the Sub-Prior, "what additional care has now been thrown upon you, since your discourse seems to point that way?"

"Marry, thus it is," said the Abbot. "The talk is not now of *liberty*,^{*} or of *caritas*, or of *loved alms*, but of an English lord coming against us from Scotland, commanded by Sir John Forster; not as if of the screening us from the east wind, but how to escape Lord James Stewart, who cometh to lay waste and destroy with his barons within."

"I thought that purpose had been looked by the dead between Scapple and the Kennelies," said the Sub-Prior, hastily.

"They have accorded that matter at the expense of the Church as usual," said the Abbot, "the Earl of Cassilis is to have the reinstatement of his lands, which were given to the house of Cromwell, and he has striken hands with Stewart, who is now called Murray—*Principes concordant utraque adversus Deum*.—These are the letters."

The Sub-Prior took the letters, which had come by an express messenger from the Primate of Scotland, who still showed to uphold the tottering fabric of the system under which he was at length bound, and, stepping towards the lamp, read them with an air of deep and settled attention.—The Sacristan and Father Nicholas looked on helplessly at each other at the darkness of the poultry-pen when the hawk came over it. The Abbot seemed bowed down with the seriousness of sorrowful

* Note E. Indisposition to the Rhine.

apprehension, but kept his eye constantly fixed on the Sub-Prior, as if striving to catch some comfort from the expression of his countenance. When at length he beheld that, after a second instant perusal of the letters, he remained still silent and full of thought, he asked him in an anxious tone, "What is to be done?"

"Our duty must be done," answered the Sub-Prior, "and the rest is in the hands of God."

"Our duty—our duty!" answered the Abbot, impatiently; "doubtless we are to do our duty; but what is that duty? or how will it serve us?—Will I sell, book, and candle, drive back the English invasion? or will Murray save the palace and cathedral? or can I fight for the Hakloms, like *Julian Macabene*, against those profane *Nisson*? or send the *Saxon* against this new *Barbarian*, to bring back his hand in a basket?"

"True, my Lord Abbot," said the Sub-Prior, "we cannot fight with carnal weapons, it is often contrary to our habit and vow; but we can do for our *Convent* and for our *Order*. Besides, we can arm those who will and can fight. The English are but few in number, trusting, as it would seem, that they will be joined by Murray, whose march has been interrupted. If *Foster*, with his *Cambridgeshire* and *Shropshire* bandits, venture to march into Scotland, to pillage and despoil our *Homes*, we will lay our vessels, and, I trust, shall be found strong enough to give him battle."

"In the *Mercy* name of Our Lady," said the Abbot, "think you that I am *Petrus Romulus*, to go forth the leader of an host?"

"Nay," said the Sub-Prior, "let some man skilled in war lead our people—there is *Julian Arnold*, an approved soldier."

"But a soldier, a debauched person, and, to brief, a man of belief," quoth the Abbot.

"Still," said the monk, "we must use his ministry in that to which he has been brought up. We can glorify him richly, and indeed I already know the price of his services. The English, it is expected, will presently set forth, laying here to waste upon *Peowin Shalton*, whose refuge being taken with us, they make the pretext of this unbecoming insult."

"Is it even so?" said the Abbot; "I never judged that his body of sin and his brain of sorrows looked us much good."

"Yet we must have his assistance, if possible," said the Sub-

Prior; "he may interest in our behalf the great Floide, of whose friendship he boasts, and that good and faithful Lord may break Foster's purpose. I will despatch the postman after him with all speed.—Charly, however, I trust to the military spirit of the land, which will not suffer peace to be easily broken on the frontier. God's will, my lord, it will bring to our side the hands of many, whose hearts may have gone astray after strange doctrines. The great chiefs and barons will be ashamed to let the vessels of peaceful monks fight wounded against the old enemies of Scotland."

"It may be," said the Abbot, "that Foster will wait for Murray, whose purpose hitherto is but delayed for a short space."

"By the road, he will not," said the Sub-Prior; "we know this Sir John Foster—a piousist heretic, he will long to destroy the Church—born a Borderer, he will thirst to plunder her of her wealth—a Border-warrior, he will be eager to ride in Scotland. There are too many causes to urge him on. If he joins with Murray, he will have at least but an auxiliary's share of the spoil—if he comes hither before him, he will reckon on the whole harvest of depredation as his own. John Arved also has, as I have heard, some spite against Sir John Foster; they will fight, when they meet, with double determination.—Sanctus, send for our brother.—Where is the roll of fensible men liable to do suit and service to the Maledones?—Send off to the Baron of Mungiloch; he can raise thousands more and better—Say to him the Monastery will compound with him for the customs of his bridge, which have been in contravention, if he will show himself a friend at such a point.—And now, my lord, let us compute our possible numbers, and those of the enemy, that human blood be not spilled in vain—Let us therefore calculate!"

"My brain is clouded with the emergency," said the poor Abbot—"I am not, I think, more a coward than others, so far as my own person is concerned; but speak to me of marching and collecting soldiers, and calculating forces, and you may as well tell of it to the youngest novice of a monastery. But my resolution is taken.—Brothers," he said, rising up, and casting forward with that dignity which his comely person excited him to assume, "hear for the last time the voice of your Abbot Boniface. I have done for you the best that I could; in

quiter times I had perhaps done better, for it was far quiet than I sought the cloister, which has been to me a place of turmoil, as much as if I had sat in the receipt of custom, or ridden forth as leader of an armed host. But now matters turn worse and worse, and I, as I grow old, am less able to struggle with them. Also, it becomes me not to hold a place, whereof the duties, through my default or misfortune, may be too imperfectly filled by me. Wherefore I have resolved to desert this noisy high office, so that the order of these matters may presently devolve upon Father Eustace here present, our well-beloved Sub-Prior; and I now rejoice that he hath not been provided according to his merits elsewhere, seeing that I well hope he will succeed to the office and staff which it is my present purpose to lay down."

"In the name of Our Lady, be nothing hastily, my lord!" said Father Eustace—"I do remember that when the worthy Abbot Ingilram, being in his sixtieth year—for I warrant you he could remember when Bunschet the Martenoth was deposed—and being ill at ease and bed-ridden, the brethren counselled in his ear that he were better resign his office. And what said he, being a pleasant man I trow, that while he could cook his little finger he would keep hold of the noose with it."

The Sacristan also strongly remonstrated against the resolution of his Superior, and set down the insufficiency he pleaded to the native modesty of his disposition. The Abbot listened in downcast silence; even flattery could not win his ear.

Father Eustace took a sabbier tone with his disconnected and departed Superior. "My Lord Abbot," he said, "if I have been silent concerning the virtues with which you have governed this house, do not think that I am unaware of them. I know that no man ever brought to your high office a more sincere wish to do well to all mankind; and if your rule has not been marked with the bold lines which sometimes distinguished your spiritual predecessors, their faults have equally been strangers to your character."

"I did not believe," said the Abbot, turning his looks to Father Eustace with some surprise, "that you, father, of all men, would have done me this justice."

"In your silence," said the Sub-Prior, "I have ever done it more fully. Do not lose the good opinion which all men enter-

toils of you, by attending your office when your care is most needed."

"But, my brethren," said the Abbot, "I have a more able in my place."

"That you do not," said Eustace; "because it is not necessary you should resign, in order to possess the use of whatever experience or talent I may be accounted master of. I have been long enough in this profession to know that the individual qualities which any of us may have, are not his own, but the property of the Community, and only so far useful when they promote the general advantage. If you care not to person, my lord, to deal with this troublesome matter, let me implore you to go instantly to Edinburgh, and make what friends you can in our behalf, while I in your absence will, as Sub-Prior, do my duty in defence of the Haldrons. If I succeed, may the honour and praise be yours, and if I fail, let the disgrace and shame be mine own."

The Abbot smiled for a space, and then replied,—"No, Father Eustace, you shall not conquer me by your generosity. In these like cases, this house must have a stronger pilotage than my weak hands afford; and he who steers the vessel must be chief of the crew. Hence were it to accept the praise of other men's labours; and, in my poor mind, all the praise which can be bestowed on him who undertakes a task so perilous and perplexing, is a most beneath his merits. Misfortune to him would deprive him of an iota of St. Andrew, therefore, your authority to-night, and proceed in the preparations you judge necessary. Let the Chapter be summoned to-morrow after we have heard mass, and all shall be ordered as I have told you. Benedicite, my brethren!—peace be with you!—May the new Abbot-expectant sleep as sound as he who is about to resign his office."

They retired, affected even to weep. The good Abbot had shown a point of his character to which they were strangers. Even Father Eustace had held his spiritual Superior hitherto as a good-natured, kindhearted, self-indulgent man, whose chief merit was the absence of gross faults; so that this sacrifice of power to a sense of duty, even if a little alleged by the meagre motives of fear and apprehended difficulties, raised him considerably in the Sub-Prior's estimation. He even felt an aversion to profit by the resignation of the Abbot Benedicite, and

in a manner to rise on his reins; but this sentiment did not long contend with those which led him to recollect higher considerations. It could not be denied that Boniface was actively useful for his situation in the present crisis; and the Sub-Prior felt that he himself, acting merely as a delegate, could not well take the decisive measures which the time required; the good of the Community therefore demanded his elevation. If, besides, there crept in a feeling of a high dignity obtained, and the passive emulation of a haughty spirit called to contend with the imminent dangers attached to a post of such distinction, these sentiments were so awfully blended and amalgamated with others of a more disinterested nature, that, as the Sub-Prior himself was unconscious of their agency, we, who have a regard for him, are not willicious to detect it.

The Abbot soon carried himself with more dignity than formerly, when giving such directions to the pressing circumstances of the time required; and those who approached him could perceive an assumed swelling of his blue eye, and an unusual flush upon his pale and faded cheek. With haughtiness and pride he wrote and dictated various letters to different barons, acquainting them with the meditated invasion of the Highlands by the English, and conjuring them to lend aid and assistance as in a common cause. The temptation of advantage was held out to those whom he judged less scrupulous of the name of honour, and all were urged by the motives of patriotism and unfeigned animosity to the English. The time had been when no such exhortations would have been necessary. But so essential was Elizabeth's aid to the reformed party in Scotland, and so strong was that party almost everywhere, that there was reason to believe a great many would cheerfully on the present occasion, even if they did not go the length of acting with the English against the Catholics.

When Father Easton considered the number of the immediate vessels of the Church, whose aid he might legally command, his heart sunk at the thoughts of making them under the banner of the Heretic and prodigal Julian Avenel.

"Were the young enthusiast Robert Glendinning to be found," thought Father Easton in his anxiety, "I would have risked the battle under his leading, young as he is, and with better hope of God's blessing. But the truth is now too plain, we know I a child of mine whom I might trust in this import-

not matter better than this Arsenal."—He touched a bell which stood on the table, and commanded Christie of the Cheshill to be brought before him.—"Then sweet me a life," said he to that person on his entrance, "and I may do thee another good turn if thou be'st amuse with me."

Christie had already drained two standing-cups of wine, which would, on another occasion, have added to the tenderness of his familiarity. But at present there was something in the segmented dignity of manner of Father Rustace, which imposed a restraint on him. Yet his answers partook of his usual character of unqualified assurance. He professed himself willing to return a true answer to all inquiries.

"Has the Baron (so styled) of Arsenal any friendship with Sir John Foster, Warlike of the West Marches of England?"

"Such friendship as is between the wild-cat and the terrier," replied the ruler.

"Will he do battle with him should they meet?"

"As surely," answered Christie, "as ever cock fought on Shrewsbury-green."

"And would he fight with Foster in the Church's quarel?"

"On any quarel, or upon no quarel whatever," replied the judge.

"We will then write to him, letting him know, that if upon occasion of an apprehended invasion by Sir John Foster he will agree to join his force with ours, he shall lead our men, and be gratified for doing so to the extent of his wish.—Yet one word more—Thou didst say thou couldst find out where the English knight Pierce Shafton has this day fled to?"

"That I can, and bring him back too, by fair means or force, as best likes your reverence."

"No force must be used upon him. Within what time wilt thou find him out?"

"Within thirty hours, so he have not crossed the Lifford Firth.—If it is to do you a pleasure, I will set off directly, and send him as a sleuth-dog tracks the moon-trooper," answered Christie.

"Bring him hither then, and thou wilt deserve good at our hands, which I may soon have the means of bestowing on thee."

"Thanks to your reverence, I put myself in your reverence's hands. We of the spear and maulle wait something recklessly

through life, but if a man were wiser than he is, your reverence knows he must live, and that's not to be done without slitting, I trow."

"Peace, ah, and begone on thine errand—thou shalt have a letter from us to Sir Francis."

Christie made two steps towards the door; then turning back and hesitating, like one who would make an impudent plesantry if he dared, he asked what he was to do with the wench Mavis Blapper whom the Southern knight had carried off with him.

"Am I to bring her hither, please your reverence?"

"Nether, you mispert knave!" said the stewardman; "remember you to whom you speak!"

"No offence meant," replied Christie; "but if such is not your will, I would carry her to Arund Castle, where a well-favoured wench was never unknown."

"Bring the unfortunate girl to her father's, and break no second joke here," said the Sub-Prince—"See that thou guide her in all safety and honour."

"In safety, surely," said the rider, "and in such honour as her outbreak has left her.—I bid your reverence farewell, I must be on horse before cock-crow."

"What, in the dark!—how knowest thou which way to go?"

"I tracked the knight's horse trail as far as near to the ford, as we rode along together," said Christie, "and I observed the track turn to the northward. He is for Edinburgh, I will warrant you—as soon as daylight comes I will be on the road again. It is a horse-pole hood-mark, for the shoe was made by old Boka of Cumbria—I would swear to the curve of the socket." So saying he departed.

"Fitful necessity," said Father Bontas, looking after him, "that obliges us to use such implements as these! But, needed as we are on all sides, and by all conditions of men, what alternative is left us?—But, now let me to my most needful task."

The Abbot then accordingly sets down to write letters, arrange orders, and take upon him the whole charge of an institution which tottered to the fall, with the same spirit of pride and devoted fortitude wherewith the commander of a fortress, reduced nearly to the last extremity, calculates what means remain to him to protect the final hour of successful

storm. In the meanwhile Abbot Boniface, having given a few natural signs to the downfall of the pre-eminence he had so long enjoyed amongst his brethren, fell fast asleep, leaving the whole care and task of office to his assistant and successor.

CHAPTER THIRTY-FIFTH.

*And when he came to brother Briggs,
He shook'd his head and eyes ;
And when he came to grace giving,
Fell down his feet and ran.*

Our Women.

We return to Halbert Glendinning, who, as our readers may remember, took the high road to Edinburgh. His intercourse with the preacher Henry Wardie, from whom he received a letter at the moment of his deliverance, had been so brief, that he had not even learned the name of the soldiers to whose care he was recommended. Something like a name had been spoken indeed, but he had only comprehended that he was to meet the chief advancing towards the south, at the head of a party of horse. When day dawned on his journey, he was in the same uncertainty. A better scholar would have been informed by the address of the letter, but Halbert had not so far profited by Father Hutcheon's lessons as to be able to decipher it. His mother-wit taught him that he must not, in such uncertain times, be too hasty in asking information of any one, and when, after a long day's journey, night surprised him near a little village, he began to be dubious and anxious concerning the issue of his journey.

In a poor country, hospitality is generally exercised freely, and Halbert, when he requested a night's quarters, did nothing either degrading or extraordinary. The old woman, to whom he made this request, granted it the more readily, that she thought she saw some resemblance between Halbert and her son Barclay, who had been killed in one of the fights so common in the time. It is true Barclay was a short square-made fellow, with red hair and a freckled face, and somewhat badly-legged, whereas the stranger was of a brown complexion, tall, and remarkably well made. Nevertheless, the widow was

clear that there existed a general resemblance between her guest and Sanderson, and kindly pressed him to share of her evening dinner. A pedlar, a man of about sixty years old, was also her guest, who talked with great feeling of the misery of pursuing such a profession as his in the time of war and trouble.

"We think much of knights and soldiers," said he; "but the pedlar who travels the land has need of more courage than they all. I am sure he must have quite rich, God bless him. Have have I come this length, trusting the gaily Earl of Murray would be on his march to the Borders, for he was to have guestened with the Barons of Kessel; and instead of that come news that he has gone westwardwards about some trouble in Ayrshire. And what to do I wot not; for if I go to the north without a safeguard, the next heavy rider I meet might ease me of sack and pack, and maybe of my life to boot; and then, if I try to strike across the moors, I may be as ill off before I can join myself to that good Lord's company."

No one was quicker at catching a hint than Halbert Glencliffing. He said he himself had a desire to go westward. The pedlar looked at him with a very doubtful air, when the old dame, who perhaps thought her young guest resembled the amiable Sanderson, not only in his looks, but in a certain pretty turn to slight-obedience, which the defect was supposed to have possessed, tipped him the wink, and assured the pedlar he need have no doubt that her young cousin was a true man.

"Cousin!" said the pedlar, "I thought you said the youth had been a stranger."

"He bearing makes ill reckoning," said the landlady; "he is a stranger to me by eyesight, but that does not make him a stranger to me by blood, more especially seeing his likeness to my son Sanderson, poor bairn."

The pedlar's scruples and jealousies being thus removed, or at least allayed, the travellers agreed that they would proceed in company together the next morning by daybreak, the pedlar acting as a guide to Glencliffing, and the youth as a guard to the pedlar, until they should fall in with Murray's detachment of horse. It would appear that the landlady never doubted what was to be the result of this compact, for, taking Glencliffing aside, she charged him "to be moderate with the poor body, but at all events, not to forget to take a piece of black

say, to make the saddle with a new riding-cap." Halbert laughed and took his leave.

It did not a little appeal the peffer, when, in the midst of a black death, the young man told him the nature of the commission with which their hostess had charged him. He took heart, however, upon seeing the open, frank, and friendly countenance of the youth, and vented his exclamations on the ungrateful old traitress. "I gave her," he said, "yester-evening no further grace, a yard of that very black say, to make her a counter-scarf; but I see it is ill done to teach the cat the way to the kirk."

Thus set at ease on the intentions of his companion (for in those happy days the worst was always to be expected from a stranger), the peffer acted as Halbert's guide over moor and moor, over hill and many a dale, in each a direction as might best lead them towards the route of Murray's party. At length they arrived upon the side of an eminence, which commanded a distant prospect over a tract of savage and desolate moorland, moorly and waste—an alternate change of shaggy hill and level moor, only varied by blue stagnant pools of water. A road scarcely marked wound like a serpent through the wilderness, and the peffer, pointing to it, said—"The road from Edinburgh to Glasgow. Here we must wait, and if Murray and his train be not already passed by, we shall soon see trace of them, unless some new purpose shall have altered their resolution; for in these blessed days no man, were he the nearest the thistle, as the Earl of Murray may be, knows when he lays his head on his pillow at night where it is to be upon the following even."

They passed accordingly, and sat down, the peffer cautiously using for a seat the box which contained his treasures, and not concealing from his companion that he wore under his cloak a pocket hanging at his belt in case of need. He was courteous, however, and offered Halbert a share of the provisions which he carried about him for refreshment. They were of the coarsest kind—out-bread baked into cakes, saturated soaked with cold water, an onion or two, and a morsel of smoked hagg, completed the feast. But such as it was, no Scotsman of the time, had his mark been much higher than that of Glenshening, would have refused to share in it, especially as the peffer produced, with a mysterious air, a tapt horn, which he carried along from

his shoulders, and which, when its contents were examined, produced to each party a shuddering fall of excellent aqua-viva—a liquor strange to Halbert, for the strong waters known in the south of Scotland come from France, and as that such were but rarely used. The peller recommended it as excellent, and he had procured it in his last visit to the house of Doune, where he had securely traded under the safe-conduct of the Lord of Buchanan. He also set an example to Halbert, by devoutly emptying the cup “to the speedy downfall of Antichrist.”

Their conversation was scarce ended, ere a rising dust was seen in the road of which they commanded the prospect, and half-a-score of horsemen were dimly discerned advancing at considerable speed, their capes gleaming, and the points of their spears twinkling as they caught a glimpse of the sun.

“There,” said the peller, “must be the out-couriers of Murray’s party; let us lie down in the peat-bag, and keep ourselves out of sight.”

“And why not?” said Halbert; “let us rather go down and make a signal to them.”

“God forbid!” replied the peller; “do you know all the customs of our Scottish nation? That plump of spears that are spurring on so fast are doubtless commanded by some wild kinsman of Macbray, or some such daring far-nothing as neither regards God nor man. It is their business, if they meet with any enemies, to pick quarrels and clear the way of them; and the chief knows nothing of what happens, coming up with his more discreet and moderate friends, it may be a full mile in the rear. Were we to go near these hobs of the lady’s belt, your letter would do you little good, and my pack would do me much less ill; they would not strip us of our clothes from our backs, fling us into a moss-bag with a stone at our heels, asked us the hour that brought us into this rashness and wild world, and neither Murray nor any other man over the wien. But if he did come to him of it, what might he help it?—it would be accounted a mere mistake, and there were all the more made. O could we, youth, that when men drive wild steel on each other in their native country, they neither can nor may dwell deeply on the offences of those whose swords are used to them.”

They suffered, therefore, the vanguard, as it might be termed, of the Earl of Murray’s host to pass forward; and it was not

long until a denser cloud of dust began to arise to the north-west.

"Now," said the postler, "let us hurry down the hill; for to tell the truth," said he, dragging Halbert along earnestly, "a Scottish noble's march is like a serpent—the head is furnished with flags, and the tail with its sting; the only hazardous point of attack is the main body."

"I will hasten as fast as you," said the youth; "but tell me why the rearward of such an army should be as dangerous as the van?"

"Because, as the vanguard consists of their picked wild desperadoes, ready for mischief, such as neither fear God nor regard their fellow-creatures, but understand themselves bound to hurry from the road whatever is displeasing to themselves, so the rear-guard consists of mis-spiced serving-men, who, being in charge of the baggage, take care to annoy by their snatches upon travelling-merchants and others, their own thefts on their master's property. You will hear the advanced *regiment* *pepée*, as the French call them, and as they are rebuked, naturally, children of the hill, singing various and fulsome ballads of sin and heretics. And then will come on the middle-guard, when you will hear the canticles and psalms sung by the reforming nobles, and the gentry, and honest and pious clergies, by whom they are accompanied. And last of all, you will find in the rear a legion of galled ladies, and palfreys, and horse-boys, talking of nothing but dining, doting, and dribbling."

As the postler spoke, they had reached the side of the high-road and Murray's main body was in sight, consisting of about three hundred horse, marching with great regularity, and in a closely compacted body. Some of the troopers wore the liveries of their masters, but this was not common. Most of them were dressed in such colours as chance dictated. But the majority, being clad in blue cloth, and the whole armed with cuirasses and back-plates, with sleeves of mail, gorgets, and pollixons, and either mailed hose or strong jack-boots, they had something of a uniform appearance. Many of the leaders were clad in complete armour, and all in a certain half-military dress, which gave more of quality to these disordered troops even felt himself sufficiently safe to abandon.

The foremost of this party immediately rode up to the postler and to Halbert Glendinning, and demanded of them who they

were. The peller told his story, the young Glendower exhibited his letter, which a gentleman carried to Murray. In an instant after, the word "Halt!" was given through the squadron, and at once the ordered heavy tramp, which seemed the most distinctive attribute of the body, ceased, and was heard no more. The command was announced that the troop should halt here for an hour to refresh themselves and their horses. The peller was assured of safe protection, and accommodated with the use of a baggage horse. But at the same time he was ordered into the rear; a command which he reluctantly obeyed, and not without wringing pathetically the hand of Herbert as he separated from him.

The young heir of Glendower was in the meanwhile conducted to a plot of ground more raised, and therefore drier than the rest of the moor. Here a carpet was flung on the ground by way of table-cloth, and around it sat the leaders of the party, partaking of an entertainment as common with relation to their rank, as that which Glendower had so lately shared. Murray himself rose as he came forward, and advanced a step to meet him.

This celebrated prince had in his appearance, as well as in his mind, much of the admirable qualities of James V. his father. Had not the stain of Regicide rested upon his birth, he would have filled the Spanish throne with as much honour as any of the Stuart race. But History, while she acknowledges his high talents, and much that was princely, nay, royal, in his conduct, cannot forget that ambition led him further than honour or loyalty warranted. Brave amongst the bravest, fair in presence and in fervor, skilled to manage the most intricate affairs, to attach to himself those who were doubtful, to stem and overwhelm, by the suddenness and integrity of his enterprises, those who were resolute in resistance, he attained, and as to personal merit certainly deserved, the highest place in the kingdom. But he shared, under the influence of strong temptation, the opportunity which his sister Mary's selfishness and impudence threw in his way; he supplanted his sovereign and benefactor in her power, and his history affords us one of those mixed characters, in which principle was so often sacrificed to policy, that we must condemn the statesman while we pity and regret the individual. Many events in his life gave substance to the charge that he himself

aimed at the crown; and it is too true, that he contemplated the fatal expedient of establishing an English, that is a foreign and a hostile interest, in the councils of Scotland. But his death may be received as an atonement for his offence, and may serve to show how much more safe in the person of a real patriot, than that of the mere head of a faction, who is accountable for the offences of his momentary attendants.

When Murray approached, the young rustic was naturally shocked at the dignity of his presence. The commanding form and the countenance in which high and important thoughts were dwelling, the features which bore the resemblance of Scotland's long line of kings, were well calculated to impress awe and reverence. His dress had little to distinguish him from the highborn nobles and barons by whom he was attended. A half-cape, richly embroidered with silver lace, supplied the place of armour; and a massive gold chain, with its medal, hung round his neck. His black velvet hat was decorated with a string of large and fair pearls, and with a small tufted feather, a long heavy sword was put to his side, as the familiar companion of his hand. He wore gaiters upon his boots, and these completed his equipment.

"This letter," he said, "is from the golly preacher of the word, Henry Warden, young man! is it not so?" Halbert answered in the affirmative. "And he writes to us, it would seem, in some strait, and refers us to you for the circumstances. Let us know, I pray you, how things stand with him."

In some perturbation Halbert Glenelg gave an account of the circumstances which had accompanied the preacher's imprisonment. When he came to the discussion of the hard-fought engagement, he was struck with the sadness and dispirited expression of Murray's brow, and contrary to all prudential and politic rules, seeing something was wrong, yet not well aware what that something was, had almost stopped short in his narrative.

"What ails the foil?" said the Earl, drawing his dark-red eyebrows together, with the same dusky glow kindled on his brow—"that thou not learned to tell a true tale without staggering?"

"No please you," answered Halbert, with considerable address, "I have never before spoken in such a presence."

"He seems a modest youth," said Murray, turning to his

sent attendant," and yet one who is a good man with neither
few friends nor few.—Speak on, friend, and speak freely."

Halbert then gave an account of the quarrel between John
Arnold and the preacher, which the Earl, being less by the
whole, compelled himself to listen to as a thing of indifference.
At first he appeared even to take the part of the Jews.

"Henry Warden," he said, "is too hot in his zeal. The law
both of God and man maketh allowance for certain offences,
though not strictly formal, and the laws of such may seem."

This general declaration he expressed, accompanying it with
a glance around upon the few followers who were present at
the interview. The most of them answered—"There is no
controversy about that;" but one or two looked on the ground, and
were silent. Murray then turned again to Glendinning, com-
mending him to say what next pleased, and not to omit any
particular. When he mentioned the manner in which John
had cast from him his accusers, Murray drew a deep breath,
set his teeth hard, and laid his hand on the hilt of his dagger.
Casting his eyes once more around the circle, which was now
supported by one or two of the reformed preachers, he seemed
to derive his rage to silence, and again commended Halbert to
proceed. When he came to describe how Warden had been
dragged to a dungeon, the Earl seemed to have found the point
at which he might give vent to his own resentment, assure of
the sympathy and approbation of all who were present. "Judge
you," he said, looking to those around him, "judge you, my
peers, and noble gentlemen of Scotland, between me and the
John Arnold—he hath broken his own word, and hath vio-
lated my self-respect—and judge you also, my reverend
brethren, he hath put his hand forth upon a preacher of the
gospel, and perdition may sell his blood to the worshippers of
Astaroth!"

"Let him die the death of a traitor," said the secular chiefs,
"and let his tongue be struck through with the hangman's dory
bow to atone his perjury!"

"Let him go down to his place with David's priests," said the
preachers, "and be his when our trio Topiel!"

Murray heard them with the smile of expected revenge; yet
it is probable that the brutal treatment of the female, whose
circumstances somewhat resembled those of the Earl's own
mother, had its share in the grim smile which curled his own

burst check and its hungry lip. To Herbert Glendinning, when his narrative was finished, he spoke with great kindness.

"He is a bold and gallant youth," said he to those around, "and formed of the stuff which becomes a leading time. There are periods when men's spirits shine heavily through them. I will know something more of him."

He questioned him more particularly concerning the Baron of Arnaud's probable force—the strength of his castle—the dispositions of his next heir, and this brought necessarily forward the sad history of his brother's daughter, Mary Arnaud, which was told with an embarrassment that did not escape Murray.

"But Julia Arnaud," he said, "and do you provide my remembrance, when you have so much more reason to deprecate my justice! I know Walter Arnaud, a true Scotsman and a good soldier. Our sister, the Queen, must right his daughter, and were her hand restored, she would be a fitting bride to some brave man, who may better worth our favour than the traitor Julian."—Then looking at Herbert, he said, "Art thou of gentle blood, young man?"

Herbert, with a faltering and uncertain voice, began to speak of his distant pretensions to claim a descent from the ancient Glendwynnes of Galloway, when Murray interrupted him with a smile.

"Nay—nay—leave pedigree to backs and hands. In our days each man is the son of his own deeds. The glorious light of reformation hath shone alike on prince and peasant; and peasant as well as prince may be illustrated by fighting in its defence. It is a stirring world, where all may advance themselves who have stout hearts and strong arms. Tell me frankly why thou hast left thy father's house?"

Herbert Glendinning made a frank confession of his deal with Pierce Shotton, and mentioned his supposed death.

"By my hand," said Murray, "thou art a bold spence-brack, to match thee so early with such a life as Pierce Shotton. Queen Elizabeth would give her glove filled with gold coppers to know that meddling counsellor to be under the rod.—Would she not, Morton?"

"Ay, by my word, and esteem her glove a better gift than the crown," replied Morton, "which few Border lads like this fellow will esteem just valuation."

"But what shall we do with this young hoodlak?" said Murray; "what will our presbiter say?"

"Till them of Moss and of Benshie," said Morton; "it is but the writing of an Egyptian when all is said out."

"Let it be so," said Murray, laughing; "but we will bury the tale, as the prophet bid the body, in the mud. I will take care of this creature.—Be near to us, Glendinning, show that is thy name. We retain thee as a square of our household. The master of our house will see thee fully equipped and armed."

During the expedition which he was now engaged in, Murray found several opportunities of putting Glendinning's courage and presence of mind to the test, and he began to rise so rapidly in his esteem, that those who knew the Earl considered the youth's future as certain. One step only was wanting to raise him to a still higher degree of confidence and favour—it was the abjuration of the Popish religion. The ministers who attended upon Murray, and formed his chief support amongst the people, found an easy convert in Halbert Glendinning, who, from his earliest days, had never felt much devotion towards the Catholic faith, and who listened eagerly to more reasonable views of religion. By thus adopting the faith of his master, he rose higher in his favour, and was constantly about his person during his prolonged stay in the west of Scotland, which the intimacy of those whom the Earl had to deal with, precluded from day to day, and week to week.

CHAPTER THIRTY-SIXTH.

Print the din of battle here's!

Trudget down the hollow wild;

War and terror fill below,

Wounds and death were left behind

Forever.

Two months of the year was well advanced, when the Earl of Morton, one morning, rather unexpectedly, entered the antechamber of Murray, in which Halbert Glendinning was standing.

"Call your master, Halbert," said the Earl; "I have news for him from Torcisdale; and for you too, Glendinning:—

"Now! now! my Lord of Marry!" he exclaimed at the door of the Earl's bedroom; "come forth instantly!" The Earl appeared, and greeted him ally, demanding eagerly his tidings.

"I have had a sure friend with me from the south," said Morton; "he has been at Saint Mary's Monastery, and brings important tidings."

"Of what complexion?" said Marry, "and can you trust the bearer?"

"He is faithful, on my life," said Morton; "I wish all around your Lordship may prove equally so."

"At what, and where, do you point?" demanded Marry.

"There is the Egyptian of trusty Halbert Goodkneaz, our Scotland House, come alive again, and flourishing, gay and bright as ever, in that Tiviotdale Goshen, the Bablons of Kewynsham."

"What mean you, my lord?" said Marry.

"Only that your new bonchman has put a false tale upon you. Fie on Shafon is alive and well; by the same token that the girl is thought to be detained there by love to a miller's daughter, who roamed the country with him in disguise."

"Goodkneaz," said Marry, leading his beer into his darkest drawers, "thou hast not, I trust, dared to bring me a lie in thy mouth, in order to win my confidence?"

"My lord," said Halbert, "I am incapable of a lie. I should doubt on one were my life to require that I pronounced it. I say, that this sword of my father was through the body—the point came out behind his back—the left passed upon his breast-bone. And I will plunge it as deep in the body of any one who shall dare to charge me with falsehood."

"Now, fellow!" said Morton, "wouldst thou hard a nobleman?"

"Be silent, Halbert," said Marry, "and you, my Lord of Morton, forbear him. I see truth written on his brow."

"I wish the words of the manuscript may correspond with the inscription," replied his more suspicious ally. "Look to it, my lord, you will one day lose your life by too much confidence."

"And you will lose your friends by being too rashly suspicious," answered Marry. "Enough of this—let me hear thy tidings."

"Sir John Foster," said Morton, "is about to send a party into Scotland to waste the Highlands."

"How! without waiting my presence and permission?" said Murray—"he is mad!--will he come as an enemy into the Queen's country?"

"He has Elizabeth's express orders," answered Morton, "and they are not to be trifled with. Indeed, his march has been more than once projected and laid aside during the time we have been here, and has roused much alarm at Keweenaw. Besides, the old Abbot, has resigned, and whom, think you, they have chosen in his place?"

"No one, surely," said Murray; "they would presume to hold an election until the Queen's pleasure and mine were known?"

Morton shrugged his shoulders—"They have chosen the pupil of old Cardinal Beaton, that wily dissipated champion of Rome, the house friend of our busy Primate of Saint Andrews. Beaton, late the Sub-Prior of Keweenaw, is now the abbot, and, like a second Pope Julius, is keeping men and making warren to fight with Foster if he comes forward."

"We must prevent that meeting," said Murray, hotly; "whichever party wins the day, it will be a fatal encounter for us—"Who commands the troop of the Abbot?"

"Our faithful old friend, Julian Awood, nothing less," answered Morton.

"Gladfinger," said Murray, "sound trumpets to arms directly, and let all who love us get on horseback without delay—You, my lord, thus were indeed a fatal dilemma. If we take part with our English friends, the country will cry shame on us—the very old wives will attack us with their rods and squalls—the very stones of the street will rise up against us—we cannot set our face to such a deed of shame. And my sister, whose confidence I already have such difficulty in preserving, will altogether withdraw it from me. Then, were we to oppose the English Warlike, Elizabeth would call it a protesting of her enemies, and what not, and we should lose her."

"The shadragon," said Morton, "is the best card in my pack; and yet I would not willingly stand still and see English ladies carve Scots flesh—What say you to listening by the way, marking the and away for fear of spoiling our horses? They might then fight day fight hell, fight Abbot fight archer,

and no one could blame us for what chanced when we were not present."

"All would blame us, James Douglas," replied Murray; "we should have both sides—we had better advance with the utmost secrecy, and do what we can to keep the peace between them.—I would the sag that brought Pierre Shafan hither had broken his neck over the highest beach in Northernland!—He is a proper enough to make all this trouble about, and to occasion perhaps a national war!"

"Had we known in time," said Douglas, "we might have had him privately waited upon as he entered the Borders; there are stopping holes enough would have rid us of him for the force of his spear-throwing." But to the saddle, James Stewart, since so the pleasure goes. I hear your trumpets would be hoarse and away—we shall soon see which sag is best handled."

Followed by a train of about three hundred well-mounted man-at-arms, these two powerful barons directed their courses to Dunblain, and from thence onward to Tertiodale, marching at a rate which, as Morton had foretold, soon disabled a good many of their horses, so that when they approached the scene of expected action, there were not above two hundred of their train remaining in a body, and of these most were mounted on steeds which had been acutely jaded.

They had hitherto been aroused and agitated by various reports concerning the advance of the English soldiers and the degree of resistance which the Abbot was able to oppose to them. But when they were six or seven miles from Saint Mary's of Kennowchar, a gentleman of the country, whom Murray had succeeded to attract him, and on whose intelligence he knew he could rely, arrived at the head of two or three servants, "bloody with spurring, fiery red with haste." According to his report, Sir John Foster, after several times commencing, and as often delaying, his intended invasion, had at last been so stung with the news that Pierre Shafan was openly residing within the Refectory, that he determined to execute the command of his mistress, which directed him, at every risk, to make himself master of the Populists's person. The Abbot's retreating warriors had collected a body of men almost equal in number to those of the English Warden, but less practised in arms. They were united under the command of John Arrol,

"Spurring—Spurring."

and it was apprehended they would join battle upon the banks of a small stream which forms the verge of the Hildons.

"Who knows the place?" said Murray.

"I do, my lord," answered Glendinning.

"The well," said the Earl; "take a score of the best-mounted horse—make what haste thou canst, and announce to them that I am coming up instantly with a strong power, and will cut to pieces, without mercy, whichever party strikes the first blow.—Davidson," said he to the gentleman who brought the intelligence, "thou shalt be my guide.—Ere thou go, Glendinning—say to Foster I conjure him as he respects his mistress's service, that he will leave the matter in my hands. Say to the Abbot, I will turn the Monastery over his head, if he strikes a stroke till I come—Tell the dog, Julian Arden, that he hath already one dog worse to settle with me—I will set his head on the top of the highest pinnacle of Saint Mary's, if he presume to open another. Make haste, and spare not the spur for fear of spilling horse-flesh."

"Your bidding shall be obeyed, my lord," said Glendinning; and choosing those whose horses were in best plight to be his standards, he went off as fast as the jaded state of their cavalry permitted. Hill and hollow vanished from under the feet of the chieftains.

They had not ridden half the way, when they met struggles coming off from the field, whose appearance announced that the conflict was begun. Two supported in their arms a third, their elder brother, who was pierced with an arrow through the body. Halbert, who knew those to belong to the Hildons, called them by their names, and questioned them of the state of the affray; but just then, in spite of their efforts to retain him in the saddle, their brother dropped from the horse, and they dismounted in haste to revive his lost breath. From men thus engaged no information was to be obtained. Glendinning, therefore, pushed on with his little troop, the more anxiously, as he perceived other struggles, bearing Saint Andrew's cross upon their caps and corselets, flying apparently from the field of battle. Most of these when they were aware of a body of horsemen approaching on the road, held to the one head or the other, at such a distance as precluded coming to speech of them. Others, whose fear was more intense, kept the upward road, galloping wildly as fast as their horses could carry them, and

when questioned, only glared without reply on those who spoke to them, and rode on without daring hostile. Several of these were also known to Hilbert, who had therefore no doubt, from the circumstances in which he met them, that the men of the Haldings were defeated. He became now suspiciously anxious concerning the fate of his brother, who, he could not doubt, must have been engaged in the slaying. He therefore increased the speed of his horse, so that not above two or six of his followers could keep up with him. At length he reached a little hill, at the descent of which, surrounded by a circular sweep of a small stream, lay the plain which had been the scene of the skirmish.

It was a melancholy spectacle. War and terror, to use the expression of the poet, had rushed on to the field, and left only wounds and death behind them. The battle had been stoutly contested, as was almost always the case with these Border skirmishes, where ancient hatred and mutual injuries made men stubborn in maintaining the cause of their conflict. Towards the middle of the plain, there lay the bodies of several men who had fallen in the very act of grappling with the enemy; and there were seen contumacious which still bore the stern expression of unextinguishable hate and defiance, hands which clasped the hilt of the broken falchion, or strove in vain to pluck the deadly arrow from the wound. Some were wounded, and, covered of the courage they had lately shown, were begging aid, and craving water, in a tone of melancholy depression, while others tried to teach the slithering tongue to pronounce some half-forgotten prayer, which, even when first learned, they had but half understood. Hilbert, uncertain what course he was next to pursue, rode through the plain to see if among the dead or wounded, he could discover any traces of his brother Edward. He experienced no interruption from the English. A distant clod of dust announced that they were still pursuing the scattered fugitives, and he guessed, that to approach them with his followers until they were again under some command would be to throw away his own life and that of his men, whom the victors would instantly confound with the Scots against whom they had been successful. He resolved, therefore, to press on till Murray came up with his force, to which he was the more readily moved, as he heard the trumpet of the English Warden sounding the retreat, and reeling from the pursuit.

He drew his men together, and made a stand in an advantageous spot of ground, which had been occupied by the Scots in the beginning of the action, and most severely disputed while the skirmish lasted.

While he stood here, Halbert's ear was assailed by the feeble moan of a woman, which he had not expected to hear until that scene until the retreat of the Scots had permitted the relations of the slain to approach, for the purpose of burying them the last duties. He looked with anxiety, and at length observed, that by the body of a knight in bright armour, whose crest, though soiled and bruised, still shewed the marks of rank and birth, there sat a female wrapped in a horseman's cloak, and holding something pressed against her bosom, which he soon discovered to be a child. He glanced towards the English. They advanced not, and she continued and prolonged wail of their transports, with the shouts of the leaders, announced that their powers would not be instantly reassembled. He had, therefore, a moment to look after this unfortunate woman. He gave his horse to a spearmen as he dismounted, and approaching the wretched female, asked her, in the most soothing tone he could assume, whether he could assist her in her distress. The mourner made him no direct answer; but, raising cunning, with a trembling and unskilful hand, to undo the springs of the tunic and gorget, said, in a tone of impatient grief, "Oh, he would ransom instantly could I but give him air—dead and living, life and honour, would I give for the power of making these cruel iron platings that suffocate him!" He that would soothe sorrow must not argue on the vanity of the most cherished hopes. The body lay as that of one whose last draught of vital air had been drawn, and who must never more have converse with the mother sky. But Halbert Glenfinning failed not to raise the tunic and cast loose the gorget, when, to his great surprise, he recognised the pale face of John Arnold. His last sight was over, the fierce and terrible spirit had departed in the strife in which it had so long delighted.

"Alas! he is gone," said Halbert, speaking to the young woman, in whom he had now no difficulty of knowing the unhappy Catherine.

"Oh, no, no, no," she reiterated, "do not say so—he is not dead—he is but in a swoon. I have him no long in one myself—and then his voice would arouse me, when he spoke kindly,

and said, Catherine, look up for my sake—And look up, John, for mine!" she said, addressing the senseless corpse; "I know you do but counteract to frighten me, but I am not frightened," she added, with an hysterical attempt to laugh, and then instantly changing her tone, entreated him to "speak, were it but to cure my folly. Oh, the saddest word you ever said to me would now sound like the dearest you wasted on me before I gave you all. Lift him up," she said, "lift him up, for God's sake!—have you no compassion? He promised to wed me if I bore him a boy, and this child is so like to his father!—How shall he keep his word if you do not help me to awaken him?—Christie of the Clirfhill, Boveley, Hridham! ye were constant at his feet, but ye fled from him at the day, false villains as ye are!"

"Nay I, by Heaven!" said a dying man, who made some shift to raise himself on his elbow, and discovered to Halbert the well-known features of Christie, "I had not a foot, and a man can but fight while his breath lasts—mine is going fast—So, youngsters," said he, looking at Glendinning, and seeing his military dress, "thou hast to'm the banner at last? It is a better cup to live in than to die in. I would chance had sent thy brother here instead—there was good in him—but thou art as wild, and wilt soon be as wicked, as myself."

"God forbid!" said Halbert hastily.

"Marry, and amen, with all my heart," said the wounded man, "there will be company enough without those where I am going. But God be praised I had no hand in that wickedness," said he, looking to poor Catherine; and with some exclamation in his mouth, that sounded betwixt a prayer and a curse, the soul of Christie of the Clirfhill took wing to the last account.

Deeply wrapt in the painful interest which these shocking events had excited, Glendinning forgot for a moment his own situation and duties, and was first recalled to them by a tramping of hoofs, and the cry of Saint George for England, which the English soldiers still continued to use. His handful of men, for most of the stragglers had waited for Marry's coming up, remained on horseback, holding their lances upright, having no command either to retreat or resist.

"There stands our Captain," said one of them, as a strong party of English came up, the vanguard of Foster's troop.

"Your Captain! with his sword sheathed, and on foot in

the presence of his enemy! a new soldier, I warrant him," said the English leader. "So be! young man, be your device out, and will you now answer me if you will fight or fly?"

"Naythen," answered Halbert Glendinning, with great tranquillity.

"Then throw down thy sword and yield thee," answered the Englishman.

"Not till I can help myself as otherwise," said Halbert, with the same moderation of tone and manner.

"Art thou for thine own hand, friend, or to whom dost thou owe service?" demanded the English Captain.

"To the noble Earl of Murray."

"Then thou art not," said the Scotman, "the most delayed nobleman who breathes—also both to England and Scotland."

"Thou dost," said Glendinning, regardless of all consequences.

"He! art thou so hot now, and wert so cold but a minute since! I ha, do I! Wilt thou do battle with me on that quarrel?"

"With one to one—one to two—or two to five, as you list," said Halbert Glendinning; "grant me but a fair field."

"That thou shalt have.—Stand back, my masters," said the brave Englishman. "If I fall, give him fair play, and let him go off free with his people."

"Long life to the noble Captain!" cried the soldiers, as impatient to see the deed, as if it had been a bull-baiting.

"He will have a short life of it, though," said the surgeon, "if he, an old man of sixty, is to fight for any cause, or for no reason, with every man he meets, and especially the young fellows he might be fonder to.—And here comes the Warden besides to see the sword-play."

In fact, Sir John Foster came up with a considerable body of his horsemen, just as his Captain, whose age rendered him unequal to the combat with an strong and active a youth as Glendinning, was deprived of his sword.

"Take it up for shame, old Steward's Bolton," said the English Warden; "and thou, young man, tell me who and what thou art?"

"A follower of the Earl of Murray, who bears his will to your honour," answered Glendinning;—"but here he comes to say it himself; I see the van of his horsemen come over the hills."

"Get into order, my masters," said Sir John Foster to his

followers; "you that have broken your spears, draw your swords. We are something unprovided for a second field, but if yonder dark cloud on the hill-side bring us foul weather, we must bear as bravely as our broken shields will bide it. Meanwhile, Stearnish, we have got the deer we have hunted for—here is Pierre Shafton dead and fast between two troopers."

"Who, that lad?" said Bolton; "he is no more Pierre Shafton than I am. He hath his gay cloak soaked—but Pierre Shafton is a round dozen of years older than that slip of roguery. I have known him since he was three high. Did you never see him in the tilt-yard or in the presence?"

"To the devil with such ventrilo!" said Sir John Foster; "where had I known for them or any thing else? During my whole life has she kept me to the hangman's office, chasing thieves one day and traitors another, in daily fear of my life; the lance never hung up in the hall, the foot never out of the stirrup, the saddle never off my night back, and now, because I have been mistaken in the person of a man I never saw, I warrant me, the next letter from the Privy Council will rate me as I were a dog—a man were better dead than thus shamed and harassed."

A trumpet interrupted Foster's complaints, and a Scottish parliament who attended, declared "that the noble Earl of Murray desired, in all honour and safety, a personal conference with Sir John Foster, midway between their parties, with six of company to each, and ten few minutes to come and go."

"And now," said the Englishman, "come another plague. I must go speak with yonder false Scot, and he knows how to drive his dagger, to cast dust in the eyes of a plain man, as well as over a knife in the scabbard. I am no match for him in words, and for hard blows we are but too ill provided.—Pursuivant, we grant the conference—and you, Sir Swainman" (speaking to young Glendinning), "draw off with your troopers to your own party—march—swoop your Earl's trumpet.—Stearns Bolton, put our troop in order, and be ready to move forward at the wagging of a finger.—Oh you gone to your own friends, I tell you, Sir English, and let her not here."

Notwithstanding this peremptory order, Gilbert Glendinning could not help stopping to cast a look upon the water-worn Catherine, who lay mangled of the danger and of the trampling of so many horses around her, insensible, as the

around glanced toward him, of all and for ever. Overpassing almost rejoiced when he saw that the last misery of life was over, and that the heels of the war-horses, amongst which he was compelled to leave her, could only injure and deface a senseless corpse. He caught the infant from her arms, half ashamed of the shout of laughter which rose on all sides, at seeing an armed man in such a situation assume such an unbecoming and inconceivable burden.

"Shoulder your infant!" cried a harquebussier.

"Put your infant!" said a pikeman.

"Peace, ye brutes," said Starvath Daltre, "and respect humanity in others if you have none yourselves. I pardon the lad having done some damage to my gay hair, when I see him take care of that helpless creature, which ye would have trampled upon as if ye had been littered of bitch-wolves, not born of women."

While this passed, the leaders on either side met in the neutral space between the doors of either, and the Earl accosted the English Warden. "Is this fair or honest usage, Sir John, or for what do you hold the Earl of Morton and myself, that you ride in Scotland with arrayed banner, light, day, and under prisoners at your own pleasure? Is it well done, think you, to spoil our land and shed our blood, after the many proofs we have given to your mistress of our devotion due to her will, saving always the allegiance due to our own sovereign?"

"My Lord of Murray," answered Foster, "all the world knows you to be a man of quick legues and deep wisdom, and these several weeks have you held me in hand with promising to arrest my sovereign mistress's rebel, this Francis Shafton of Winton, and you have never kept your word, alleging farmale in the west, and I wait not what other excuse of hardness. Now, since he has had the foreknowledge to return hither, and live quietly within ten miles of England, I could no longer, in plain duty to my mistress and queen, tarry upon your excessive delays, and therefore I have and her done to take her rebel, by the strong hand, wherever I can find him."

"And in Francis Shafton is your hands, then?" said the Earl of Murray. "Be aware that I may not, without my own great shame, suffer you to remove him hence without doing battle."

"Will you, Lord Earl, after all the advantages you have

received at the hands of the Queen of England, do battle in the name of her rebel!" said Sir John Foster.

"Not so, Sir John," answered the Earl, "but I will fight to the death in defence of the liberties of our free kingdom of Scotland."

"By my faith," said Sir John Foster, "I am well content—my sword is not blunted with all it has done yet this day."

"By my honour, Sir John," said Sir George Hume of Chichester, "there is but little reason we should fight these Scottish Lords a'en now, for I hold opinion with old Stewart Bolton, and believe yonder prisoner to be no more Pierre Shafton than he is the Earl of Northumberland; and you were but ill advised to break the peace betwixt the countries for a prisoner of less consequence than that gay mischief-maker."

"Sir George," replied Foster, "I have often heard you barons are afraid of lawless—hey, lay not hand on sword, man—I did but jest; and for this prisoner, let him be brought up hither, that we may see who or what he is—always under armour, my lords," he continued, addressing the Scots.

"Upon our word and honour," said Morton, "we will offer no violence."

The laugh turned against Sir John Foster considerably, when the prisoner, being brought up, proved not only a different person from Sir Pierre Shafton, but a female in man's attire.

"Fluck the mantle from the queen's face, and cast her to the horn-bogs," said Foster; "she has kept such company as are, I warrant."

Even Murray was moved to laughter, no common thing with him, at the disappointment of the English Wardens; but he would not permit any violence to be offered to the fair Malcolm, who had thus a second time rescued Sir Pierre Shafton at her own personal risk.

"You have already done more mischief than you can well answer," said the Earl to the English Wardens, "and it were dishonour to me should I permit you to have a hair of this young woman's head."

"My lord," said Morton, "if Sir John will ride apart with me but for one moment, I will show him such reasons as shall make him content to depart, and to refer this whillock day's work to the judgment of the Commissioners nominated to try offences on the Border."

He then led Sir John Foster aside, and spoke to him in this manner :—" Sir John Foster, I much marvel that a man who knows your Queen Elizabeth as you do, should not know that, if you hope anything from her, it must be for doing her useful service, not for involving her in quarrels with her neighbours, without any advantage. Sir Knight, I will speak frankly what I know to be true. Had you seized the true Pierre Shafton by this ill-adviced counsel, and had your deed threatened, as some likely it might, a breach betwixt the countries, your politic process and her politic counsel would rather have disgraced Sir John Foster than entered into war in his behalf. But now that you have stricken short of your aim, you may rely on it you will have little thanks for carrying the matter farther. I will work close for on the Earl of Murray, that he will undertake to demand Sir Pierre Shafton from the realm of Scotland.—Be well advised, and let the matter now pass off—you will gain nothing by further violence, for if we fight, you, as the fitter and the weaker through your former action, will surely have the worse."

Sir John Foster listened with his head declining on his breast-plate.

"It is a cruel chance," he said, "and I shall have little thanks for my day's work."

He then rode up to Murray, and said, that, in deference to his Lordship's presence and that of my Lord of Morton, he had come to the resolution of withdrawing himself, with his power, without further proceedings.

"Stay there, Sir John Foster," said Murray, "I cannot permit you to retire in safety, unless you have some one who may be sworn to Scotland, that the injuries you have at present done us may be fully accounted for,—you will reflect that by permitting your retreat, I become accountable to my Sovereign, who will demand a redressing of me for the blood of her subjects, if I suffer those who shed it to depart so easily."

"It shall never be told in England," said the Warrior, "that John Foster gave pledges like a subdued man, and that on the very field on which he made victorious.—But," he added, after a moment's pause, "if Stewart's Bolton will to stand with you on his own free choice, I will say nothing against it; and, as I bethink me, it were better he should stay to see the distress of this same Pierre Shafton."

"I receive him as your hostage, nevertheless, and shall treat him as such," said the Earl of Murray. But Foster, turning away as if to give directions to Balton and his men, effected not to hear this declaration.

"There rides a faithful servant of His most beautiful and Sovereign Lady," said Murray aside to Morton. "Happy man ! he knows not whether the execution of her commands may not cost him his head ; and yet he is most certain that to leave them unexecuted will bring disgrace and death without reprieve. Happy are they who are not only subjected to the caprice of Dame Fortune, but held bound to account and be responsible for them, and that to a sovereign as moody and fickle as her humorous ladyship herself!"

"We also have a female Sovereign, my lord," said Morton.

"We have so, Douglas," said the Earl, with a suppressed sigh, "but it remains to be seen how long a female hand can hold the reins of power in a realm so wild as ours. We will now go on to Saint Mary's, and see ourselves after the state of that House.—Glenfleming, look to that woman and protect her.—What the fiend, man, hast thou got in thine arms!—an infant, as I live!—where couldst thou find such a charge, at such a place and moment?"

Robert Glenfleming briefly told the story. The Earl rode forward to the place where the body of Julian Avenel lay, with his unhappy companion's arms wrapped around him like the trunk of an uprooted oak borne down by the tempest with all its try gullsands. Both were cold dead. Murray was touched in an unwonted degree, remembering, perhaps, his own birth. "What have they to answer for, Douglas," he said, "who thus abuse the sweetest gifts of affection?"

The Earl of Morton, unhappy in his marriage, was a libertine in his amours.

"You must ask that question of Henry Warden, my lord, or of John Knox—I am but a wild counsellor in women's matters."

"Forward to Saint Mary's," said the Earl ; "pass the word on—Glenfleming, give the infant to this same female scoundrel, and let it be taken charge of. Let no dishonour be done to the dead ladies, and call on the country to bury or remove them.—Forward, I say, my masters!"

CHAPTER THIRTY-SEVENTH.

One to be married?—One to wear a garland

KING JOHN.

THE news of the lost battle, so quickly carried by the fugitives to the village and convent, had spread the greatest alarm among the inhabitants. The Sacristan and other monks counselled flight; the Treasurer recommended that the church plate should be offered as a tribute to bribe the English officer; the Abbot alone was unmoved and undaunted.

"My brethren," he said, "since God has not given our people victory in the combat, it must be because he requires of us, his spiritual soldiers, to fight the good fight of martyrdom, a conflict in which nothing but our own false-hearted cowardice can make us feel of victory. Let us accept, then, the arrows of faith, and prepare, if it be necessary, to die under the ruin of these shrines, to the service of which we have devoted ourselves. Highly honoured are we all in this distinguished monastery, from our dear brother Nicholas, whose grey hairs have been preserved until they should be accompanied by the crown of martyrdom, down to my beloved son Edward, who, arriving at the vineyard at the latest hour of the day, is yet permitted to share its till with those who have laboured from the morning. Be of good courage, my children. I dare not, like my unholy predecessors, promise to you that you shall be preserved by miracle—I and you are alike unworthy of that special interposition, which in earlier times turned the sword of martyrdom against the bosom of tyrants by whom it was wielded, devoted this backsliding heart of heretics with prodigies, and called down hosts of angels to defend the shrines of God and of the Virgin. Yet, by heavenly aid, you shall this day see that your Father and Abbot will not disgrace the altar which sits upon his bosom. Go to your cells, my children, and exercise your private devotions. Array yourselves also in silk and tape, as for our next solemn festival, and be ready, when the tolling of the deepest bell announces the approach of the enemy, to march forth to meet them in solemn procession. Let the church be opened to afford such refuge as may be to those of our number, who, from their exertion in this day's unhappy battle, or other

must, are particularly apprehensive of the rage of the enemy. Tell Sir Pierre Shafton, if he has escaped the light"—

"I am here, most venerable Abbot," replied Sir Pierre; "and if it is enough need to you, I will personally assemble such of the men as have escaped this catastrophe, and will renew the resistance, even unto the death. Certain, you will have from all that I did my part in this unhappy matter. Had it pleased Julian Arundel to have attended to my counsel, especially in somewhat withholding of his men's battle, even as you may have marked the lion's colour the stoop of the falcon, removing here rather upon his back than upon his wing, officers, as I do conceive, might have had a different fate, and we might then, in a more bellicose manner, have maintained that office. Nevertheless, I would not be understood to speak anything in derogation of Julian Arundel, whom I saw fall fighting manfully with his face to his enemy, which hath banished from my memory the unseemly term of 'mocking oncomers' with which it pleased him something rashly to qualify my advice, and for which, had it pleased Heaven and the saints to have prolonged the life of that saintliest person, I had it heard upon my soul to have put him to death with my own hand."

"Sir Pierre," said the Abbot, at length interrupting him, "our time allows brief leisure to speak what might have been."

"You are right, most venerable Lord and Father," replied the incorrigible Englishman; "the priorite, as grammarians have it, conceive first mortality less than the future mood, and indeed our cogitations respect chiefly the present. In a word, I am willing to head all who will follow me, and offer such opposition as manhood and mortality may permit, to the advance of the English, though they be my own countrymen; and be assured Pierre Shafton will receive his length, being five feet ten inches, on the ground as he stands, rather than give two yards in retreat, according to the usual notice in which we retrograde."

"I thank you, Sir Knight," said the Abbot, "and I doubt not that you would make your work good, but it is not the will of Heaven that carnal weapons should wound us. We are called to endure, not to resist, and may not waste the blood of our innocent consciences in vain.—Fruitless opposition becomes not men of our profession; they have no commands to resign the sword and the spear—God and Our Lady have not blessed our banner."

"Dost think you, reverend lord," said Patrick Shafton, very eagerly, "are you resign the defence that it is in your power—there are many posts near the entry of this village where brave men might live or die to the advantage; and I have this additional motive to make defence—the safety, namely, of a fair friend, who, I hope, hath escaped the hands of the heathen."

"I understood you, Sir Patrick," said the Abbot—"you mean the daughter of our Curwen's sister?"

"Reverend my lord," said Sir Patrick, not without hesitation, "the fair Myriam is, as may be in some sort alleged, the daughter of one who mechanically preposeth care to be manipulated into bond, without which we could not exist, and which is therefore an employment in itself honourable, nay, necessary. Nevertheless, if the purest sentiments of a generous mind, streaming forth like the rays of the sun reflected by a diamond, may smother one, who is in some sort the daughter of a voluntary merchant"—

"I have no time for all this, Sir Knight," said the Abbot, "be it enough to answer, that with our will we are no longer with mortal weapons. We of the spirituality will teach you of the temporality how to die in cold blood, our hands not clutched for resistance, but folded for prayer—our minds not filled with jealous hatred, but with Christian meekness and forgiveness—our ears not obtunded, nor our senses confused, by the sound of clamorous instruments of war; but, on the contrary, our voices composed to Hallelujah, Kyrie-Eleison, and Salve Regina, and our blood temperate and cold, as those who think upon reconciling themselves with God, not of avenging themselves of their fellow-creatures."

"Lord Abbot," said Sir Patrick, "this is nothing to the fate of my Malheur, whom, I beseech you to observe, I will not abandon while golden hilt and steel blade hold together on my scabbard. I commanded her not to follow us to the field, and yet methought I saw her in her page's attire amongst the rear of the combatants."

"You must seek elsewhere for the person in whose fate you are so deeply interested," said the Abbot; "and at present I will pray of your lordship to inquire concerning her at the church, in which all our more delicate minds have taken refuge. It is my advice to you, that you also abide by the house of the altar; and, Sir Patrick Shafton," he added, "be at

one thing worse, that if you come to harm it will involve the whole of this brotherhood; for never, I trust, will the moment of us lay safety at the expense of surrendering a friend or a guest. Leave us, my son, and may God be your aid!"

When Sir Philip Shafton had departed, and the Abbot was about to bathe himself in his own oil, he was surprised by an unknown person suddenly requiring a conference, who, being admitted, proved to be no other than Henry Warden. The Abbot started as he entered, and exclaimed eagerly—"He! are the few hours that fate allows him who may not wear the mitre of this house, not to be crossed from the entrance of horror? Dost thou come," he said, "to enjoy the hopes which fate holds out to thy demented and accursed sect, to see the beams of destruction sweep away the pride of old religion—to deface our shrines—to mutilate and lay waste the bodies of our benefactors, as well as their sepulchres—to destroy the planisphere and carved work of God's house and our Lady's?"

"Peace, William Allen!" said the Protestant preacher, with dignified composure; "for some of these purposes do I come I would have those stately shrines deprived of the idols which, no longer simply regarded as the offices of the good and of the wise, have become the objects of foul idolatry. I would otherwise have the ornaments subdued, unless as they are or may be a scare to the souls of men; and especially do I condemn those ravages which have been made by the bloody fury of the people, stung into mad against well-working by bloody persecution. Against such wastes devastations I lift my testimony."

"It is dangerous that thou art!" said the Abbot Barrow, interrupting him; "what signifies the protest under which thou dost despoil the houses of God? and why at this present emergency with thou insult the Master of it by thy diabolical protest?"

"Thou art unjust, William Allen," said Wattsley; "but I am not the less united in my resolution. Thou hast protected me some time since at the hazard of thy rank, and what I know thou holdest still dearer, at the risk of thy reputation with these new sect. Our party is now uppermost, and, believe me, I have come down the valley, in which thou dost quarter us in sequestration's robes, simply with the wish to keep my engagements to thee."

"Ay," answered the Abbot, "and it may be that my inter-

ing to that worldly and infirm compassion which pleaded with me for thy life, is now avenged by this impending judgment. Heaven hath visited, it may be, the erring shepherd, and scattered the flock."

"Think better of the Divine judgments," said Warden. "Not for thy sins, which are those of thy ill-learned education and circumstances; not for those own sins, William Allen, art thou striken, but for the accumulated guilt which thy infatuated Church hath accumulated on her head, and those of her votaries, by the errors and corruptions of ages."

"Now, by my sure belief in the Book of Peter," said the Abbot, "thou dost rebuke the last spark of human indignation for which my bosom has fed—I thought I might not again have felt the impulse of earthly passion, and it is thy voice which once more calls me to the expression of human anger! yea, it is thy voice that counsel to harden me in my hour of sorrow with those blaspheinous assertions of that church which hath kept the light of Christianity alive from the times of the Apostles till now."

"From the times of the Apostles?" said the preacher eagerly. "Nay, *William Allen*—the primitive church differed as much from that of Rome, as did light from darkness, which, did thou permit, I should speedily prove. And were that thou judge, in saying I come to harden thee in thy hour of affliction, bring here, God wot, with the Christian wish of fulfilling an engagement I had made to my host, and of rendering myself to thy will while it had yet power to exercise ought upon me, and if it might so be, to mitigate in thy behalf the rage of the violence whom God hath sent as a scourge to thy obstinacy."

"I will none of thy intemperance," said the Abbot, sternly; "the dignity to which the Church has exalted me, never should have availed my bosom more proudly in the time of the highest prosperity, than it doth at this crisis—I ask nothing of thee, but the assurance that my hurry to thee hath been the means of perverting no word to Rome, that I have not given to the wolf any of the sheep beside whom the Great Shepherd of earth had intrusted to my charge."

"William Allen," answered the Protestant, "I will be sincere with thee. What I promised I have kept—I have withheld my voice from speaking even good things. But it has pleased Heaven to call the maiden Mary Arden to a better state of

faith than thou, and all the disciples of House can teach. Has I have aided with my feeble power—I have extricated her from the machinations of evil spirits to which she and her house were exposed during the blindness of their Danish superstition, and, praise be to my Master, I have not reason to fear she will again be caught in thy snare."

"Wretched man!" said the Abbot, unable to suppress his rising indignation, "is it to the Abbot of Saint Mary's that you have dared unaided to send of a dealer in Our Lady's Holiness into the paths of foul error and damning heresy?—Thou dost rage me, Wulfward, beyond what it becomes me to bear, and inmost me to employ the few moments of power I may yet possess, in removing from the face of the earth one, whose qualities, given by God, have been so utterly perverted as done to the service of Satan."

"Do thy pleasure," said the preacher; "thy vain wrath shall not prevent my doing my duty to advantage there, where it may be done without neglecting my higher call. I go to the Hall of Monks."

The conference, which was advancing fast into bitter dissension, was here interrupted by the deep and solemn toll of the largest and heaviest bell of the Convent, a sound famous in the churches of the Community, for dispelling of tempests, and putting to flight demons, but which now only announced danger, without offering any means of working against it. Hastily repeating his orders, that all the brethren should attend in the choir, arrayed for solemn procession, the Abbot ascended to the battlements of the holy Monastery, by his own private staircase, and there met the Sacristan, who had been in the act of directing the tolling of the huge bell, which toll under his charge.

"It is the last time I shall discharge mine office, most venerable Father and Lord," said he to the Abbot, "for yonder come the Philistines; but I would not that the huge bell of Saint Mary's should sound for the last time, otherwise than in true and full tone—I have been a sinful man for one of our holy profession," added he, looking upward, "yet may I presume to say, not a bell hath sounded out of tune from the tower of the house, while Father Philip had the superintendence of the chime and the bellfy."

The Abbot, without reply, cast his eyes towards the path,

which, winding round the mountain, descends upon Kinnquhallen, from the south-east. He beheld at a distance a crowd of deer, and heard the sighing of many houses, while the occasional spittle of the long line of spears, as they came downwards into the valley, announced that the hunt came thither in arms.

"Shame on my weakness!" said Abbot Western, jerking the tears from his eyes; "my sight is too much dimmed to observe their motions—look, my son Edward," for his favourite novice had again joined him, "and tell me what assigns they bear."

"They are Scottish men, when all is done," exclaimed Edward—"I see the white crosses—it may be the Western Borderers, or Farfichant and his clan."

"Look at the banner," said the Abbot; "tell me, what are the Maccabees?"

"The arms of Scotland," said Edward, "the lion and its treasure, quartered, as I think, with three crosses—Can it be the royal standard?"

"Alas! no," said the Abbot, "it is that of the Earl of Murray. He hath assumed with his new conquest the badge of the valiant Randolph, and hath dropt from his hereditary coat the bend which reflects his own lone birth—would so God he may not have blotted it also from his memory, and alas as well as possessing the name, so the power, of a king."

"At least, my father," said Edward, "he will secure us from the violence of the Scotsmen."

"Ay, my son, as the shepherd secures a silly lamb from the wolf, which he destines in due time to his own banquet. Oh, my son, evil days are on us! A breach has been made in the walls of our sanctuary—thy brother hath fallen from the flock. Such news brought my last secret intelligence—Murray hath already spoken of rewarding his services with the hand of Mary Arundel."

"Of Mary Arundel!" said the novice, tottering towards and grasping hold of one of the carved pinnacles which adorned the proud battlement.

"Ay, of Mary Arundel, my son, who has also shored the faith of her father. Weep not, my Edward, weep not, my beloved son! we weep for their apostasy, and not for their union—Thus God, who hath called thee to himself, out of the

tests of weakness; but for the grace of Our Lady and Saint Elizabeth, thou also hast been a conqueror."

"I endeavour, my father," said Edward, "I endeavour to forget; but what I would now blot from my memory has been the thought of all my former life—Murray dare not forward a match so unequal in birth."

"He dare do what suits his purpose—The Castle of Arundel is strong, and needs a good garrison, devoted to his service; as for the defence of their birth, he will mind it no more than he would what defences the natural regularity of the ground, were it necessary he should erect upon it military lines and entrenchments. But do not dream for that—awaken thy soul within thee, my son. Think you part with a vain vision, as idle dreams, nursed in solitude and inaction—I weep not, yet what am I now like to lose?—Look at those towers, where saints dwell, and where heroes have been buried—Think that I, so lately called to graze over the plain flock, which has dwelt here since the first light of Christianity, may be this day written down the last father of this holy community—Come, let us descend, and meet our fate. I see them approach near to the village."

The Abbot descended, the monks cast a glance around him; yet the sense of the danger impending over the stately structure, with which he was now united, was unable to banish the recollection of Mary Arundel—"His brother's hands!" he pulled the cord over his face, and followed his Superior.

The whole body of the Abbey now added their psal to the death-song of the largest which had so long sounded. The monks wept and prayed as they got themselves into the order of their procession for the last time, as seemed but too probable.

"It is well our Father Dominic hath retired to the island," said Father Philip; "he could never have got over this day—it would have broken his heart!"

"God be with the soul of Abbot Ingelram!" said old Father Nicholas, "there were no such doings in his days.—They say we are to be put forth of the abbacy; and how I am to see anywhere else than where I have lived for these seventy years, I wet not—the best is, that I have not long to see anywhere."

A few moments after this the great gate of the Abbey was swung open, and the procession moved slowly forward from beneath its huge and richly-adorned gateway. Cross and

horses, piers and chaises, stables containing rifles, and others stinging with incense, provided and were intermingled with the long and solemn array of the brotherhood, in their long black gowns and cowls, with their white scapularies hanging over them, the various officers of the convent each displaying his proper badge of office. In the centre of the procession came the Abbot, surrounded and supported by his chief monks. He was dressed in his habit of high adolescence, and appeared as much unaccustomed as if he had been taking his usual part in some ordinary ceremony. After him came the inferior persons of the convent; the novices in their blue or white dresses, and the lay brothers distinguished by their hennin, which were seldom worn by the Fathers. Women and children, mixed with a few men, came in the rear, bewailing the apprehended dissolution of their ancient monastery. They moved, however, in order, and restrained the marks of their sorrow to a low wailing sound, which rather mingled with than interrupted the measured chant of the monks.

In this order the procession entered the marketplace of the village of Keanapahau, which was then, as now, distinguished by an aspect more of various workmanship, the gift of some former monarch of Scotland. Close by the cross, of much greater antiquity, and scarcely less honoured, was an immensely large oak-tree, which perhaps had witnessed the voodoo of the Druids, and the stately Monastery to which it adjacent had raised its spire in honour of the Christian faith. Like the Bucking-horn of the African village, or the Palmetto-oak mentioned in White's Natural History of Barbora, this tree was the rendezvous of the villagers, and regarded with peculiar veneration; a feeling common to most nations, and which perhaps may be traced up to the remote period when the patriarch rested the night under the oak at Mamre.*

The monks found themselves each in their due place around the cross, while under the robe of the aged tree crowded the old and the feeble, with others who felt the common doom. When they had thus arranged themselves, there was a deep and solemn pause. The monks stifled their doubt, the lay populace hushed their lamentations, and all awaited in terror

* It is scarcely necessary to say, that in Mamre, the prototype of Keanapahau, no oak ever existed.

and silence the arrival of those heralded forces, whom they had been so long taught to regard with fear and trembling.

A distant trampling was at length heard, and the glances of suspense were soon to shine through the trees above the village. The sounds increased, and became more thick, and then continuous rushing sound, in which the tread of hoofs was mingled with the ringing of armour. The horsemen soon appeared at the principal entrance, which leads into the irregular square or market-place which forms the centre of the village. They entered two by two, slowly, and in the greatest order. The van continued to move on, riding round the open space, until they had attained the utmost point, and then turning their horses' heads to the street, stood fast; their companions followed in the same order, until the whole marketplace was closely surrounded with soldiers; and the files who followed, making the same manoeuvre, formed an inner line within those who had first arrived, until the place was begirt with a quadruple file of horsemen closely drawn up. There was now a pause, of which the Abbot availed himself, by exhorting the brotherhood to raise the solemn shout *De profundis clamor*. He looked around the crowd round, to see what impression the solemn words made on them. All were silent, but the looks of some had an expression of contempt, and almost all the rest bore a look of indifference; their course had been too long decided to permit past feelings of enthusiasm to be now awakened by a procession or by a signal.

"Their hearts are hardened," said the Abbot to himself in dejection, but not in despair; "it remains to see whether those of their leaders are equally obdurate."

The leaders, in the meanwhile, were advancing slowly, and Murray, with Morton, rode in deep conversation before a chosen band of their most distinguished followers, amongst whom were Halbert Glendinning. But the preacher Henry Warden, who, upon leaving the Monastery, had instantly joined them, was the only person admitted to their conference.

"You are determined, then," said Morton to Murray, "to give the banners of Atonel, with all her possessions, to this ungodly and obscure young man?"

"Hush not Warden told you," said Murray, "that they have been bred together, and are born from their youth up ward?"

"And that they are both," said Warden, "by means which may be almost termed miraculous, rescued from the debasement of Rome, and brought within the pale of the true Church. My residence at Glendunary hath made me well acquainted with these things. It would it became my habit and my calling, to thrust myself into matchmaking and giving in marriage, but worse were it to me to see your lordships do needless wrong to the feelings which are proper to our nature, and which, being indulged honestly and under the restraints of religion, become a pledge of domestic quiet here, and future happiness in a better world. I say, that you will do ill to read those two articles, and to give this maiden to the kinsman of Lord Morton, though Lord Morton's kinsman he be."

"There are fair reasons, my Lord of Murray," said Morton, "why you should refuse me so simple a boon as to bestow this wily dower upon young Beaugeste. Speak out plainly, my lord; say you would rather see the castle of Arundel in the hands of one who owes his name and existence solely to your favour, than in the power of a Douglas, and of my kinsman?"

"My Lord of Morton," said Murray, "I have done nothing in that matter which should grieve you. This young man Glendunary has done me good service, and may do me more. My promise was in some degree passed to him, and that while Julian Arundel was alive, when might beside the noble's lady hand would have been hard to come by, whereas, you never thought of such an alliance for your kinsman, till you saw Julian the stout powder on the field, and knew his hand to be a wall free to the first who could seize it. Come, come, my lord, you do less than justice to your gallant kinsman, in withholding him a bride bred up under the milk-pail; for this girl is a peasant wench in all but the accident of birth. I thought you had more deep respect for the honour of the Douglasses."

"The honour of the Douglasses is safe in my keeping," answered Morton, haughtily; "that of other ancient families may suffer as well as the name of Arundel, if names are to be matched with the blood of our ancient houses."

"This is hot life talking," answered Lord Murray; "in times like these, we must look to men and not to pedigrees. Hay was but a cattle before the battle of Luncarty—the bloody pole actually dragged the plough ere it was blazoned on a crest by the baron. Times of action make peacocks into peasantries, and

hoors into hours. All families here spring from one man; and it is well if they have never degenerated from the virtues who raised them first from obscurity."

"My Lord of Murray will please to except the house of Douglas," said Morton, laughingly; "men have seen it in the tree, but never in the spring—have seen it in the stream, but never in the fountain." In the outset of our Scottish annals, the Black Douglas was powerful and distinguished as now."

"I bend to the banners of the house of Douglas," said Murray, somewhat moodily; "I am conscious we of the Royal House have little right to compete with them in dignity—What though we have worn crowns and carried sceptres for a few generations if our genealogy moves no further back than to the humble *Almona Dapifer*!"†

Morton's cheek reddened as he was about to reply; but Henry Warburton snatched himself of the liberty which the Protestant clergy long possessed, and asserted it to interrupt a discussion which was becoming too eager and personal to be friendly.

"My lords," he said, "I must be bold in discharging the duty of my Master. It is a shame and scandal to hear two nobles, whose hands have been so forward in the work of reformation, fall into discord about such vain follies as now occupy your thoughts. Bethink you how long you have thought with one mind, seen with one eye, heard with one ear, confirmed by your union the congregation of the Church, appalled by your joint authority the congregation of Antichrist; and will you now fall into discord about an old decayed castle and a few barren hills, about the loves and litings of an humble peasant, and a damned brood in the same obscurity, or about the still vainest questions of life genealogy?"

"The good men hath spoken right, noble Douglas," said Murray, reaching him his hand, "our union is too essential to the good cause to be broken off upon such idle topics of dissension. I am fixed to gratify Glencairn in this matter—my promise is passed. The wars, in which I have had my share, have made many a dearly misdeed; I will at least try if I may not make one happy. There are noble and manners enoy

* Note L. Genealogy of the Douglas family.

† Note M. Pedigree of the Abernethys.

in Scotland.—I promise you, my noble ally, that young Henryyuk shall be nobly vined."

"My lord," said Warden, "you speak wisely, and like a Christian. Alas! this is a land of hatred and bloodshed—let us not chase from thence the few traces that remain of gentile and domestic love.—And be not too eager for wealth, in thy noble kinsman, my Lord of Morton, seeing contentment in the marriage state is way depends on it."

"If you allude to my lady's misfortune," said Morton, whose Countess, wedded by him for her estate and honours, was treacherous to her mind, "the habit you wear, and the liberty, or rather licence, of your profession, protect you from my resentment."

"Alas! my lord," replied Warden, "how quick and sensitive is our nation! When, passing forward in our high calling, we point out the errors of the Sovereign, who prizes our boldness more than the noble Morton! But touch we upon his own sore, which most acutely bracing, and he shrinks from the faithful chirurgian in fear and impatient anger!"

"Enough of this, good and reverend sir," said Hurvy; "you transgress the province yourself recommended even now.—We are now close upon the village, and the proud Abbot is come forth at the head of his levy. Thou hast pleaded well for him, Warden, otherwise I had taken this occasion to pull down the east, and chase away the monks."

"Nay, but do not so," said Warden; "this Willem Allen, whom they call the Abbot Eustachius, is a man whose misfortunes would more prejudice our cause than his prosperity. You cannot inflict more than he will endure; and the more that he is made to bear, the higher will be the influence of his talents and his courage. In his conventional dress he will be but coldly looked on—believed, it may be, and scolded. But turn his crinkle of gold into a grating of wood—let him travel through the land, an oppressed and impoverished man, and his poverty, his desquency, and burning, will win more hearts from the good cause, than all the mitred abbots of Scotland have been able to make prey of during the last hundred years."

"Tush! tush! man," said Morton, "the revenues of the Highlands will bring more men, spears, and horses, into the field in one day, than he preaching in a whole lifetime. There are not the days of Peter the Hermit, when monks could march armies from England to Jerusalem, but gold and good deeds

will still do as much or more than ever. Had John Armat had but a score or two more men this morning, Sir John Foster had not raised a worse villain. I say, confounding the monk's sentence in drawing his long teeth."

"We will surely lay him under contribution," said Murray; "and, moreover, if he desires to remain as his Abbey, he will do well to protect Francis Skelton."

As he thus spoke, they entered the marketplace, flattered by their complete armour and their lofty plumes, as well as by the number of followers bearing their colours and badges. Both these powerful nobles, but more especially Murray, so nearly allied to the crown, had at that time a retinue and household not much inferior to that of Scottish royalty. As they advanced into the market-place, a messenger, pressing forward from their train, addressed the monks in these words:—"The Abbot of Saint Mary's is commanded to appear before the Earl of Murray."

"The Abbot of Saint Mary's," said Eustace, "is, in the judgment of his Council, superior to every temporal lord. Let the Earl of Murray, if he seeks him, come himself to his presence."

On receiving this answer, Murray smiled scornfully, and, dismounting from his lofty saddle, he advanced, accompanied by Morton, and followed by others, to the body of monks assembled around the cross. There was an appearance of shuddering among them at the approach of the heroic lord, so decided and so powerful. But the Abbot, casting on them a glance of rebuke and encouragement, stepped forth from their ranks like a courageous leader, whom he saw that his personal valour must be displayed to reverse the drooping courage of his followers. "Lord James Stewart," he said, "or Earl of Murray, if that be thy title, I, Eustace, Abbot of Saint Mary's, demand by what right you have filled our peaceful village, and surrounded our brethren, with these bands of armed men? If hospitality is sought, we have never refused it to courteous asking;—if violence be meant against peaceful churchmen, let us know at once the pretext and the object."

"Sir Abbot," said Murray, "your language would better have become another age, and a province inferior to ours. We come not here to reply to your interrogations, but to demand of you why you have broken the peace, collecting your vessels

in arms, and converting the Queen's Chapel, whereby many men have been slain, and much trouble, perditions breach of unity with England, is likely to arise?"

"*Locus in fideles*," answered the Abbot, scornfully, "The wolf accused the sheep of mauling the stones when he drank in it above her—but it served as a pretext for descending her. Consecrate the Queen's Chapel! I did so to defend the Queen's head against foreigners. I did but my duty; and I regret I had not the means to do it more effectually."

"And was it also a part of your duty to receive and harbour the Queen of England's rebel and traitor, and to inflame a war between England and Scotland?" said Murray.

"In my younger days, my lord," answered the Abbot, with the same integrity, "a war with England was no such dreaded matter, and not merely a mixed abbot, bound by his rule to show hospitality and afford sanctuary to all, but the poorest Scottish peasant, would have been ashamed to have pleaded fear of England as the reason for shutting his door against a persecuted exile. But in those older days, the English seldom saw the face of a Scottish nobleman, save through the bars of his prison."

"Noble?" said the Earl of Morton, sternly, "this fastidious will little credit that; the days are gone by when Rome's priors were permitted to receive noblemen with impunity. Give us up this Pierre Shafton, or by my father's sword I will set thy Abbey in a bright flame!"

"And if thou dost, Lord of Morton, its ruins will trouble above the tombs of those own ancestors. Be the issue to God with, the Abbot of Saint Mary's gives up as one whom he hath promised to protect."

"Abbot!" said Murray, "behold then as we are driven to deal roughly—the hands of these men," he said, pointing to the soldiers, "will make wild work among stones and cells, if we are compelled to undertake a search for this Englishman."

"Ye shall not need," said a voice from the crowd; and, advancing gracefully before the Earls, the Englishman flung from him the mantle in which he was wrapped. "Via the cloud that shadowed Hotham!" said he; "behold, my lords, the Knight of Winton, who spurs you the guilt of violence and usurpation."

"I protest before God and man against any infringement of the privileges of this house," said the Abbot, "by an attempt to

impose violent hands upon the person of this noble knight. If there be yet spirit in a Scottish Parliament, we will make you hear of this elsewhere, my lords!"

"Spare your threats," said Murray; "it may be my purpose with Sir Francis Shafton is not such as thou dost suppose—Attach him, peradventure, as our prisoner, secure or no secure."

"I yield myself," said the English knight, "reserving my right to defy my Lord of Murray and my Lord of Morton to single duel, even as our gentlemen may demand satisfaction of another."

"You shall not with those who will answer your challenge, Sir Knight," replied Morton, "without asporting to men above thine own degree."

"And where am I to find these repudiate champions," said the English knight, "whose blood runs more pure than that of French Shafton?"

"There is a fight for you, my lord!" said Murray.

"As ever was flown by a wild-goose," said Stewart's Bolton, who had now approached to the front of the party.

"Who dared to say that word?" said the English knight, his face crimson with rage.

"Tut! man," said Bolton, "make the best of it, thy mother's father was but a tailor, old Overstitch of Haddington—Why, what! because thou art a miscreant knave, and despisest thine own natural lineage, and reflectest in unspiced offices and valours, and keepest company with gallants and cutpurses, must we lose our memory for that? Thy mother, Moll Overstitch, was the prettiest wench in these parts—she was wedded by wild Shafton of Wiltonston, who, men say, was akin to the Devils on the wrong side of the blanket."

"Help the knight to cross strong waters," said Morton, "he hath fallen from such a height, that he is stunned with the tumble."

In fact, Sir Francis Shafton looked like a man stricken by a thunderbolt, while, notwithstanding the seriousness of the scene before him, no one of those present, not even the Abbot himself, could refrain from laughing at the racial and mortified expression of his face.

"Laugh on," he said at length, "laugh on, my masters," shrugging his shoulders; "it is not for me to be offended—yet would I know full well from that squire who is laughing with the loudest, how he had discovered that unhappy knave as an

otherwise spotted image, and for what purpose he hath made it known?"

"I make it known!" said Herbert Glendinning, in astonishment,—for to him this pathetic appeal was made,—"I never heard the thing till this moment."

"Why, did not that old rude soldier learn it from thee?" said the knight, in increasing amazement.

"Not I, by Heaven!" said Bolton; "I never saw the youth in my life before."

"But you have seen him ere now, my worthy master," said Dame Glendinning, turning to her son, from the crowd. "My son, this is Sirworth Bolton, he to whom we owe life, and the means of preserving it.—If he be a prisoner, as some most likely, was there interest with those noble lords to be lent to the widow's friend."

"What, my Dame of the Glen?" said Bolton; "thy brow is more withered, as well as mine, since we met last, but thy tongue holds the touch better than my arm. This boy of thine gave me the fall sorely this morning. The Raven Viret has turned as stout a trooper as I prophesied; and where is White Head?"

"Alas!" said the mother, looking down, "Edward has taken orders, and become a monk of this Abbey."

"A monk and a soldier!—Evil trades both, my good dame. Better have made one a good master husband, like old Overwatch of Hildersham. I sighed when I married you the two heavy children, but I sigh not now to call either the monk or the soldier mine own. The soldier dies in the field, the monk scarce lives in the cloister."

"My dearest mother," said Herbert, "where is Edward—can I not speak with him?"

"He has just left us for the present," said Father Philip, "upon a message from the Lord Abbot."

"And Mary, my dearest mother?" said Bolton.—"Mary Arnold was not far distant, and the three were soon withdrawn from the crowd, to hear and relate their various chances of fortune."

While the subordinate personages thus disposed of themselves, the Abbot held serious discussions with the two Earls, and, partly yielding to their demands, partly defending himself

* Note H. The White Spots.

with skill and eloquence, was enabled to make a composition for the Council, which left it provisionally in no worse standing than before. The Earls were the more reluctant to drive matters to extremity, since he protested, that if urged beyond what his conscience would comply with, he would throw the whole issue of the Monastery into the Queen of Scotland's hands, to be disposed of as her pleasure. This would not have answered the views of the Earls, who were contented, for the time, with a moderate sacrifice of money and lands. Matters being so far settled, the Abbot became anxious for the fate of the Priore Shafton, and implored mercy on his behalf.

"He is a creature," he said, "my lords, but he is a generous, though a vain fool; and it is my firm belief you have this day done him more pain than if you had run a post-stick into him."

"Run a needle into him you mean, Abbot," said the Earl of March, "by some means, I thought the grandson of a fashioner of doublets was descended from a crowned head at least?"

"I held with the Abbot," said Murray; "there were little chance of surrendering him to Elizabeth, but he shall be sent where he can do her no injury. Our parliament and Robin shall escort him to Dunbar, and ship him off for Scotland.—But soft, here he comes, and looking a little as I think."

"Lords and others," said the English knight with great solemnity, "make way for the lady of Priore Shafton—a secret which I hated not to make known, till now, which hath betrayed what I vainly strove to conceal, makes me less desirous to hide that which I now announce to you."

"It is Myrae Tupper, the Miller's daughter, on my life?" said Tith Thicket. "I thought the prize of those Puritan would have a fit."

"It is indeed the lovely Myrae," said the knight, "whose merits towards her devoted servant deserved higher rank than he had to bestow."

"I suspect, though," said Murray, "that we should not have heard of the Miller's daughter being made a lady, had not the knight proved to be the grandson of a tailor."

"My Lord," said Priore Shafton, "it is your honour to strike him that cannot strike again; and I hope you will consider what is due to a prisoner by the law of arms, and say nothing more on this odious subject. When I am once more made one man, I will find a new road to dignity."

"Shall we, I presume," said the Earl of Morton.

"Nay, Douglas, you will doubt him said," said Murray; "besides, we have other matter in hand—I must see Warde and Glenkilling with Mary Arundel, and put him in possession of his wife's castle without delay. It will be best done on our knees here these parts."

"And I," said the Miller, "have the like grief to grant; for I hope some one of the good fathers will wed my wench with her gay bridegroom."

"It shall not," said Shafton; "the ceremonial hath been solemnly performed."

"It will not be the worse of another belling," said the Miller; "it is always best to be sure, as I say when I choose to take another trick from the same mill-sack."

"Shew the Miller off him," said Murray, "or he will worry him dead. The Abbot, my lord, offers us the hospitality of the Convent; I move we should repair thither, for Morton and all of us. I must learn to know the Maid of Arundel—to-morrow I must set on her father—all Scotland shall see how Murray can reward a faithful servant."

Mary Arundel and her lover avoided meeting the Abbot, and took up their temporary abode in a house of the village, where next day their hands were united by the Protestant preacher in presence of the two Earls. On the same day Pierre Shafton and his bride departed, under an escort which was to conduct him to the sea-side, and see him embark for the Low Countries. Early on the following morning the heads of the Earls were under march to the Castle of Arundel, to invest the young bridegroom with the property of his wife, which was surrendered to them without opposition.

But not without those scenes which seemed to mark every remarkable event which befall the fatal family did Mary take possession of the ancient castle of her forefathers. The same marks form which had appeared more than once at Glenkilling, was seen by Tibb Tacket and Martin, who returned with their young mistress to partake her altered fortunes. In ghastly haire the cavalcade as they advanced upon the long highway, passed at each drawbridge, and flattered his head, as in triumph, as it disappeared under the gloomy archway, which was surmounted by the height of the house of Arundel. The two trusty servants made their value only known to Thane

Glandwing, who, with much pride of heart, had accompanied her son to see him take his rank among the barons of the land. "Oh, my dear father!" she exclaimed, when she heard the tale, "the castle is a grand place to be seen, but I wish ye drove a drove to be back in the quiet lanes of Glandwing before the play be played out." But this natural reflection, springing from maternal anxiety, was soon forgotten amid the busy and pleasing task of examining and adorning the new habitation of her son.

While these efforts were passing, Edmund had hidden himself and his sorrows in the palatial Tower of Glandwing, where every object was full of matter for bitter reflection. The Abbot's kindness had despatched him thither upon pretence of placing some papers belonging to the Abbey in safety and security, but in reality to prevent his witnessing the triumph of his brother. Through the deserted apartments, the scene of so many bitter reflections, the unhappy youth stalked like a discontented ghost, conjuring up around him at every step new subjects for sorrow and for self-torment. Impatient, at length, of the state of irritation and agitated recollection in which he found himself, he rushed out and walked hastily up the glen, as if to shake off the load which hung upon his mind. The sun was setting when he reached the entrance of Carriacashion, and the recollection of what he had seen when he last visited that haunted ravine, burst on his mind. He was in a hurry, however, rather to seek out danger than to avoid it.

"I will face this spectral being," he said; "she furnished the dirge which has wrapt me in this dream,—I will know whether she has right also to tell me of a life which cannot but be miserable."

He failed not to see the White Spirit seated by her wonted haunt, and singing as her usual low and sweet tone. While she sang, she seemed to look with sorrow on her golden ring, which was now diminished to the fineness of a silver thread.

"Fare thee well, thou Holly green!
Thou shalt seldom now be seen,
With all thy glittering metallic hoarding,
As to greet my slow descending,
Flourishing the bewitched kind,
Who seek thee more without a mind.

"Farewell, Frankie ! now nothing
Shall flow warmer to my song,
While thy crystal bubbles clanging
Keep the tune to music drawing,
Ere and ere, ere hark and hark,
Like sweet adieu by belated carol."

"The best of this at length is that,
The Court is level, the field is plain.
Vainly did my wings delight
Send the lover from her sight ;
Wither back and perish well,
Fall'n in lolly Aeneid !"

The vision seemed to waver while she sang ; and the words impressed on Edward a painfully belief, that the alliance of Mary with his brother might be fatal to them both.

Here terminates the *First Part of the Benedictine's Monastery*. I have to vain endeavour to ascertain the precise period of the story, as the dates cannot be exactly reconciled with those of the most accredited histories. But it is astonishing how various the writers of *Utopia* are upon these important subjects. I observe that the learned Mr. Lawrence Templeton, in his late publication entitled *Travels*, has not only placed the tale of Edward the Confessor with an offspring unknown to history, with many other selections of the same kind, but has inverted the order of nature, and fastened his name with others in the midst of romance. All that can be alleged by the warmest advocate of this author amounts to this,—that the circumstances depicted in are just as true as the rest of the story ; which appears to me (more especially in the matter of the names) to be a very imperfect defence, and that the author will do well to profit by Captain Abbot's advice in his preface, and never tell him more lies than are indispensably necessary.

1
2

3
4

NOTES TO THE MONASTERY.



NOTE A, p. 5.—*EXAMINER AND COMMENT.*

[Mr. John Barthwick of Cambridge, in a note to the publisher (June 14, 1844), says that Mr. Walker has reversed the proprietorship of these leaves—that *Calceola* belonged to Mr. James of Dover, while *Stilling* forms part of the estate of Cambridge.—He adds—"It is good that the leaves of *Stilling*, which I have taken measures to preserve from injury, are chiefly in his hand, at the time of Stilling, when writing the *Monastery*. I may mention that, on one of the occasions when I had the pleasure of being a visitor at Cambridge, the station then being full, I sent a party to be put up in our town at *Stilling*—"What," said Mr. Walker, "if you do that, you must be out for its not being *Stilling* before to-morrow, in the protection of Michael Woodhouse against Charles of the *Stilling*." At page 54, vol. II. that edition, the '*Stilling* star' which the words succeeded in describing. The *Stilling* star also is still to be seen in *Stilling*, but not in either of the other two leaves." It is, however, probable, from the *Geographical* and on *Calceola*, that that leaf also had been of old a possession of the *Bertholdia*.]

NOTE B, p. 50.—*THE WERE LATE, AND BEYOND.*

[Referring to the "*Monastery*," Mr. Lockhart, in his *Minutes of Proof*, says he has little to add to the information afforded by the author himself in his Introduction to the work.

"The *Monastery* was considered a failure—the first of the notes on which my own sentence was pronounced,—and here I must confess to favour of the *Wilde* Lady of Arundel, generally criticised as the primary blunder of the *Wilde* Marston, who was locally, though not quite so generally, condemned. In either case, considered separately, the *Wilde* seems to have owed more dwelling (in the German text) to material than might have done very well for a rapid sketch. The phantom with whom we have before to become familiar, is now to fall—even the work of *Stiller* is considered with a necessary appearance and the relation of the whole the order."

"The beautiful natural scenery, and the sterling North character and manners introduced in the *Monastery*, are, however, sufficient to redeem even these mistakes."—J. G. LOCKHART.]

PART II, p. 54.—GALAMITY.

As gallantry of all times and nations has the same mode of thinking and acting, so it often expresses itself by the same symbols. In the year 1215, a party of Highlanders, under a Christian of rank, were in Ross Church, the seat of the Bishop of Caithness, but then occupied by the family of Spynie Baron of Caithness. They demanded quarters, which of course were not to be refused to armed men of a stronger title and influence. Insignia. But the domestic represented in the crystal of the manuscript, that the lady of the mansion had been just delivered of a daughter, and expressed her hope, that, under these circumstances, her party would give as little trouble as possible. "And forbid," said the priest, "that I or mine should be the means of adding to a lady's inconvenience at such a time. Why I repeat to you the same?" The child was brought, and the Highlander, taking his swivel out of his breast, and planting it on the child's breast, "That will be a token," he said, "to any of our people who may come hither, that Donald M'Donald of Kilbride-Gilchrist has taken the family of Ross Church under his protection." The lady who received in infancy this gift of Highland protection, is now Mary, Lady Clark of Penrynshire; and on the 18th of June 1799 was the minute when she placed on her breast, with a white rose on a black daisy-stem. (Lady Mary Clark died in Edinburgh in 1835 in her 82nd year.)

PART II, p. 61.—JAMES.

This reputation continues to prevail, though one would suppose it need now be anticipated. It is only a year or two since an illustrious puppet showman, who, disdaining to acknowledge the pretensions of Glass in Penrynshire, called himself an artist from Yarmouth, brought a company of a singular nature before the nation, at Sheriff of Edinburgh. The daughter dexterly with which the showman had exhibited the machinery of his little stage, had, upon a British holiday, visited the upper country of some merchants of Edinburgh. These men, from no worse motive than could be discovered than a thirst after knowledge beyond their sphere, assembled a haphazard upon the hour in which the puppets had been brought to report, and seated them off in the nook of their fields, when returning from British in their own village.

"But with the working and collecting stage."

The puppet band, however, they really set under French dress, and that the white troop were equally formidable, they had also, perhaps, some representation of the Blackmouth of the district; and, willing to be well of their party, they left the puppets seated in a grove by the side of the British, where they were able to be looked by the first house of the rising sun. Here a shepherd, who was on foot with certain to pass his master's sheep in a field of turnips, to his other amusement, saw this tale, perfectly gay, sitting in the little grove. His attention promoted them —

Sheep.—You are these gay-looking things? what did you think they were?

Maynard.—Oh, I am so that free to say what I might think they were.

Mayfield.—Come, tell, I must have a stock market—who did you think they were?

Maynard.—Oh, six teeth I am, so that free to say that I said who I might think they were.

Mayfield.—Come, come, or I I ask you seriously, did you think they were the things you say?

Maynard.—Indeed, no, and I wish my hat I might think it was the Great Highroad.

Then unwillingly one is brought to attend to the probable and capricious incidents of their land.

NOTE II, p. 21.—*Observations on Bridges.*

A bridge of the very peculiar construction described in the text, entirely devoid of a usual balustrade about a mile and a half above Malvern, called from the circumstance Bridge-end. It is thus noticed in Gordon's *Natural History of Worcestershire* :—

"In another journey through the north parts of Shropshire, about a mile and a half from Malvern, in the shire of Herefordshire, I saw the remains of a modern bridge over the river Teme, consisting of three rectangular pillars, or rather towers, standing within the water, without any arches to join them. The middle one, which in the great scales, has a door towards the north, and I suppose, another opposite one towards the south, which I could not see without crossing the water. In the middle of this tower is a perpendicular or circular opening about 12' the water is below from the door upwards, and now open at the top, near which is a small window. I was informed that not long ago a countryman and his family lived in this tower—and got his livelihood by laying out planks from pillar to pillar, and conveying passengers over the river. Whether this he indeed or no, I have not said, but as it is singular in the kind, I have thought fit to mention it."

The vestiges of this ancient species of bridge still exist, and the author has often seen the foundations of the structures when drifting down the Teme at night, for the purpose of lighting adobe by torch-light. Mr John Martin of Bridgnorth mentions, that about fifty years ago the pillars were visible above water; and the late Mr. David Kyle of the George Inn, Malvern, told the author that he saw a stage taken from the river leading this description :—

"I, Sir John Fringe of Bridgnorth,
Have no hundred marks of gold nor will,
To help to buy my boat overboard."

Fringe of Shropshire, afterwards of Whitchurch, was the Baron to whom the bridge belonged.

NOTE F, p. 141.—*Quaint Remarks.*

There are many instances to be met with in the earliest times of this whimsical and convoluted custom of persons who formed an intimacy distinguishing each other by some quaint epithet. In *Every Man out of the*

However, there is a humorous Gibebe upon whom must fall to him the value of his sister's English and French staffs, which ends by adopting those of Constantine and Basiliskos. What is more to the point is in the speech of Helen, a voluptuous and a coquette in Cytherea's dress. "You know that I call Helen's Priapus my Hercules, and she calls me her daughter. Now, when I meet her in the presence moon, I will come to her and say, 'Sweet Helen, I have hitherto conducted my arms with the skin of just lead, and now I will make the man of your lip.' To which she cannot but blushing answer, 'Nay, now you are too confident!' and then do I reply, 'I cannot be too ambitious of Helen, sweet lady. Will not be good!'"—I think there is some reason of this Epiphany preserved in Maurice Lodge, whose each brother is distinguished by a name in the Lodge, signifying some abstract quality, as *Discretion*, or *the Wise*. See the *Affluent Stage* of Oliver Wilson, Part Laureate to the Lodge of St David's. Edin. 1728.

NOTE G, p. 187.—*ROMANUS TORME AND SOCIETY.*

"Toris," says Camden, "was a Lombard, a man of some wild, dissolute behaviour, and desperately audacious—known in his time amongst the common folk as a rascal, as being the first that, to the great admiration of many at his boldness, brought into England the bold and dangerous way of fencing with the rapier in duelling. Wherein, all that time, the English used to fight with long swords and bucklers, striking with the edge, and thought it no part of man either to push or strike beneath the joints."

Having continued in the Low Countries, Toris resided in the Spanish, and died miserably, poisoned, as was supposed, by his own dill. Three years afterwards his bones were dug up and gibbeted by the command of the Duke of Holstein.

Thomas Stukely, another distinguished gallant of the time, was bred a merchant, being the son of a rich clothier in the west. He wooed the daughter and heiress of a wealthy citizen of London named Curtis, after whose death he squandered the riches he then acquired in all manner of extravagance. His wife, whose fortune supplied his wants, represented to him that he ought to make more of her. "Stukely replied, 'I will make as much of thee, believe me, as it is possible for any to do;'" and he kept his word to one sense, having strangled her even of her wedding apparel before he finally ran away from her.

Having died in Italy, he contrived to impose upon the Pope with a plan of invading Ireland, for which he raised soldiers, and made some preparations, till called by engaging himself and his troops in the service of King Sebastian of Portugal. He ended with that prince on his fatal voyage to Morocco, and fell with him at the battle of Almaraz.

Stukely, as one of the first gallants of the time, has had the honour to be introduced in song, in Keats's *Old Melancholy*, vol. III., edition 1819. His life is also introduced in a tragedy by George Ford, as has been supposed, called the *Battle of Almaraz*, from which play Dryden is alleged to have taken the idea of Don Sebastian; if so, it is surprising he omitted a character so conspicuous to King Charles the Second's time, as the witty, brave, and prophetic Thomas Stukely.

Kerr H, p. 178.—*JULIAN A. WALKER.*

If it were necessary to name a prototype for the world, Newton, and even, Farber said, in an age which showed but too many marks, the Lord of Infinite Omnipotence might be selected for that purpose. He was a friend and confidant of Bodwell, and an agent in Harry Dunlop's murder. At his last stage he was, like other great criminals, a soaring poetist; and, as his confidants began, drawn gentlemen and servants being in the chamber, he said, "The Lord's will, all done and gone for me, for I have been a great sinners' advocate" (that is, besides his share in Dunlop's death), "for the wish God in this day punishing me; for of all men on the earth, I have been one of the greatest, and most high-minded, and most worthy of my body. But especially I have shed the innocent blood of one Michael Dunlop with my own hands. Alas, therefore! because the mild Edward, having me lying on my back, having a mark in his hand, might have said that he had pleased, and did it not, which of all things gives me most its consolation. Alas, in a rage I hanged a poor man for a horse,—with many other wicked deeds, for which I ask my God mercy. It is not marvel I have been wicked, considering the wicked company that ever I have been in, but especially within the seven years' banishment, in which I never saw one good man or one good deed, but all kind of wickedness, and yet God would not suffer me to be lost."—See the whole confession in the *State Trials*.

Another writing of the Bodwell, called *County Down*, of somewhat subordinate rank, was a similar picture of postscript. He had fallen into the hands of Sir Robert Curry, then Warden of the English West Marches, who gives the following account of his prisoner's confession:—

"When all things were quiet, and the watch out at night, after supper, about ten of the clock, I took one of my men's dresses, and put it about me, and took two other of my servants with me to their quarters; and we three, at the Warden's man, came to the Forest Marches, where George was, and were let into his chamber. We sat down by him, and told him that we were desirous to see him, because we heard he was stout and valiant, and true to his friend, and that we were very our master would not be moved to move for him. He, voluntarily of himself, said that he had lived long enough to do so many villanies as he had done; and that, told us that he had been with above forty men's wives—what in England, what in Scotland; and that he had killed seven Englishmen with his own hands, twenty murthering them; and that he had spent his whole time in whoring, drinking, stuffing, and taking deep revenge for slight offences. He seemed to be very penitent, and much desired a minister for the comfort of his soul. We promised him to let our master know his desire, who, we knew, would promptly grant it. We took leave of him; and presently I took order that Mr. Dingle, a very learned preacher, should go to him, and not stir from him till his execution the next morning; for after I had heard his own confession, I was directed by my masters almost over his life, and on took order, that at the gates opening the next morning, he should be carried to execution, which accordingly was performed."—*Memorie of Sir Robert Curry, Earl of Warwick.*

[This method is also referred to in one of the notes to *A Legend of Altona*, page 125.]

Scene I. p. 106.—*Entrance of the Somerset Citizens.*

Mr Francis Shadlock's entrance here at dawn was an attack on the sense of this period. The display made by their lordships was in the numbers of their retinue; but as the actual substance of the robbery began to be perceived both in France and England by the increasing power of the Crown, the indulgence of nearly as powerful display became more inordinate. There are many allusions to this change of custom in Shakespeare and other dramatic writers, where the reader may find another mode of

"I would rather'll take

For my apparel against the triumph day."

James informs us, that for the first entrance of a gallant, "I have good you turned four or five hundred acres of your best land into two or three trunks of apparel."—*Henry, Men out of his Humour*

In the *Memories of the Somerset Family*, a curious instance occurs of this fashionable species of extravagance. In the year 1517, when James V. brought over his short-lived bride from France, the Lord Somerset of the day was so proud in the expense of his apparel, that the money which he borrowed on the occasion was accompanied by a perpetual casualty of thousands yearly to him, payable out of the treasury of Cardinal Will. de Beaufort, which was assigned by the creditor to Saint Stephen's Chapel. By this deep expense the Lord Somerset had rendered himself so glorious in apparel, that the King, who now no longer a gallant, enter the gate of Hatfield, followed by only two pages, called upon several of the courtiers to ascertain what it could be who was so richly dressed and so slightly attended, and he was not recognised until he entered the presence-chamber. "You are very brave, my lord," said the King as he received his homage; "but where are all your men and attendants?" The Lord Somerset readily answered, "If it please your Majesty, have they not," pointing to the lace that was on his nose and his paper clothes; whereon the King laughed heartily, and having surveyed the luxury more nearly, bade him have away with it all, and let him have his stout band of arrows again.

There is a scene in James's *Henry Men out of his Humour* (Act IV. Scene II, in which a Knight of the time gives an account of the effects of a duel on the decline of himself and his opponent, and never departs a syllable from the catalogue of his wounds. We shall insert it in evidence that the hypocrisy of our ancestors was not inferior to that of our very laws.

"*Knave.* Good faith, squire, now you speak of a wound, I'll acquaint you with a difference that happened between a gallant and myself, Sir Montacute. You have lost if I should name him—*Squire Lookabout*."

"*Poor Lookabout!* What accomplishments does he impose first to pierce your love?"

"*Poor Faith,* sir, the same that mastered Agamemnon, and great Thetis' son; but let me name some, sir. He had one a challenge, met with some few blows, which I received; and, in this, we met. Now indeed, sir, I must tell you, he did offer at that very dangerously, but without judgment; for, lo! he, sir, I cast myself into the Agave; now he came violently on, and mist, throwing his spear to sides, I thought to have

back his arm, for he had left his body to my disposal, and I was sure he could not remove his guard. Thus I bent my purpose to his arm, rolled his doublet down, and laid close by the left chest, and through his arm. He, again, light me here—I laid on a girdle under his back, then saw some up, about a narrow French hat I laid; with my left hand, and yet it was many goldenrod's work, and my brain, which, by good fortune, being thick interlarded with gold wires and apophyses, disappointed the force of the blow, nevertheless it grazed on my shoulder, tore out every six parts of an Italian oak-work head I wore, and ran close parallel to the backbone but three days before—

"*Ferd.* This was a strange encounter.

"*Ferd.* Nay, you shall hear, sir. With this, we both fell out and headled. Now, upon the instant apex of his attack, I betook me to my foremost manner of defence; he, on the other side, disarmed his body to the same danger as before, and follows me still with blows. But I, being loath to take the deadly advantage that lay before me of his left side, made a kind of circumlocution, ran him up to the side through the doublet, through the shirt, and yet missed the skin. He, making a reverse blow, fell upon my exposed groin—I had thrown off the hangings a little before—colours of a skirt of a French-based satin doublet I had, faced with four talbots, and off two pieces interlarded with pearls, broke through the draw-ropes of the same, entered the linings, and slipped the body.

"*Car.* I wonder he speaks out of his wrought shirt.

"*Ferd.* Here, in the opinion of several surgeons, we passed. But, as I proceed, I must tell you, likewise, that in this last encounter, not having leisure to put off my shirt upon, one of the swords entered side of the middle of my back, and being Spanish fashion, and subject to heat, overthrew me, made me lose pair of silk stockings that I put on, being somewhat of a new entering, a French silver and smoking, and striven me some half-inch deep into the side of the calf: He, seeing the third cross, presently takes home and away; I having bound up my wound with a piece of my wrought shirt—

"*Car.* O, woe is it to them!

"*Ferd.* While after him, and, lighting of the court-gate both together, entered, and marched hand in hand up into the prison. Was not this business well carried?

"*Alon.* Well! yes, and by this we can guess what appeared the gentleman was.

"*Ferd.* True value! It was a disagreement begun with much resolution, maintained with as much presence, and ended with more humanity."

NOTE J, p. 161.—SOME FACTS OF THE ROMANISM.

As some statements the their history of months on most occasions, the Romanism was even clearer as of the faith which they had pledged, even to us among. If any person broke his word as pledged, the individual to whom faith had not been observed, went to bring to the next Romanism a phoe hung on the point of a spear, and position to fight and English the name of the delinquent. This was considered as great a disgrace

to all associated with him, that his own chamber somewhere destroyed him, to escape the infancy he had brought on them.

Conclude, a spy engaged by the English Rulers, tells of two border thieves, whom he had in his power:—"That they would not care to stand, and yet that they would not having anyone that trusts in them, for all the gold in Scotland or in France. They are my gables and rafters. If they would betray me, they might get their pardons, and save me to be hanged; but I have tried them and lost."—*Sholto's Letter during the Northern Invasion.*

NOTE K, p. 171.—INVOLUTION TO THE MUSE.

The *Almon*, *corbie*, and *huffed almon*, of which Alfred Doolittle speaks, were special occasions for enjoying lectures, attended in the woods by guests from different countries, or from other localities in the country. There is one of these charters called *De Piteous Curious Almon*. By this charter, which is very curious, our Robert Bruce, on the 10th January, and in the twelfth year of his reign, assigns, out of the contents of Berwick, a full huffed them, out of the contents of Edinburgh or Haddington, the sum of one hundred pounds, at the half-yearly terms of Pentecost and Saint Martin's in winter, to the *Almon* and university of the monks of Melrose. The prime purpose of this charter is to furnish to each of the monks of the said monastery, while placed as food in the refectory, an entire mass of rice heated with milk, or of almon, or peas, or other pulse of that kind which could be procured in the country. This addition to their common is to be omitted the King's Mass. And it is declared, that although any monk should, from some present apology, want appetite or inclination to eat of the King's mass, his share should, nevertheless, be placed on the table with those of his brethren, and afterwards moved to the gate and given to the poor. "Neither is it our pleasure," continues the beautiful sovereign, "that the dinner, which is or ought to be served up to the said monks according to their ancient rule, should be diminished in quantity, or rendered inferior in quality, on account of this our mass, as furnished as almon." It is, moreover, provided, that the abbot, with the consent of the most sage of his brethren, shall name a prudent and discreet monk for receiving, dividing, and expending, all matters concerning this charity for the benefit of the monastery, according to the royal desire and intention, rendering a full and account thereof to the abbot and chapters of the same convent. And the same charter declares the king's further pleasure, that the said mass of religious should be heard yearly and forever, in acknowledgment of the divine donation, to wit: three years once at the feast of Saint Martin in winter, and to feed them on the same day, delivering to each of them four sills of large or broad, or six sills of narrow cloth, and to each also a new pair of shoes or sandals, according to their order; and if the said monks shall fail in their engagements, in any of these, it is the king's will that the debt shall be redeemed by a double performance of which has been omitted, to be executed at the sight of the chief Abbot of Melrose for the time being, and before the return of Saint Martin's day succeeding that on which the custom has taken place.

At this meeting, respecting the pillars of JHIM assigned to develop the results of Holmes with a study team of local staff, students, or other peers, to meet their concerns, the participating reader will be pleased, eventually, to see the record.

Curtis, David; Peterson, L. / *Aspects of Discontinuity in the Home*.

Abstract

[illegible]

poëtesse Wilhelme, Johannes, Wilhelme et David Samuel Andree, Obergmaister, Dankschuldner et Mairischsche verheirathete des groesce episcopus Joannese Alfrida de Altkatholisch, Casselstern, Dannew, Maline, et Hugues de Pyl de Néméin et de Ross, Comtesse Wilhelme Demosthele deute. Joanne deute de Dague et Alexandre Froust Cassesteri deute deute deute deute, Agnel Altkatholisch, deute de deute, Anne Regel deute deute.

FOOT 1, p. 414.—GLEANINGS OF THE DOWDLE FARM.

The late excellent and industrious antiquary, Mr. George Chalmers, has related the name of the House of Douglas, or rather of House of Godscroft, their history, not with less than his usual accuracy. In the first volume of his *Calendar*, he quotes the passage in Godscroft for the purpose of recording it.

The historian (of the Douglases) writes out, "We do not know them in the Scottish, but in the stream; not in the rock, but in the stone; for we know not which in the same point that did rise above the water." The inscription Mr. Chalmers describes is—*Thos. de Douglas*, that if the historian had attended more to research than to declaration, he might easily have seen the first name man of this renowned family. This he alleges to have been one Thos. de Douglas, or Thos. de Douglas, in whom David, Abbot of Kelso, between the years 1147 and 1160, granted certain lands in Douglas water, by a deed which Mr. Chalmers conceives to be the first link of the chain of titles in Douglasdale. Hence, he says, the family must retrace their family claims, or acknowledge this claim as flowing to their ancestor. Thos. de Douglas, if it is acknowledged, did not himself name the name of Douglas; "but," says the antiquary, "his son William, who inherited his name, called himself, and was named by others, De Douglas;" and he refers to the facts in which he is so engaged. Mr. Chalmers' full argument may be found in the first volume of his *Calendar*, p. 679.

This proposition is one which a historian will admit readily, and only upon undeniable testimony; and as it is liable to strong grounds of challenge, the present writer, with all the respect to Mr. Chalmers which his merits and official character merit, is not unwilling to take the opportunity to state some plausible grounds for doubting that Thos. de Douglas was either the father of the first William de Douglas, or in the slightest degree connected with the Douglas family.

It must first be observed, that there is no reason whatever for supposing Thos. de Douglas to be the father of William de Douglas, except that they both lived upon the small river of Douglas; and that there are two strong presumptions to the contrary. For, first, the father being named Fleming, there seems no good reason why the son should have assumed a different designation. Secondly, there does not occur a single instance of the name of Thos. de Douglas during the long line of the Douglas pedigree, an instance very unlikely to take place had the original father of the race been so called. There are numerous considerations indeed; but they are important, in as far as they supply any support of Mr. Chalmers' system, except from the point which he has rather assumed than proved,

namely, that the lands granted to Theobald the Fleming were the same which were granted to William de Douglas, and which constituted the original domain of which we find this powerful family lords.

Now, it happens, curiously enough, that the lands granted by the Abbot of Melros to Theobaldus Flammatorum are not the same of which William de Douglas was in possession. Nay, it would appear, from comparing the charters granted to Theobaldus Flammatorum, that, though situated on the estate of Douglas, they never made a part of the barony of that name, and therefore cannot be the same with those held by William de Douglas in the succeeding generation. But if William de Douglas did not succeed Theobaldus Flammatorum, there is no more reason for holding these two persons to be father and son than if they had lived in different countries; and we are still as far from having discovered the first person who of the Douglas family in Home of Cultercraef was in the 11th century. We leave the question to antiquaries and genealogists.

NOTE M, p. 414.—FATHERS OF THE FLEMINGS.

To doze in the memory of the learned and indefatigable Gifford for having ventured to lay down his genealogical propositions concerning the descent of the Douglases, we are bound to render him our grateful thanks for the brilliant light which he has thrown on that of the House of Stewart, still more important in Scottish history.

The origin goes of Lord Hume, which, like the year of Edward, occupied so many scholars from Scottish history, had descended among the first Dukes of Burgundy and Flanders, the rejection of which leaves left the Hume family of Stewart without an ancestor beyond Walter the son of Allen, who is alleged to be the last. The researches of our late learned antiquary directed to Sir Walter, the descendant of Allen, the son of Pirih, who obtained from William the Conqueror the Castle of Gremsey in Shropshire, and was the father of an illustrious line of English nobles, by his first son William, and by his second son Walter, the progenitor of the royal family of Stewart.

NOTE N, p. 422.—THE DWARF KING.

The sentiment of granting the belittled reality of Sir Piers Shallow, by presenting him with a bottom, indicative of his descent from a father, is borrowed from a German romance, by the celebrated Nauck, called *Das Peter Abenteuer*, &c. *The Dwarf Peter*. The being who gives name to the tale, is the Derg-peter, or dwarf species, of a German family, whom he aids with his counsel, as he debauches their castle by his supernatural power. But the Dwarf Peter is so unfortunate as witness, that all his counsels, though producing success in the immediate result, are in the long attended with mischief and with gall. The youthful hero, the owner of the haunted castle, falls in love with a maiden, the daughter of a neighbouring count, a man of great pride, who refuses her the hand of the young lady, in contempt of his own superiority of descent. The lover, enraged and affronted, returns to take counsel with the Dwarf Peter, how he may achieve the conquest, and obtain the victory in the engagement, the next time they enter

on the topic of perfidy. The dwarf gives his patron as people a lesson, instructing him to give it to the man whom he is next giving himself exposure as the subject of his feelings. It has the effect accordingly. The count, understanding it, as an allusion to a scandalous story of his ancestor with the daughter of a blacksmith, is thrown into a dreadful passion with the young lady, the consequences of which are the seduction of the young lady, and the daughter of her father.

If we suppose the dwarf to represent the corrupt part of human nature,—that “law in our members which wars against the law of our minds,”—we have made sense an ingenious allegory.

Toss, to toss or total.
 Tossable, falling, impetuous.
 Tossle, drowsy.
 Toss, a loss.
 Tossy-whisky with hot water and sugar.
 Tossiness, a tossage.
 Tossy-toss, always just eloped.
 Tossle, a tossle or tangle.
 Toss, tossle.

Tossy, the tossage.
 Tossy-whisky, whisky.

Toss, tossle.

Tossle, tossle all.
 Tossy, tossy all.
 Toss, toss.
 Toss, as tossed or child.
 Toss, a toss.
 Toss, to tossle, tossle, or toss.
 Toss, a toss.
 Toss, a toss.
 Toss, a toss.
 Tossy, a tossy or toss.
 Tossy, a toss.
 Toss, a toss.
 Tossy, as tossed or child.

Tossy, in tossy or toss.
 Tossy, the tossy-tossy.



1998, 1999, 2000, 2001, 2002, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, 2007, 2008, 2009, 2010, 2011, 2012, 2013, 2014, 2015, 2016, 2017, 2018, 2019, 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024, 2025, 2026, 2027, 2028, 2029, 2030, 2031, 2032, 2033, 2034, 2035, 2036, 2037, 2038, 2039, 2040, 2041, 2042, 2043, 2044, 2045, 2046, 2047, 2048, 2049, 2050, 2051, 2052, 2053, 2054, 2055, 2056, 2057, 2058, 2059, 2060, 2061, 2062, 2063, 2064, 2065, 2066, 2067, 2068, 2069, 2070, 2071, 2072, 2073, 2074, 2075, 2076, 2077, 2078, 2079, 2080, 2081, 2082, 2083, 2084, 2085, 2086, 2087, 2088, 2089, 2090, 2091, 2092, 2093, 2094, 2095, 2096, 2097, 2098, 2099, 2100, 2101, 2102, 2103, 2104, 2105, 2106, 2107, 2108, 2109, 2110, 2111, 2112, 2113, 2114, 2115, 2116, 2117, 2118, 2119, 2120, 2121, 2122, 2123, 2124, 2125, 2126, 2127, 2128, 2129, 2130, 2131, 2132, 2133, 2134, 2135, 2136, 2137, 2138, 2139, 2140, 2141, 2142, 2143, 2144, 2145, 2146, 2147, 2148, 2149, 2150, 2151, 2152, 2153, 2154, 2155, 2156, 2157, 2158, 2159, 2160, 2161, 2162, 2163, 2164, 2165, 2166, 2167, 2168, 2169, 2170, 2171, 2172, 2173, 2174, 2175, 2176, 2177, 2178, 2179, 2180, 2181, 2182, 2183, 2184, 2185, 2186, 2187, 2188, 2189, 2190, 2191, 2192, 2193, 2194, 2195, 2196, 2197, 2198, 2199, 2200, 2201, 2202, 2203, 2204, 2205, 2206, 2207, 2208, 2209, 2210, 2211, 2212, 2213, 2214, 2215, 2216, 2217, 2218, 2219, 2220, 2221, 2222, 2223, 2224, 2225, 2226, 2227, 2228, 2229, 2230, 2231, 2232, 2233, 2234, 2235, 2236, 2237, 2238, 2239, 2240, 2241, 2242, 2243, 2244, 2245, 2246, 2247, 2248, 2249, 2250, 2251, 2252, 2253, 2254, 2255, 2256, 2257, 2258, 2259, 2260, 2261, 2262, 2263, 2264, 2265, 2266, 2267, 2268, 2269, 2270, 2271, 2272, 2273, 2274, 2275, 2276, 2277, 2278, 2279, 2280, 2281, 2282, 2283, 2284, 2285, 2286, 2287, 2288, 2289, 2290, 2291, 2292, 2293, 2294, 2295, 2296, 2297, 2298, 2299, 2300, 2301, 2302, 2303, 2304, 2305, 2306, 2307, 2308, 2309, 2310, 2311, 2312, 2313, 2314, 2315, 2316, 2317, 2318, 2319, 2320, 2321, 2322, 2323, 2324, 2325, 2326, 2327, 2328, 2329, 2330, 2331, 2332, 2333, 2334, 2335, 2336, 2337, 2338, 2339, 2340, 2341, 2342, 2343, 2344, 2345, 2346, 2347, 2348, 2349, 2350, 2351, 2352, 2353, 2354, 2355, 2356, 2357, 2358, 2359, 2360, 2361, 2362, 2363, 2364, 2365, 2366, 2367, 2368, 2369, 2370, 2371, 2372, 2373, 2374, 2375, 2376, 2377, 2378, 2379, 2380, 2381, 2382, 2383, 2384, 2385, 2386, 2387, 2388, 2389, 2390, 2391, 2392, 2393, 2394, 2395, 2396, 2397, 2398, 2399, 2400, 2401, 2402, 2403, 2404, 2405, 2406, 2407, 2408, 2409, 2410, 2411, 2412, 2413, 2414, 2415, 2416, 2417, 2418, 2419, 2420, 2421, 2422, 2423, 2424, 2425, 2426, 2427, 2428, 2429, 2430, 2431, 2432, 2433, 2434, 2435, 2436, 2437, 2438, 2439, 2440, 2441, 2442, 2443, 2444, 2445, 2446, 2447, 2448, 2449, 2450, 2451, 2452, 2453, 2454, 2455, 2456, 2457, 2458, 2459, 2460, 2461, 2462, 2463, 2464, 2465, 2466, 2467, 2468, 2469, 2470, 2471, 2472, 2473, 2474, 2475, 2476, 2477, 2478, 2479, 2480, 2481, 2482, 2483, 2484, 2485, 2486, 2487, 2488, 2489, 2490, 2491, 2492, 2493, 2494, 2495, 2496, 2497, 2498, 2499, 2500, 2501, 2502, 2503, 2504, 2505, 2506, 2507, 2508, 2509, 2510, 2511, 2512, 2513, 2514, 2515, 2516, 2517, 2518, 2519, 2520, 2521, 2522, 2523, 2524, 2525, 2526, 2527, 2528, 2529, 2530, 2531, 2532, 2533, 2534, 2535, 2536, 2537, 2538, 2539, 2540, 2541, 2542, 2543, 2544, 2545, 2546, 2547, 2548, 2549, 2550, 2551, 2552, 2553, 2554, 2555, 2556, 2557, 2558, 2559, 2560, 2561, 2562, 2563, 2564, 2565, 2566, 2567, 2568, 2569, 2570, 2571, 2572, 2573, 2574, 2575, 2576, 2577, 2578, 2579, 2580, 2581, 2582, 2583, 2584, 2585, 2586, 2587, 2588, 2589, 2590, 2591, 2592, 2593, 2594, 2595, 2596, 2597, 2598, 2599, 2600, 2601, 2602, 2603, 2604, 2605, 2606, 2607, 2608, 2609, 2610, 2611, 2612, 2613, 2614, 2615, 2616, 2617, 2618, 2619, 2620, 2621, 2622, 2623, 2624, 2625, 2626, 2627, 2628, 2629, 2630, 2631, 2632, 2633, 2634, 2635, 2636, 2637, 2638, 2639, 2640, 2641, 2642, 2643, 2644, 2645, 2646, 2647, 2648, 2649, 2650, 2651, 2652, 2653, 2654, 2655, 2656, 2657, 2658, 2659, 2660, 2661, 2662, 2663, 2664, 2665, 2666, 2667, 2668, 2669, 2670, 2671, 2672, 2673, 2674, 2675, 2676, 2677, 2678, 2679, 26

NATURAL HISTORY of the established people, 18

Narrative authenticity, 104.

Q. A. In the weeks, they did the scheduled 27

Reasons not by Robert, 101

Just before, 101

Philip, Robert, while sleeping, 17; arrives off the boat, 25; admires with the White Lady, 25; arrival of the Maryanne, 26

Philip, 25; Arthur's explanation, 27; arrival of Charles, 28; his speech, 29; testimony to his character, 30; makes his mistake in the attack, 30; his days defined by Mary, 31; presented with the letters, 32; challenge Robert, 33; the boat, 34; tells, 35; returns to the house, and arrival of Robert, 36; makes the conversation of the boat, 37; returns from the house, 38; runs off the ship through with Mary, 39; meets the Abbot with his two women, 40; makes prisoner, and returns of, 40; takes on, 40; 41, 42.

Philip's death tolls, 41

People, knowledge of, 101; introduction, 104

Preachers of the Information, 101

Pre and more, 104.

Precedent from the Mary, 42.

See also, 100 of 101

Refutation provided, 101

Refutation, early, arrives of, 101

Robert's death, count of, 101; discussion on, 101; in England, state of, 101 of 101, 102.

By Mary's Maryanne, 101

Refutation, arrival of, 101

Refutation, count of, 101, 102

Robert's death, 101

Robert's death, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101

Robert's death, 101

Robert's death, 101

Robert's death, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101

Robert's death, 101; arrival of, 101



Printed by B. C. C. Co., Toronto.